

THE
ROME-BERLIN
AXIS



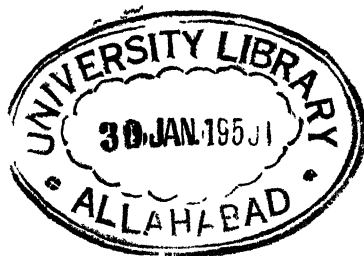
THE DICTATORS

THE ROME-BERLIN AXIS

A HISTORY OF
THE RELATIONS BETWEEN
HITLER AND MUSSOLINI



Elizabeth Wiskemann



GEOFFREY CUMBERLEGE
OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS
London New York Toronto

1949

Oxford University Press, Amen House, London E.C.4

GLASGOW NEW YORK TORONTO MILBOURN WILINGTON
BOMBAY CALCUTTA MADRAS CAPE TOWN

Geoffrey Cumberlege, Publisher to the University

*Printed in Great Britain
at the University Press, Oxford
by Charles Batey, Printer to the University*

CONTENTS

<i>Introduction</i>	ix
<i>Note on Sources</i>	xiii
I. <i>Pupils of Nietzsche</i>	I
II. <i>The Quarrel over Austria</i>	23
III. <i>Germany and the Attack upon Abyssinia</i>	41
IV. <i>'This Berlin-Rome Line is not a Diaphragm but rather an Axis'</i>	53
V. <i>The Duce in Germany</i>	71
VI. <i>Austria Lost and Won</i>	83
VII. <i>The Führer in Italy</i>	105
VIII. <i>Mediation at Munich</i>	115
IX. <i>The Steel Pact</i>	130
X. <i>'To attack Poland at the First Suitable Opportunity'</i>	151
XI. <i>The Axis Shaken</i>	175
XII. <i>The Mission of Sumner Welles</i>	189
XIII. <i>Mussolini Declares War</i>	206
XIV. <i>The Attack upon Greece</i>	219
XV. <i>The Axis and Franco</i>	233
XVI. <i>Operations Marita and Barbarossa</i>	246
XVII. <i>The New Order</i>	262
XVIII. <i>Italy Rebels</i>	284
XIX. <i>'Mésalliance'</i>	300
XX. <i>Nazis and Neo-Fascists</i>	315
XXI. <i>Epilogue</i>	339
<i>Bibliography</i>	347
<i>Appendix: The Steel Pact</i>	350
<i>Indexes: (A) Persons (with biographical notes)</i>	353
<i>(B) Subjects and Places</i>	369

ILLUSTRATIONS

<i>The Dictators</i>	frontispiece
<i>The Berghof, above Berchtesgaden</i>	facing page 128
<i>Hitler with Sir Neville Henderson (left) and Paul Schmidt (centre)</i> <i>at the last diplomatic reception in Berlin before the outbreak of war</i> <i>(Spring 1939)</i>	128
<i>The signing of the Steel Pact, 22 May 1939</i>	145
<i>The parting of the Dictators at the Brenner, 5 October 1940</i>	209
<i>The Dictators at the station at Florence, 28 October 1940</i>	224
<i>The Dictators meet at Salzburg (Spring 1942)</i>	288
<i>Propaganda leaflet of the Neo-Fascist government circulating in</i> <i>September 1943</i>	between pages 320-1

INTRODUCTION

THE 'Axis' Liaison and the 'Steel' Pact into which it later solidified appropriately symbolized an Age which was hailed in those days as the Age of the Engineer rather than as that of the Common Man. In other languages the words considered equivalent to 'Axis' mean very much the same as 'axle'. Webster, however, defines the word as meaning 'a straight line, real or imaginary, passing through a body, and on which the body revolves, or may be supposed to revolve'. It is to be feared that Continental politicians ignored these subtleties. The first of them to use the word in its Rome-Berlin context was, it appears, the Hungarian Premier, Gombos. On 20 June 1934, immediately after the first meeting between Mussolini and Hitler, in addressing the Magyar Upper House he expressed himself as follows: 'I have repeatedly said, for the first time twelve years ago, that Berlin and Rome form the two ends of an Axis which, if it should find itself in a state of equilibrium, could provide a basis for a peaceful evolution of European affairs.'¹ Schuschnigg quotes Goethe's apter couplet:

Der Achse wird mancher Stoss versetzt,
Sie ruhr sich nicht und bricht zuletzt.²

To-day, when the Western world is preoccupied with what it regards as a similar threat to the living of the good life, a history of the Axis may still perhaps arouse some interest as a study of revolutionary tyranny, in personal and international terms. At this point I would wish to emphasize that I have unwillingly accepted current usage in the confusion of 'dictatorship' with 'tyranny'. The Roman conception of dictatorship, the plan for an emergency leader who subsequently disappeared into obscurity, was surely an admirable device for the preservation of liberty. Thus Marx himself, who wished the state to wither away, used 'dictatorship of the proletariat' in the true sense of dictatorship.

¹ The text of this sentence, as published in the *Pester Lloyd*, ran as follows 'Ich habe schon wiederholt gesagt, zum ersten Male vor zwolf Jahren, dass Berlin und Rom die beiden Enden der Achse bilden, die, wenn sie sich im Gleichgewicht befindet, allein die Basis einer ruhigen europaischen Politik bilden konnte' (*ruhig* combines 'restful' with 'quiet' in meaning, and *Politik* in this context means more than policy).

² 'The Axis is exposed to many a knock, it does not stir but it breaks in the end.'

Hitler started as the embarrassed suitor of Mussolini, but Mussolini ended as Hitler's cipher, and the Axis was motivated by Hitler. As for what this meant, few things, as it seems to me, have ever been less well understood. It is natural that this should have been so, since Hitlerism was a technique of mystification. But the more familiar one becomes with it the more one becomes afraid of facile comparisons with whatever Moscow may be trying to do.

While Leninism was the antithesis of the teaching of Nietzsche, Hitlerism was its expression. For Hitler ecstatically embraced the idea that the strong should be urged to oppress the weak; by doing so they were to become a glorious *élite*. Both Fascists and National Socialists gradually translated the conception of the *élite* into a One-party state. It was Lenin, however, who first realized the One-party state; he seemed to anticipate the technique of the others in order to carry out the opposite theory of the emancipation of the weak.

I am far from being qualified to expound the theories of Lenin. But my attention has been drawn, by those who may be considered to be so, to the contrast between Lenin's conception of the role of the Communist Party and Hitler's conception of a Nazi *élite*, the Party at first, then the S.A., and finally the esoteric S.S. which provided a terrorist police force. In Lenin's view,

... the steering hand of the Party was not something which could operate in a void, divorced from the masses. . . . Still less was the guiding role conceived by him as a monopoly of political and economic activity: as something that was a substitute for popular initiative at various levels from the bottom upwards. Quite the contrary: it was thought of as galvanizing such action from below.¹

'The most important thing', wrote Lenin in 1917, 'is to inspire the oppressed and the toilers with confidence in their own strength. . . .'²

It may well be contended that the ideas of Lenin have ceased to count except in so far as they serve—ironically enough—the purposes of Russian imperialism with its Pan-Slav associations. (Jan Masaryk used to say that one of the frightening things

¹ Maurice Dobb, *Soviet Economic Development since 1917* (Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1948), pp. 413–14.

² Lenin, *Selected Works*, vol. vi (Speeches and Articles, 1917).

about Hitlerism was that it was certain to stimulate Pan-Slav fanaticism.) It is evident, however, that whereas Hitlerism was empty of doctrine other than Nietzschean frenzy, Soviet policy is overweighted with dogma. Indeed, where Hitlerism was an affair of the clinical manipulation of hysteria, Moscow seems tireless in its determination to convince. There is a positive aim in Communism for which a coherent case has been put and of which it will always be difficult to lose sight completely; this remains true however the aim may be exploited for other ends or obscured by unscrupulous propaganda, or even contradicted by the Russian inheritance of complacency towards slavery and police oppression. German administrative traditions were, on the whole, reputable. I believe it to be true to say that hysteria and sadism, which found some expression in the Emperor William II, were never the absolute masters of Germany between the Dark Ages and 1933. Hitler and his followers created a machine of savagery where none had existed before.

While it is to be supposed, then, that a different approach should be made to the challenge from Moscow, the challenge of Hitlerism is not at an end. What Professor McGovern¹ calls the absolutist tradition in politics is as old as the hills; Hitler was one of its more grotesque and terrifying embodiments. It is frivolous to use the slogan that the Nazis' state of mind was the result of inflation and unemployment in Germany; one has only to take up the correspondence of a person like Cosima Wagner² to observe that it had been, not indeed dominant, but rampant, in Germany for years. As a political venture Hitlerism was all along conceived as a long-term enterprise. Democracy is seldom easy to work and always easy to denounce; it was mainly formulated before the industrial age and has had difficulty in adapting itself to mechanized circumstances, to which 'absolutism' seems more easily applicable. Frightened yet fascinated by the machines they themselves have created and by the theories which reduce them to be nothing but delicate machines themselves, human beings will certainly not cease to be susceptible to Hitlerism. For Hitler offered a monstrous connubium of romantic nonsense with pseudo-scientific terms

¹ W. M. McGovern, *From Luther to Hitler* (Harrap, 1946).

² Loved by Nietzsche though she was, she was more representative than he of educated Germans in the prosperous age of Bismarck

which is almost certain to attract the stricken Europe he did so much to lay in ruins. It is bound to appeal to the youth of a bisected Germany at least as much as it appealed to young Germans and Austrians twenty years ago.

I am aware of the risk I have run in attempting to make statements about the thoughts of two hysterics such as Nietzsche and Hitler. Both could deny their most passionate convictions of the previous year with even greater passion. At one moment Hitler was proud to resume the mission of Attila, at another he raved against the Mongolian barbarism of the Russians. The anti-Mongol outcry was required by the public at home and abroad, while he himself was proud to be a great destroyer. I am convinced that Nietzsche would have been horrified by the result, but he none the less provided a language to express the emotions of Hitler.

ELIZABETH WISKEMANN

LONDON

July 1948

NOTE ON SOURCES

IN addition to the books referred to in the text and in my bibliography, and in addition to published documents and to the press, the following have been my most valuable sources:

(a) The Research Department and Library of the Foreign Office has allowed me to consult the original text of any document which was quoted at the Nuremberg Trial and to go through a number of official Italian documents which came into Allied possession through the defeat of Italy. (Captured German documents not quoted at Nuremberg count as 'closed' material and are only available to the official historians who are editing the forthcoming publications of such material.) The most valuable material from my point of view was the series of letters exchanged between Hitler and Mussolini, from which I have been able to quote. The full text of many of these letters will soon be published officially. I have been led to hope that Hitler's letter to the Duce on the day of the Anschluss may see the light before the comments upon it in my Chapter VI. The portions which were suppressed at the time are of great historical interest.

I should like to take this opportunity of thanking the Research Department of the Foreign Office and especially the Director of Research and Librarian, Mr. Passant, for their kindness and help.

(b) As an active student of international affairs and writer about them since 1932 I was fortunate enough to live fairly close to a certain amount of what I have tried to describe in Germany, Austria, and Italy, as also in Czechoslovakia and the Balkans. In this way I met a great many of the ordinary people concerned and a few of the extraordinary ones. I cannot recall without satisfaction a visit I paid to Papen when he was Nazi Envoy in Vienna. He referred a great deal to the Dynamic Powers. At last I asked what he meant by the phrase?—was it possible that he meant Powers which were preparing war?—and to my astonishment he became silent and then spoke of something else.

During most of the Second World War I was at work in Switzerland, and in one way or another, chiefly because former

friends and acquaintances conveyed a good deal of what has been corroborated as accurate information to me, I was able to keep in some kind of contact with the Axis world. I shall always be grateful to Albrecht Bernstorff for the trouble he took and the danger he faced. To those who begged him not to go back to Germany he invariably answered that one could not run away, and so he returned to his inevitable doom.

(c) Since 1945 I have tried to talk over different portions of the History of the Axis with a number of those who were directly concerned and are now free or freer to speak. (Some of the most important German sources were defendants at Nuremberg and were subsequently executed, but the papers they have left behind them are more reliable than what they might have said to me.)

I should like particularly to thank Monsieur Lipski, formerly Polish Ambassador in Berlin, for talking over certain phases with me in the light of his experience, as also Monsieur François-Poncet and Dr. von Schuschnigg. I am extremely grateful to a number of Italian diplomats for their help, the former Ambassadors Cerruti and Guariglia, and Marquis Antinori who was for many years Italian Press Attaché in Berlin until his activities became too unwelcome there. Count Magistrati allowed me to read through the manuscript of his *Ricordi* which may possibly be published before my book comes out. Where he was directly concerned my statements depend to a considerable extent upon what he has been good enough to tell me, but as the publication of his book is uncertain I have not been able to refer directly to it. My judgements are, naturally, rather different from his.

Last, but not least, I owe thanks to one or two British authorities who prefer anonymity.

I know that I shall appear to have paid no attention to the proceedings of the League of Nations and of the Non-Intervention Committee during the earlier period with which I was concerned. This is not because I dismissed them as irrelevant, but because I felt that they had received almost too much attention in the press at the time, while they were in fact a thin veneer spread over the realities which I have tried to describe. I have also avoided military history as far as it was possible to do so, since I am certainly not qualified to compete with the experts in this field.

Libraries have been flooded with the memoirs and diaries of many of the actors in my play. I would wish to say that while I have found these publications on the whole more informative than I had expected, they all require to be handled with caution. I think it is true to say that the most careful of them are not innocent of slips, and the majority of them are consciously or unconsciously self-justificatory. They are mostly reliable with regard to the author's own experiences, but often misleading when he reports hearsay. A book like Erich Kordt's *Wahn und Wirklichkeit*, for instance, is full of interest, thanks to the author's close-up opportunities, but is at the same time—if I may say so—full of the most flagrant mistakes, for which, it is true, he partly accounts by explaining that he was handicapped by a shortage of reference books. However, I may well be neglecting the beam in my own eye, and Dr. Kordt's book was one I had to scramble through when I had already gone to press.

With regard to the Ciano Papers in *L'Europa verso la catastrofe* which are of really fascinating interest, it should be pointed out that these were written with more courtesy and caution than his Diaries because such Minutes were liable to be handed round among the rulers of the countries friendly to Italy: thus it has to be borne in mind that Ciano knew that Hitler and Ribbentrop might read them. On the other hand, the same book contains papers like Ciano's Memorandum on Albania of May 1938 which was intended solely for the eyes of the Duce. It is unfortunate that the notes to *L'Europa verso la catastrofe* and similar publications are full of inaccuracies which it is sometimes difficult to circumnavigate. Most if not all of the published Diaries, like those of Ciano or Hassell, I read in the original language, and usually made my own translations, before a translation into English had appeared. (Some of the American translations seem destined to twist history into strange shapes.) I used the first edition of Mussolini's *Il tempo del bastone e della carota* almost throughout, and only later saw the chapters which he added. I have been unable to read the Swedish of Hr. Dahlerus's book (referred to on p. 169, n. 2), but have used a summary in English and the evidence which he gave at Nuremberg: the full English translation appeared too late for me to use it as I should have liked. I should add that my references to documents quoted at the main Nuremberg

Trial are consistently made to *The Trial of the German Major War Criminals. Proceedings of the International Military Tribunal sitting at Nuremberg*, Parts 1-[?24] (London, H.M.S.O., 1946-) (referred to as *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings* in all my footnotes), and not to *The Trial of the Major War Criminals before the International Military Tribunal*, 37 vols. (Nuremberg, International Military Tribunal, 1947-), because the latter only became available when I had completed most of my writing. Last but not least, I have used only an unexpurgated edition of *Mein Kampf*.

I owe gratitude to Professor Namier and Mr. Wheeler-Bennett for allowing me to see the proofs of their latest books before they could be published, to Mr. Hamish Hamilton for letting me see the Goebbels Diaries in proof, to Professor Klibansky and Contact Ltd. for allowing me a preview of *The Memoirs of Mussolini*, and to Messrs. Mondadori of Milan for a preview of *L'Europa verso la catastrofe*. I also wish to thank Messrs. Rizzoli of Milan and Messrs. Migliaresi of Rome for permission to reproduce photographs which have appeared in books published by them. I shall have to go to press without any possibility of seeing the earlier volumes of the Ciano Diaries and several other memoirs now on the verge of publication. I feel particularly blameworthy in not having studied the *Zeitschrift für ausländisches öffentliches Recht und Völkerrecht* (1940-4) (before writing my chapter on the New Order), but it was impossible for me to get hold of it in time. It is a labour of Sisyphus to attempt to write about recent events.

I should like to thank the Editors of *The Times Literary Supplement*, *International Affairs*, and the *Spectator*, for allowing me to use again certain portions of articles I have written for them at one time or another.

Finally my thanks are due to the staff of Chatham House Library and Press Archives for their unstinted help, and to my friend, Mr. Lambert Bayne, for the trouble he so willingly took to read through my manuscript.

E. W.

Pupils of Nietzsche

THE Dark Ages began when the savage vigour of the Germans broke up the system of Mediterranean civilization which the Romans had established; a tradition of conflict between Italy and Germany lingered on ever after through the centuries. To transform this antithesis into the synthesis of the Holy Roman Empire was something dreamt of rather than achieved. The Italians resisted what to them were the encroachments of the German emperors and were fortified in doing so by the Church of Rome. While the Imperial forces periodically overran Italy, trying to satisfy the emperors' nostalgic desire to discover the secret of civilization, Germany relapsed into centrifugal chaos.

Some common background the German and Italian peoples had in the unstable coalition of forces expressed in the Empire; both came to owe a partial allegiance to the Habsburg dynasty which at last imposed the stability of hereditary succession upon a considerable portion of Europe. In the nineteenth century the nationalists both in Italy and Germany were at one in their struggles to escape from this Habsburg domination; Prussian victories against Austria in 1866 and 1870 served the Italians well, for they were able to add Venetia and Rome to the Kingdom of Italy without military successes of their own. While the Bismarckian Germany which emerged in 1871 was a federal state ruled by an irresponsible monarch, Victor Emmanuel II had become the constitutional ruler of a unitary state which was over-centralized through the extension of the Piedmontese prefectorial system to the whole of Italy.

Between 1882 and 1914, thanks primarily to German instigation, Germany and Italy established a Triple Alliance with the very House of Habsburg against which both had been in revolt; at first this alliance was directed chiefly against France, but later more and more against the Slavs of eastern Europe. It is important that at that time Italy stipulated that she could only participate in the alliance provided that it should never bring her into action against Great Britain; in those days the rulers

of Italy had no illusions about Mediterranean strategy. Apart from this Italian requirement, which was formally included in the Triplice treaties, the Alliance became an exceedingly uneasy one after 1900; anti-Austrian combined with pro-French feelings in Italy to bring about a Franco-Italian *rapprochement* to which the Germans reacted with blustering annoyance. In those days a very different Austria lay between Rome and Berlin, and the Italian, rather than the German, Government was on bad terms with the Vatican, the steadfast friend of Vienna. There is something fascinatingly familiar, however, in the description given by the French Ambassador of William II's visit to Rome in May 1903, when, staying at the Quirinal though he was, he honoured the Pope with an IMPERIAL demonstration, and German pilgrims acclaimed the new Charlemagne.

'Jamais on ne vit autour d'un souverain', wrote M. Barrère,¹ 'plus de panaches, de casques, de maréchaux, de Ministres bottés (le comte de Bülow a été constamment en bottes), de princes, de cuirassiers gigantesques, de voitures dorées (amenées de Berlin), de chevaux caparaçonnés. . . . Les Italiens n'aiment pas qu'on prenne chez eux des allures de Charlemagne. Il leur déplaît que l'on exhibe dans leurs rues des soldats étrangers choisis parmi les plus gigantesques.'

'... d'autre part', he had noted earlier, '1,500 agents de police en bourgeois, mêlés savamment à la foule sur la place du Quirinal, ont procuré à Guillaume II à son arrivée une bruyante ovation.'

Little King Victor Emmanuel, young and pro-French in those days, was exquisitely annoyed. But in one thing the Italians had their way; on this occasion Austria-Hungary, the absent partner, was not mentioned in the official toasts at the Quirinal.

The Habsburg Empire had been shaken to its foundations in the 'year of revolutions' a hundred years ago. In the struggle to maintain its hold upon the now conscious nationalities which had sprung up like armed men from dragon's teeth, the dynasty, after the defeats of 1866 and the severance of Austria's political link with the rest of Germany, made the Compromise of 1867 with Budapest: from this time the Empire became *Austria-Hungary*, with the River Leitha as the frontier between the two autonomous areas of Austria and Hungary. In Austria the warring nationalities subjected to the Emperor Francis Joseph

¹ M. Barrère to M. Delcassé, 10 June 1903.

included large and, in some districts, aggressive German groups, and a relatively small Italian population in the Trentino (South Tyrol), Trieste, and Dalmatia. In Hungary he had German subjects sprinkled in a number of scattered settlements, and Italian subjects in Fiume, which was Hungary's only port.

In addition to the anti-Austrian tradition in Italy which was primarily associated with the Risorgimento, there were all kinds of troubles between the Austrian authorities and their Italian subjects at the beginning of the twentieth century. The Italians in Austria had been clamouring for an Italian University in Trieste; instead, in May 1903, the Austrian Government allowed some Italian courses at the University of Innsbruck, the capital of the province of Tyrol, which in those days embraced the Trentino right down to Riva on Lake Garda.

'Cette concession', wrote the French Ambassador in Vienna, 'a été l'origine d'un antagonisme chaque jour croissant entre étudiants allemands et italiens et d'une surexcitation qui a fait récemment explosion à l'inauguration du cours du professeur Lorenzoni, dont les auditeurs ont été fortement molestés, à coup de bâton, en signe de protestation par leurs camarades allemands. Les maîtres de ces derniers, loin de les calmer, se sont associés au mouvement: la presse les a encouragés et les autorités ont fait preuve d'une indifférence et d'une mollesse qui ont pu être interprétées comme un acquiescement ou tout au moins comme une neutralité bienveillante.'¹

No sooner did this news reach Italy than anti-Austrian demonstrations took place at nearly all the Italian universities. To round off this picture of Italo-Austrian relations one finds a little later in the same year that Italians are intriguing at Fiume in favour of the further separation of the Hungarian portion of the Dual Monarchy from the Austrian half; the Italians hoped that a change of this kind would weaken Austria to the extent of ceding the territory tacitly claimed by Italy.²

At the beginning of 1902 when it was known that some kind of Franco-Italian agreement had been made, the German Chancellor, Prince Bülow, adopted an attitude of optimistic condescension and indulged in the much-quoted comment that in a happy marriage the husband should not take umbrage if his wife has an innocent dance with someone else. By the spring

¹ Marquis de Reverseaux to M. Delcassé, 28 May 1903.

² M. Revelli, French consul in Fiume, to M. Delcassé, 13 Sept. 1903.

of 1904, however, when Italy invited President Loubet to visit Rome officially, William II and Bulow could no longer contain themselves. In March the German Emperor ordered Victor Emmanuel to his yacht, the *Hohenzollern*, which he anchored off Naples, and insisted that the King of Italy should make warm public references to the Triple Alliance—it was hinted very broadly that refusal to comply would constitute a breach with Germany. The Germans even tried to pledge Victor Emmanuel to sing the praises of the Triplice in the presence of Loubet. These old-style German methods were less successful than Hitler's. The Italians were exceedingly angry at this crude attempt to force them to quarrel with the French and ceased from that time to conceal their preference for the other European camp. By this time France and Britain had come to terms.

Many other factors were working in the same direction. At the beginning of the twentieth century Italy, a great deal later than Germany or France and long after Britain, was becoming industrialized on the basis of a rapidly expanding population and no essential raw materials; above all, her national life came to depend upon coal which she did not possess, and which, until 1914, she imported almost entirely from Britain. It is impossible not to associate her growing tendency after 1900 to aline herself with the at first embryonic Entente with her growing dependence upon British coal. Free-trading Britain was altogether more helpful than protectionist Germany. At this time, also, Italy had more interest in the disintegration of the Turkish Empire in the Balkans and North Africa than in opposing Slav aspirations, and, when Britain and France arranged to succeed Turkey in Egypt and Morocco, Italy's parallel interest was recognized in Tripolitania.

Italy's war for the conquest of what she preferred to call Libya and the controversy around her intervention in the war which broke out in 1914 gave prominence to a young Italian Socialist—scarcely twenty-eight years old in 1911 when the Libyan war began—whose name was Benito Mussolini. In order to embarrass the middle-class moderates of the Italian Socialist Party and thereby gain personal prominence and power, this young man agitated furiously against Socialist support of the Italian Government in the North African war; he

was rewarded the next year (1912) with the expulsion from the Party of the men like Bonomi whom he opposed, while he himself was sent to Milan as editor of the chief party newspaper, the *Avanti*. Two years after this Mussolini agreed with Bonomi and his friends in favour of joining the Allies, while the Socialist Party decided for a pacifist policy and Mussolini's expulsion. Far other motives might and did lead Italians to wish to fight for the Allies after August 1914, but it is clear now that Mussolini's pro-French ardour was inspired—apart from the help which the French Embassy is said to have given to his new interventionist newspaper—by vanity and opportunism and by very little else.

Benito Mussolini came from the Romagna with its anti-clerical and its eternally revolutionary tradition. His father was a blacksmith, his mother a schoolmistress, both probably of peasant origin. The father had been a Mazzinian at one moment and an anarchist at the next and was several times in prison, and the son showed little but turbulence and self-assertion in his youth; he reacted strongly to the shocking way in which he was handled at the Salesian Fathers' college at Faenza for two unhappy years.¹ He became an elementary-school teacher later, really for lack of anything better to do. In 1902, in order to avoid military service in Italy, the nineteen-year-old youth rushed off penniless to Switzerland and picked up odd jobs wherever he could. It was there that he became a Socialist, not thanks to any genuine political conviction or benevolent aim, but, as it would appear, in petulant rebellion against the Swiss police, with whom he was often in trouble. He had been sentenced in Italy for desertion, but in 1904 an amnesty made it possible for him to return. In the last years of the nineteenth century Marxian Socialism had become a great force in Italy, and after 1903, when Giolitti became Prime Minister, until Italy joined in the First World War, the Socialist leaders often worked with him; they thus acquired considerable influence upon the government of the country. In this way the Party became too 'respectable' for its revolutionary wing which was powerfully affected by syndicalism in France, that is to say, by the political doctrines of Georges Sorel which conquered

¹ See his early autobiography, *La mia vita* by Benito Mussolini, ed. Faro (Rome, 1947).

the French trade unions at Amiens in 1906. Though his best-known book, *Réflexions sur la Violence*, was only published in 1908, Sorel had been politically active since the early nineties.

In Switzerland Mussolini had not only picked up a fair amount of French and German, he had also made a very modest début as a revolutionary journalist and a popular orator of theatrical appeal; it was as such that his chief exertions were made after his return to Italy. All his life he remained essentially a journalist with a telling turn of phrase and a tendency to jargon. In Switzerland he first imbibed the doctrines of the anti-democratic prophets of the end of the last century. Pareto was still lecturing at the University of Lausanne for the brief period when Mussolini studied there. Though Malaparte¹ has insisted upon the Marxist character of his political education, Mussolini showed more interest in Kropotkin and Kautsky than in either Marx or Lenin.² It may be surmised, indeed, that his Marxism came to him through the crooked channel of Sorel who was just coming into vogue among the rebels of the Socialist Party in Italy at the time of Mussolini's return.

In this period Mussolini seems to have begun his reading of Nietzsche, who, with his 'nothing true, everything allowed', provided a happy hunting-ground for ambitious misfits. Here again Mussolini had been prepared by Sorel, and in so far as the *superman* meant anything to him other than a glorification of himself, for many years it stood for the glorified proletarian. In 1908 the wise old Jew, Claudio Treves, then editor of the *Avanti*, gave a lecture at Forlì on Nietzsche, in which he defined the superman as a piece of adolescent symbolism. This outraged young Mussolini who burst into a series of articles, in a local weekly called *Il Pensiero Romagnolo*, in defence of the philosophy of force. This was the beginning of a personal vendetta which lasted for some years but then turned in Mussolini's favour, for it was Treves whom he ousted from the *Avanti* when he took over its direction in 1912. Meanwhile Mussolini had spent seven months in 1909 in Trento, until the Austrian authorities expelled him; he worked there in conjunction with the admir-

¹ C. Malaparte, *Technique of a Coup d'État* (1931).

² He said afterwards that he did not know whether he had met Lenin in Zurich; he had several Russian Socialist friends in French Switzerland, including Angelica Balabanova.

able Cesare Battisti, whom the Austrians executed as a traitor in the coming war.

The man who more than any other swept Italy into the war in the 'radiant May' days of 1915 was the poet D'Annunzio. It was he in his latest role of Nationalist, and not Mussolini nor the moderate pro-French Left, who exerted the decisive influence. In the long run, however, both this victory of D'Annunzio, which was won against traditional parliamentarism, and D'Annunzio's regency after the war at Fiume, served Mussolini very well. Under the poet's régime marvellous experiments in political stage-production were carried out; the black shirts of D'Annunzio's self-consciously fiery *Arditi*, together with all kinds of exciting badges and emblems, Roman salutes, and the intoning of political ritual, seem to have originated here. Thus the Nazis, too, were to owe a tremendous debt to the Italian poet. It was at Fiume that a Statute was framed in which the first written blending of modern syndicalism and medieval corporativism seems to have occurred. Indeed, it is not on account of the excitement at the time that D'Annunzio's occupation of Fiume is historically important, but rather on account of what he thereby bequeathed to Mussolini and to Hitler and Goebbels.

Mussolini, it has been seen, lived by 'incessant agitation'¹ to gain notoriety and power by any available means, but provided he were powerful he had no definite aim for which his power should be used. When he was expelled from the official Socialist Party he founded working-men *Fasci* of Revolutionary Action to agitate for intervention; it should be noted, however, that the word *Fasci* only meant bunches or groups and was at that time in current use among people on the Left. After the war the Socialists were stimulated by the Russian Revolution and the Nationalists by D'Annunzio, and Mussolini found himself in the shade, the more since his performance as a soldier had been undistinguished. It was in Milan in 1919, in the Piazza San Sepolcro building which became the seat of the Fascio, that his nascent Fascist Party formulated a violently revolutionary programme directed against everything, Church, Monarchy, and Senate all in one. This programme was dropped very soon, but the Piazza San Sepolcro retained a symbolic importance for the Fascists, and Milan remained a city with which Mussolini felt

¹ Cf. C. J. S. Sprigge, *The Development of Modern Italy* (Duckworth, 1943)

an intimate emotional link. It was after the failure of the metal-workers' occupation of the Milanese factories in August 1920 that Mussolini felt that things were swinging to the Right, and that, in order to gain more power, he must seek new allies and new syntheses. Within two years his Fascists had merged with D'Annunzio's *Arditi*; both of them preached violence and easily recruited crowds of *désorienté* post-war young men. The success of the Communists in Russia made it expedient, if one would not be for them, to be fiercely against them on passionately nationalist grounds. As for the rest, it was easy to tell his working-class following that the corporate ideas of the Nationalist leader, Rocco, and his followers were the same thing as syndicalism; the atheist Mussolini could even whisper to the pious that all this derived from Pope Leo XIII's Encyclical of 1891. And to secure the support of the middle classes, hatred of whom was perhaps the least unstable emotion in Mussolini's make-up, he abandoned his enthusiastic Romagnol republicanism one month before the Fascist march on Rome; it was an essential move in order to conciliate the Army as well as the King.

About the technique of Mussolini's *coup d'état* in October 1922 a Fascist 'myth' was deliberately created by journalists like Malaparte. More serious judges consider that a little energy and conviction on the part of the Army and police, instead of a good deal of connivance, would have put a quick end to the Fascist seizure of key points. In 1931 Malaparte published a book¹ in which he tried to perpetuate the story that Mussolini had exactly imitated Trotsky's technique of 1917. Perhaps Malaparte misunderstood Giolitti's remark that he had learnt from Mussolini that a government should defend itself against the tactics, not the programme, of a revolution; undoubtedly Mussolini had a certain technical equipment, while, as for a programme, he was the first to admit that he had none. In 1922 he became head of a coalition Government in which the Fascists and Nationalists had the whip hand, and he mouthed vague phrases about the Myth of the Nation; it was not until 1926 that he established a Fascist régime through the suppression of all other parties, and really Fascist legislation began with the *Carta del Lavoro* in 1927. All this time he eschewed a formulation of Fascism (which has been seen to mean nothing as a word but

¹ Op. cit. He also entirely misjudged Hitler.

groupism), declaring it to be Pure Act in process. It was astonishing that a man with more than the usual Italian pleasure in political journalism should have shown such reticence. The condition of his health cannot be neglected by anyone attempting to analyse Mussolini's character. It was notorious that he had taken insufficient steps against a syphilitic infection in his journalistic youth: this may help to account for his instability and megalomaniac tendencies. In addition he developed a duodenal ulcer in 1925, which gave him considerable trouble for the following two years, but was then in abeyance until 1937: an ulcer of this kind is often associated with chronic vacillation. Mussolini was, indeed, a man of indecision and of scepticism who was influenced now from this side, now from that, by personal motives, by vanity, or a desire for revenge. As the years passed he compromised with both Monarchy and Church. He quoted Nietzsche on the morality of violence and Sorel on the importance of the political myth, but he had no clear conception of his own aims or methods. He set up a Fascist Grand Council, which was to occasion his downfall, and he relied on Fascist education to shift the bases of power with the passage of time. Later Mussolini established a Chamber of Corporations in the place of the Chamber of political deputies. This was a lame attempt to practise syndicalism, but whereas the Syndicalist movement was anarchist in origin and sought to replace the State by a Trade Union Congress, the Fascist corporations were constructed as the bastions of a dictatorial state.

There was one political innovation of first-rate importance which Mussolini introduced into Italy. The Syndicalists had wished to abolish politics and parties along with the State. And yet Sorel and other believers in *élites* were responsible for that totalitarian contradiction in terms, the idea of the One-Party State. If the latter was first realized by the Russian Communists (creating an essential distinction between Communism and other forms of Socialism), Mussolini followed them in 1926.

'At this time', wrote Adolf Hitler of the year 1923, 'I confess frankly, I conceived the deepest admiration for the great man south of the Alps, who in passionate love for his people refused to make terms with the internal enemies of Italy, but sought their destruction by all ways and means. What will place Mussolini among the great of the earth is his determination not to share Italy with

Marxism, but rather in condemning internationalism to destruction, to save his country from it' (= Marxism?).¹

In Germany this man, nearly six years younger than Mussolini, had already become so oddly prominent that in the spring of 1922 a man like Pechel, editor of the *Deutsche Rundschau*, felt it right to lunch with him in Munich and then to invite him to speak at the exceedingly nationalistic *Juni-Klub* in Berlin, where Moeller van den Bruck and Hitler met for the only time.² How many superficial resemblances have been discovered between Adolf Hitler and Benito Mussolini, their *petit-bourgeois* nearly peasant origin, their 'Bohemian' poses, their fight against liberalism and democracy! But perhaps no two people intimately connected by history were ever more different; and perhaps the essence of the difference between them is that Hitler was obsessed by a set of fixed ideas which never changed and which he committed to paper some eight years before he became master of Germany, while it was not until ten years after he had come to power that Mussolini was willing to sponsor a celebrated article on the doctrine of Fascism in the *Enciclopedia Italiana* in 1932.

It is a strange thing to observe how, in English-speaking countries, the last war has come and gone without its lessons being learnt. It is necessary, therefore, to insist that Hitler could never have been what he was had he not been Austrian. The historical phenomenon of Adolf Hitler can be explained, and can only be explained, when one remembers that the year 1848 had heralded a frenzy of German nationalism within the Habsburg Empire; as industrialism developed and the birth-rate rose, the Germans of Austria-Hungary, most of whom we traditionally call Austrians, became a decreasing racial group; as they came to realize this, those of them who did not, like the aristocracy or the active Catholics or Socialists or the isolated Liberals among them, feel some generalized human allegiance, became savagely 'national'. This meant that, since democracy robbed them of the dominance they claimed by virtue of their

¹ *Mein Kampf* (Verlag Franz Eher, Munich, 1933), part ii, chapter 15.

² Rudolf Pechel, *Deutscher Widerstand* (Eugen Rentsch, Zurich, 1947). Moeller was the author of an excessively obscure outburst of nationalism whose title, *Das Dritte Reich*, was adopted with a flourish by the Nazis to signify the régime which they aspired to establish. He, however, wrote in good faith. (The Holy Roman Empire was the first Reich and the Hohenzollern Empire the second.)

German blood, they became its enemies and embraced cults of some *élite*; since the Slavs were growing numerically and in Slav consciousness, the German-Austrians became violently anti-Slav. And, since on principle they hated under-dogs and intelligence, they developed an anti-Semitic creed which fitted in with their contempt for Christianity, whose founder was a Jew.

Adolf Hitler, the son of a small customs official, was born in Upper Austria, on the Bavarian frontier, but very near Bohemia which was the German-Slav battleground *par excellence*. He spent his schooldays in Linz, which he always regarded as his home. Hitler inherited the views of a fairly small but active group of the Austrian middle and lower-middle class¹ influential in the *Grenzländer* where the Germans touched upon the Slavs, i.e. in Bohemia, Silesia, Styria, and Carinthia. These views were familiar, however, to the general Austrian public; they coloured the opinions of very different groups with what often seems to us a rather silly chauvinism; for no evident reason they were exceedingly popular in Linz and were preached by the teachers at Adolf Hitler's school.

The 'national' Austrians regarded the division between Austria and Germany in 1866 as a crime, and it was an essential part of their creed to wish to undo the wickedness of Bismarck and of Francis Joseph, and 'restore' German unity. The subsequent successes of Bismarck earned him their forgiveness, and their agitation took the shape of working for the incorporation of Austria, with or without its other nationalities, in the Hohenzollern Empire which German patriots declared to have become the true successor to the Holy Roman Empire. It is necessary to remember all this in order to understand what happened between 1933 and 1938 and the behaviour of the Austrians at the time of the Anschluss. It is necessary to remember it also in order to explain Hitler's praise of Ribbentrop in later days as greater than Bismarck. When Schuschnigg went to the Berghof in 1938 he noted the Lenbach portrait of Bismarck in a prominent position,² and Gafencu in 1939 found Ribbentrop at work with a similar portrait on the wall at his back.³

¹ Cf. Papen's dispatch, Vienna to Berlin 27 July 1935, in which he refers to this.

² K. von Schuschnigg, *Ein Requiem in Rot-Weiss-Rot* (Amstutz, Zurich, 1946), p. 45.

³ G. Gafencu, *Derniers Jours de l'Europe* (Egloff, Paris, 1946).

The leader of the 'national' extremists or *Alldeutschen* in Austria was for many years a certain Georg von Schönerer, who distinguished himself as the ringleader in a famous incident in 1888. William I, first Emperor of Bismarck's new Germany, lay dying, and inadvertently an Austrian paper in Jewish hands, the *Neues Wiener Tagblatt*, pre-announced his death. Schönerer arose in wrath to chastise the staff of the *Tagblatt*; with a group of his followers he perpetrated a nasty piece of 'beating-up'. The incident was prophetic of hundreds of the kind in Germany between 1933 and the final liquidation of the German and Austrian Jews; the only difference lay in the fact that Schönerer was tried and punished while his imitators half a century later were promoted and praised.

Adolf Hitler was born one year after the Schönerer affair. In his childhood Pan-German¹ societies spread from Austria into William II's Germany; Hitler was eight at the time of the Eger riots when the Austrian Pan-Germans demonstratively crossed into Hohenzollern territory in order to flout the Austrian police. From the time of the Austrian annexation of Bosnia until the murder at Sarajevo, nationalistic intransigence, especially among the Germans of Austria, became something like red-hot; Hitler was nineteen when Bosnia was taken and twenty-five when the Great War began.

The Prussians, who became the scapegoats of Pan-German admiration because of their efficiency, were far less given to ecstatic racial dreams. (There was to be scarcely one Prussian among the Nazi leaders, who were predominantly Bavarians or *Auslandsdeutschen*.) The Prussians had their own Slav neighbours certainly, but the Poles were opposed to Pan-Slavism and the Polish question did not draw the Prussians into polemics such as the Bohemian question created around Prague, which was known in *Alldeutsch* terms as the Western Moscow long before the days of Dr. Beneš. There was, of course, some foolish Pan-Slav talk in Austria-Hungary and in Russia from 1848 onwards, in reply to the Pan-Germans. It should also be noted that whereas there were enough Jews in positions of privilege or hardship to create a Jewish question in Austria-Hungary where

¹ There were nuances between *Grossdeutsch* and *Alldeutsch* and *Pangermanisch*, but the latter name was least used though we use Pan-German as the translation of *Alldeutsch*.

race-consciousness was stimulated by racial diversity, in Prussia the most hysterical anti-Semite would have found it hard to prove a general case against the Jews before 1914; it was only after the First World War that immigration created something of a Jewish problem in Republican Germany.

The case of sheltered Bavaria, which had neither a Slav nor a Jewish problem, is particularly strange; it is difficult to find any adequate explanation for the rabid nationalism generated there. From the time of the foundation of the *Alldeutsche Verband* in the Reich, Munich, generally regarded by foreigners as an artistic centre only, was also the unofficial headquarters of the Reich Pan-Germans. This was no contradiction since Futurists sometimes indulged in the wildest chauvinism, especially in Germany and Italy. Further Ludwig II of Bavaria had been the patron of Wagner with all his Germanic mysticism, and this tradition lingered on in twentieth-century Munich. On 24 January 1906 Mr. Reginald Tower, British consul-general in Munich, addressed to Sir Edward Grey¹ the best extant account of Pan-German activity in the Germany of that day and of its designs upon the subjects of the Emperor Francis Joseph. It was in Munich, he reported, that the publisher, Lehmann, brought out most Pan-German periodicals and pamphlets. Bismarck's federalism had left the Wittelsbachs on the Bavarian throne, and the Pan-German Bavarians were, it seems, as hostile as their Austrian confrères to the dynastic and Catholic influences around them. Above all they were anti-clerical.

From Linz Hitler went to Vienna to try his fortune as a painter. His failure to establish himself in the imperial capital forced him to pass very squalid days of privation among the heterogeneous riff-raff of the least German town of German Austria. Unlike Mussolini he spurned the 'proletariat' and its Marxism, which was as bad as Christianity in his eyes, for it, too, was the faith of the downtrodden and the weak. In Vienna perhaps, certainly later in Munich, Hitler picked up, with a smattering of Nietzsche, the opposite religion of the strong. It is difficult to make precise statements about Hitler's reading—he himself always avoided doing so; at any rate he probably absorbed Wagnerian and Nietzschean emotions very easily from

¹ F.O. 371/76, no. 14.

the atmosphere around him. Such Nietzsche as he read must have reached him by direct impact without any introduction like that of Sorel. To Hitler, the superman, in so far as it meant more than a glorification of himself, meant the heroic German who should know no Habsburg law¹ in loosing his *Furchtbarkeit*² against Slav and Jew. The impact of Nietzsche upon Hitler was all the more direct because, while the mind of the one was brilliant and of the other banal, both suffered from the paranoia which is, it seems, tragically frequent in Germany.

In 1912 Hitler was able to transfer himself from cosmopolitan Vienna to Pan-German headquarters at Munich, which became as important to him as Milan to Mussolini. Mussolini, as it happened, was established in the offices of the *Avanti* in Milan the same year. Hitler was able to live in Munich by painting fancy postcards until 1914. The outbreak of war, the Pan-Germans felt, was the answer to their prayers. 'To me', Hitler wrote in *Mein Kampf*, 'those hours (at the beginning of August 1914) seemed like salvation after the resentments of my youth. Even to-day I am not ashamed to say that I sank on my knees in wild enthusiasm and thanked Heaven with a full heart that I had been fortunate enough to live at such a time.'³ It was consistent with the Austrian Pan-German point of view that Hitler joined up in Bavaria, and not in the 'k-und-k'⁴ army which owed allegiance to the Habsburgs, in his eyes the corrupters of all true Germans because the protectors of Slavs and Jews. The Hohenzollerns, on the other hand, he conceived as the heirs to the medieval German Knights who had planted German colonies in Slav lands to the east of the Holy Roman Empire. To be the imitator of the Knights upon a titanic scale was one of Adolf Hitler's major aspirations. And so he went off to do his bit towards the setting-up of a German *Mittleuropa*, to drive back the Slavs, and to colonize the collapsing empire of the Tsars. Already ambition had combined the hope of extending the Habsburg Empire in the Balkans with that of expanding German influence over the Baltic Sea.

The defeat of the Central Powers marked a decisive stage in

¹ There was an elaborate, though not always effectual, system of legislation to protect the nationalities in Habsburg Austria.

² Cf. Nietzsche, *Der Wille zur Macht*: 'Zur Grösse gehört die Furchtbarkeit: man lasse sich nichts vormachen.'

³ 1933 edition, p. 177.

⁴ *kaiserliche-und-königliche*.

Hitler's evolution. It appealed to his fantastic megalomania to feel that he, the Saviour of the Germans, must now start from the beginning to catch up with history and then change its whole direction. In 1918 he spent several months in hospital owing to a temporary blindness, and there he reflected upon the mistakes which had been made both by the Pan-Germans and by the Central Powers for whom they had fought. Both had failed in propaganda.

It had long been obvious that Schönerer and his lieutenants and successors had failed to create a mass movement, and it was to rectify this that a German Working-men's Party had been founded so early as 1904.¹ It was only, however, in Bohemia and Austrian Silesia that any Austrian working-men could be persuaded to join a chauvinist party, for elsewhere they voted fairly solidly Social Democrat; the German Working-men's Party sent no more than three deputies to the Austrian Parliament in the elections of 1911, the first voting after Austria had introduced something very like universal suffrage for males over twenty-four. The Working-men's Party was led by Hans Knirsch, deputy for the mixed German-Czech mining town of Dux or Duchcov; in May 1918 he expanded its name to German National-Socialist Working-men's Party (*Deutsche Nationalsozialistische Arbeiter Partei* or D.N.S.A.P.). It continued to exist within the new Czechoslovak and Austrian Republics after the peace treaties. Hitler seems to have had no connexion with Knirsch in the Habsburg days, perhaps for simple geographical reasons; in Vienna at that time the only politician he found praiseworthy was the Christian-Socialist mayor, Lueger, who was anti-Semitic in an arbitrary way, and who was, above everything, an orator with popular appeal.

As he lay in that hospital in 1918, Hitler tells us, he perceived the possibilities of propaganda along the lines of Northcliffe and the successful British leaflets which had demoralized the Germans. Instead, however, of retaining some relation to fact, as British propaganda had, Hitler's propaganda would be totally unscrupulous: the bigger the lie the better. He recovered his sight and went back to Munich as a political agent—or spy—of

¹ They shared some of their ideas with the very nationalist German Agrarian Party as well as with the German Radicals and the remains of the *Schönererianer* from whom the German Radicals were descended.

the Reichswehr, on whose account he attended all kinds of political meetings. Having once joined in some public discussion he revealed a phenomenal ability to inflame mass opinion when he spoke.¹ In 1920 he was co-opted on to the committee of a Working-men's Party recently founded by Drexler, a Munich metal-worker. Hitler renamed it National-Socialist German Working-men's Party (N.S.D.A.P.); in August he and Drexler met representatives from the Austrian and Czechoslovak D.N.S.A.P. at a Pan-German Congress at Salzburg. From this time the other parties looked to him.

In the early post-war years, it is suggested by Rauschnig,² Hitler may have become aware of Sorel's notions through his own more cultured followers such as Goebbels. In the summer of 1923 he was received by Wagner's family at Bayreuth and his enthusiasm for Wagnerian conceptions was probably stimulated. Though Nietzsche had quarrelled so fiercely with Wagner it may be assumed that Bayreuth also inspired Hitler with fresh enthusiasm for Nietzsche's philosophy of force—it seems, indeed, to have fired him to play the superman without delay.

In November 1923 Hitler, together with General Ludendorff and a motley collection of followers—it included Streicher, Göring, and Gregor Strasser—attempted a *Putsch* in Munich. The Reichswehr considered it too early to turn against the democratic Republic which had succeeded the Hohenzollerns in Germany at the end of the war, so the Reichswehr shot at Hitler's storm troops and there were sixteen casualties.³ The *Putsch*, which seemed almost comic at the time, had several results of importance. It led to Hitler's trial and imprisonment. The trial gave him a new and particular platform for publicity, and ended in a sentence of five years' imprisonment in a fortress, Landsberg on the Lech; there he lived in comfort, with a number of his Nazi comrades, from April 1924 until the end of the year, when he was pardoned and released. This period of retirement gave birth to *Mein Kampf*, which was published in two parts in the next year or so, the Koran of the National Socialists. 'There is no right but might' was the burden of its message.

¹ Cf. Gafencu (op. cit.) who felt him as the embodiment of the German masses.

² Rauschnig, *Die Revolution des Nihilismus* (Europa Verlag, Zurich, 1936).

³ See K. Heiden, *Adolf Hitler — eine Biographie* (Europa Verlag, Zurich, 1936-7).

Endless disputes soon arose as to whether Hitler stood on the Right or on the Left—opposed to social change or in favour of it—but they were irrelevant because such issues did not concern him. Fundamentally he aimed at social injustice, and social change was only of interest to him in so far as it furthered his other objectives or did the reverse. He believed that the Germans should be established as a ruling caste within which, as within the medieval Orders, authoritative command was to prevail; the rest of humanity was to be at their disposal in varying degrees of slavery. In this way he combined his Pan-German heritage with those doctrines of Nietzsche which he had chosen to imbibe. His ruling caste or *élite* was sometimes expanded to cover a hypothetical German 'race', but tended to contract from signifying the German Nazi Party in command of a One-Party German State to signifying the Nazi Storm Troopers (S.A.) and finally the Nazi *Schutz Staffeln* or S.S. He knew that his aim could only be achieved by the total destruction of the moral values accepted in Europe hitherto and would therefore almost certainly require war on a grand scale; the German occupation of Europe between 1940 and 1944 was to a great extent its realization. He defined his objectives with insolent sincerity in *Mein Kampf*, but they were something so alien to Western minds that, like the warnings of several of his countrymen,¹ they mostly fell upon stone-deaf ears. The West was also utterly misled by Hitler's cries for freedom since it did not know that to the Pan-German mind German freedom meant power to dominate.²

'Der Nationalsozialismus', wrote Heiden, 'ist eine Praxis der Herrschaft, keine Ideologie',³ and the pre-announcement of the methods Hitler intended to use was as little credited as that of his objectives. Adolf Hitler's genius, if such it may be counted, lay in the idea of the economy of force which he developed after the failure of his *Putsch* in 1923. After this he perceived that so long (and only so long) as the world did not wake up to his method he could eke out and increase the force at his disposal

¹ Especially Heiden (op. cit.) and Rauschnig (op. cit.).

² Prof. Dahlmann in April 1848 wrote: 'Through power to freedom, this is Germany's predestined path'; he was among the more enlightened German leaders of the day.

³ K. Heiden, op. cit.: 'National Socialism is not an ideology but a technique of domination.'

by the unexpected completeness of his falsity. In the negation of right as hitherto accepted new weapons of might could be forged, the better while old acceptances lingered. Further, any temporary compromise was permissible solely in order to concentrate upon one objective at a time. It is easy to illustrate these doctrines of Hitler's. A useful definition is to be found in the address he delivered to the German industrialists¹ just before the elections of March 1933, where he erroneously stated that he had thought in this way since 1918. He insisted that one should never use force so long as one is gaining strength in other ways (this is, of course, very close to the famous Clausewitz formulation); for this reason he suggested that if the elections of 5 March did not turn out as he required he would then use other than the apparently constitutional means (i.e. the ruthlessly intimidating propaganda) which had served him well enough so far. When the struggle for power within Germany had been crowned with success, he continued, exactly the same methods would be used to gain external power. There would be plenty of 'conciliatory offers' to the world, but Hitler's principles included *die Ablehnung der Völkerversöhnung*,² and Germany would rearm when he was ready to do so, not when Geneva agreed.

The success of Hitler's technique depended partly upon the fact that the Germans, and at least as much the German Austrians, were familiar with no-right-but-might ideas which had been pronounced in Germany for many years. Christian or pre-Christian conceptions of morality unrelated to force seemed uncongenial to many of them. The English-speaking peoples were morally restrained by what others called their hypocrisy, while the Latin nations—and this is true of Fascist Italy—might bring forth individuals who idolized force, but were constantly inhibited from the logical consequences in action by a persistent legalism which one can but attribute to the influence of ancient Rome. The mind of eastern Europe was perhaps more primitive than the German mind, but it was less diseased.

Hitler's success, however, depended still more upon his psychotic make-up. If he was inhumanly cold and logical and

¹ The text of this speech was captured by the Allies at the end of the war.

² = 'the rejection of international reconciliation'.

clear-sighted in the pursuit of his ends, at the same time and quite separately he lived in a state of paranoiac adolescence. The more one studies *Mein Kampf* or his letters or speeches, together with his behaviour and actions, the more one feels that he really believed in a world of Wagnerian heroes and monsters. He himself was something between Wotan and Siegfried fighting a mystic fight against Loki, the Jew, who was at the same time like the terrible serpent of the Sagas which encircled the earth. His superstition and his pride in his sleep-walker's certainty were a part of this fairy-story; the same is probably true of the tears in his eyes¹ when he thought of Mussolini's sympathy at the time of the Anschluss, when in fact he had—as we shall see—persistently weakened Mussolini and strengthened himself until the moment was ripe. Naturally people could not believe that this emotional absurdity, with its seeming hesitations, was a phenomenon of political logicity. There was, fortunately for him and unfortunately for the world, something sincere about the ridiculous scenes which puzzled a brother Austrian and a *Freikorps* adventurer like Prince Starhemberg² almost as much as they perplexed the Latins or the British. For this reason even in Germany until 1933 a considerable section of the public simply smiled at this man's unexaggerated threats; for this reason a larger proportion of opinion in the world did the same until 1939. But for this reason also, the sincerity of his own ridiculous hysteria, he could mesmerize mass meetings and seduce in the mass a number of individuals who privately discussed him with scepticism. We shall never know whether this man could have intoxicated non-German crowds in the same fashion; many Germans have strong hysterical tendencies which bound them to him in a particular way. It is interesting that Hitler deliberately praised hysteria: 'the greatest transformations in this world would have been unthinkable', he wrote, 'if the impulse behind them had been only the bourgeois virtues of order and tranquillity instead of fanatical, yes hysterical, passions.'³

According to his own account Adolf Hitler had decided in 1918 that he would need Britain and Italy as his allies in order

¹ Cf. Ciano Diary (Rizzoli, Milan, 1946), 20 Nov. 1940, and below.

² See *Between Hitler and Mussolini*, by Prince Starhemberg (Hodder & Stoughton, 1942), pp. 84-5

³ *Mein Kampf* (1933 edition), p. 475.

to crush France and establish his German caste hegemony: if they should object to his plan when they had recognized it they could, having been used, be destroyed. With his relations with Britain this book is not directly concerned, but only with his relations with Italy, with the extraordinary manner in which he advanced inexorably towards the subjugation of Italy independently of his romantic hero-worship for the Duce, and yet—perhaps unconsciously—using this sentimental devotion, which was based on false premisses, in order to complete his political mastery.

It was the intellectual fashion in Germany to attribute the collapse of the Roman Empire to an excess of racial interbreeding, and to despise the Italians as its hybrid descendants. This view had been formulated with éclat by Houston Stewart Chamberlain, a renegade Englishman who married one of Wagner's daughters: his main work which he called *The Foundations of the Nineteenth Century* was published in 1899 and was greatly admired by the Kaiser. To racialists like his Balt friend Alfred Rosenberg, to whom Hitler entrusted the direction of his chief party newspaper, the *Völkische Beobachter*, Italians were only fit to be low-grade slaves to the Germanic ruling caste: Mussolini himself might be regarded as a scion of nothing nobler than that Latin proletariat which, according to Rosenberg, had risen against its Germanic lords to perpetrate the deplorable revolution of 1789.

Hitler did honour to Chamberlain as a *völkische Schriftsteller*;¹ he was proud to have met the old man at Bayreuth in 1923. But he discovered an anti-racialist theory which conveniently justified the policy towards Italy upon which he had determined. In Munich in the first years following the war Professor Karl Haushofer was busy working out his new science of *Geopolitik*, which claimed geographical expediency as the basis of policy, and divided the world into 'expansion-areas' of such Powers as it pleased. Haushofer, who had been a general in Japan, was the advocate of a German-Italian-Japanese alliance; he held that, since Japan had expansion-space in the Pacific and Italy in the Mediterranean, neither need collide with a resurgent and expanding Germany. Through his young Nazi protégé and assistant, Rudolf Hess, who was imprisoned at Landsberg

¹ See reference in *Mein Kampf*.

with Hitler, Haushofer was brought into touch with the Fuhrer; indeed he frequently visited the prisoners.

Hitler was the only German or Austrian of whom one ever hears who felt no bitterness against Italy for the *Verrat* of 1914-15. On the contrary, judging the Italians by himself, he declared in *Mein Kampf* that they were right to ally themselves with Austria-Hungary only to prepare war against her, while the Germans had been fools enough to bind themselves to the festering Habsburg corpse. And now he was determined upon a partnership with Italy's Great Man. In accordance with the theories of *Geopolitik* Mussolini was to use the Mediterranean—without the Adriatic—as his expansion-space, leaving old Austria-Hungary, in terms of which Hitler always thought, and Russia, to the Fuhrer.

The Duce became his model and he imagined the Fascist revolution to have been what he desired for Germany; in the ten years between 1933 and 1943 he was to cultivate the notion of the identity of 'our two revolutions'. Disobedient facts were unable to deter him. Though Rosenberg was publicly to lament the absence of anti-Semitism in Fascist Italy, in *Mein Kampf* Hitler described Mussolini's struggle against 'the Jewish world-hydra' as 'perhaps fundamentally subconscious (though I personally do not believe that it is)'. With the enthusiasm of the Pan-German Austrian Hitler wrote in an open letter in 1931: 'Prussianism is a moral, not a geographical, conception. Mussolini is a Prussian.' He meant that Mussolini was the only man of violence who had arisen in post-war Europe, the only superman who had begun to drive out the religion of the weak with that of the strong. He used Prussian in this sense, although Nietzsche had despised the North Germans as submissive and contemptible people.

Very shortly after this declaration of Hitler's about Mussolini, the Duce's play about the Hundred Days, the *Campo di Maggio*,¹ was performed at Weimar; this was due to the fact that the Nazis were strong in Thuringia where one of them, Frick, was already a Minister. Hitler and Hess arrived quite unexpectedly for Mussolini's play. On the following day Hitler, laden with flowers for Nietzsche's aged sister, visited the *Nietzsche Archiv*;

¹ Mussolini gave his name to several plays in conjunction with a certain Forzano.

alone¹ before the bust of the master he seemed to fall into a pious trance. Inspired by the Duce's piece about Napoleon played in the town of Nietzsche's death where republican Germany had dared to draft a democratic constitution, did he vow to be the most ferocious superman of all?

¹ A friend of mine, unseen by Hitler (he supposes), by chance enjoyed this memorable scene. He also witnessed the enthusiastic reception of Hitler by Nietzsche's sister, Elisabeth Forster. This was early in 1932.

II

The Quarrel over Austria

IN Habsburg Austria the Crownland of Tyrol extended to Lake Garda and included a considerable Italian population; it was one of the grievances of Italian patriots that this was so. After the fall of the Habsburgs, against whom both Mussolini and Hitler had stormed, the grievance was inverted to become a German one. By the Peace of St. Germain in 1919 the southern portion of Tyrol was transferred to Italy; for strategic reasons the new frontier was drawn at the Brenner Pass, so that over 200,000 German Austrians were included in Italy. This created the problem of the South Tyrol (or the Alto Adige as the Italians preferred to call it) and the greatest stumbling-block in the way of an Italian-German alliance; no real solution of the question was ever reached between Mussolini and Hitler. The rights and wrongs of the matter can be studied elsewhere. There is no doubt that the Austrians who lived south of the Brenner were badly treated by the Italian authorities as soon as these became the organs of an over-centralizing Fascism; this was the first and best-ventilated minority scandal of the time and caused international indignation.¹

To Hitler, who was determined both to ally with Italy and to absorb Austria into Germany, it was essential to keep clear of an Italian-Austrian controversy around the chief area where Italians and Germans impinged upon one another. Mussolini was highly susceptible in the matter, and Hitler knew that, in order to win Austria, he would be wise to suspend his own susceptibilities as an Austrian: on no account must he suggest that his Reich might one day descend into the valley of the Adige. His attitude towards South Tyrol was therefore geopolitical. He was ready, he announced, to divide Europe with Mussolini at the Brenner, the frontier indicated by geography—~~a~~ few 'unredeemed' Germans to the south of it could be ignored. In *Mein Kampf*, indeed, he declared any agitation on behalf of the Austrians of the South Tyrol to be part of the Jewish-

¹ The Italians were not bound by any treaty obligations with regard to their minorities.

Legitimist conspiracy aimed at the prevention of a German-Italian *rapprochement* by those who had reason to fear an alliance between Berlin and Rome. Propagandist agitation on behalf of a minority, he added significantly, is in any case hypocrisy, for it only makes difficulties for those it professes to champion; the one way in which oppressed peoples can really be helped is by making oneself strong enough to help them by force. (When the Czechs remembered this statement later on they were reproved by the West and left in the lurch.) Hitler's approach to the South Tyrolese question was unpopular in Germany, and in 1927 the Nazi Party programme still refused 'to renounce any German, whether of the Sudeten German districts, South Tyrol, Poland, that League-of-Nations colony Austria, or of any of the Successor States'. In 1931, however, Alsace-Lorraine replaced the South Tyrol on the list: the courting of Italy had begun.

The five or six years following Hitler's release from the fortress of Landsberg on the Lech at Christmas 1924 were ~~uneventful~~ from the point of view of his Italian aspirations. Italy became a Locarno Power but failed to achieve the application of the Locarno guarantee to the Brenner frontier. Early in 1926 Mussolini crossed rhetorical swords with Stresemann over the South Tyrol, but after that the Duce's growing tendency to lead dissatisfaction with the European *status quo* made his relations with the Weimar régime relatively good. He had little interest, therefore, in contact with a revolutionary German Party which appeared, until the elections of 1930, to be losing ground, and when Brüning came to Rome in 1931 it is said that two Nazis who shouted 'Down with the Jews' Chancellor!' were arrested and imprisoned.¹ About the middle of the twenties Hitler announced to a party comrade that Mussolini had invited him to Italy, but that he could not sacrifice his Party's prestige by going without at least three motor-cars which he could not yet afford. The truth is that at about the same time he had applied to the Italian Embassy in Berlin for a signed photograph of Mussolini; the request was forwarded to Rome, but elicited nothing but unqualified refusal.

The Italian Embassy in Berlin was visited during the twenties rather by Sudeten German Nazis like Knirsch than by direct

¹ A. François-Poncet, *Souvenirs d'une ambassade à Berlin* (Flammarion, 1946), p. 24.

followers of Hitler; in this period the Croat Ustaši¹ were among its constant visitors. The practical foundations of a Fascist-Nazi alliance were laid by Goring who, after Hitler's *Putsch* attempt of November 1923, fled abroad and spent about a year of his four years' exile in Italy. He endorsed the Hitler point of view about the South Tyrol and he easily made friends in Italian Air Force circles. And then for a flashy social figure and a collector of *objets d'art* all sorts of things were possible, for instance, his friendship with the Prince of Hesse, who was also a friend of the Prince of Piedmont. Philip of Hesse had Fascist connexions, Nazi inclinations, and a doubtful reputation; he lived a life typical of Berlin at that time, with no visible means of support, sharing a flat with a reputedly perverse Russian prince. In spite of this and of Hesse's unusual hideousness, Prince Umberto's sister, poor Princess Mafalda, fell deeply in love with him. The situation was sufficiently painful for the diplomats to be disturbed, but the Italian Embassy in Berlin remained discreetly silent. When the German Embassy in Rome, however, felt it necessary to warn the Quirinal, King Victor Emmanuel was irritated by the interference, and in September 1925 the Prince of Hesse, the 'winged messenger' of the Axis to be, became the son-in-law of the King of Italy. Another confidant of Hitler's with an interest in Italy was his solicitor, Hans Frank, whom we now connect too exclusively with Poland. Frank was given legal work for the Nazi Party soon after its foundation; he, too, had fled to Italy in November 1923 and often went back there; he spoke Italian fluently. But the most popular of all the Nazi envoys to Italy was probably the more presentable Ritter von Epp; he, too, travelled south from Bavaria frequently.

Goring returned to the Fatherland in 1927, and in the elections of 1928 became a deputy; from now on he acted as Hitler's foreign affairs expert, but he had no dealings with the Italian Embassy until later. There is no evidence of any concrete connexion between Mussolini and the Nazis at the time of Hitler's speech to the Nazi Party on 24 May 1930, when he said, rather as if he had been Chancellor for years, 'Seit vielen Jahren strebe ich eine Verbindung mit Italien an'.² At the time when he began

¹ See below, Chapter III

² 'I have been striving for many years for a relationship with Italy.'

to finance Starhemberg's Austrian *Heimwehr* (or Home Guards), Mussolini had never given money to the German Nazis.

Hitler had continued to imitate Mussolini's technique. According to Heiden he first used the 'Roman salute' as his Party marched past him in Weimar in July 1926. Meanwhile Goebbels was working out bigger and better D'Annunzio-of-Fiume methods. The present writer experienced an unforgettable mass meeting (there were about 10,000 persons in the audience) at the *Sportpalast* in Berlin two or three years prior to the Third Reich in a period when Nazi uniforms were forbidden. Goebbels himself was the speaker and he gloried in the frightful fate which would soon overtake the 'traitors of Versailles'; the almost voluptuous delight of the public was stimulated by Nazi youths in white shirts and top boots who at suitable moments intoned Nazi slogans or rolled what looked like barrels round the galleries to sound like the rolling of drums. Collapsing banks and a sensational increase of unemployment in Germany gave the year 1931 a catastrophic flavour which delighted the Nazis, and in August 1932 Papen and all those who blindly imagined they could harness the Nazis to their own chariot urged Hindenburg to take Hitler into the Government. Summoned to Hindenburg's presence Hitler doggedly insisted he must have the powers Mussolini had had in 1922, but the President listened sceptically; he did not even invite Hitler to it down and very quickly sent him unsatisfied away.

By this time Mussolini had become interested and flattered. He had now written in the *Enciclopedia Italiana* that Fascism was the conquering creed of the twentieth century, and he looked forward with interest to the day when Germany might become his satellite. Until now he had felt uncertain about Hitler whom Malaparte¹ designated *unrevolutionary* and *pro-bourgeois* (this was to be Hitler's final judgement on Mussolini in 1943). German diplomats, men like Neurath and Hassell, who succeeded Neurath as German Ambassador to Rome in 1932, hinted that Hitler was foolish rather than dangerous. In 1930 Hitler, with his extraordinary assurance, had suggested to Starhemberg that he should make contact with Mussolini, whereupon the Duce made the most of the opportunity to cross-question Starhemberg about Hitler. 'Will Hitler come to power

¹ Op. cit.

in Germany? Is he any good? . . . At any rate he is a strong man. A great demagogue. But isn't he mad? . . . He has certainly done a great deal, but his racial theories are nonsense. . . .¹ 'Race, it is an emotion, not a reality'; 95 per cent. of it is emotion' Mussolini had written. It was the nation which he was eager to apostrophize, 'not a race, nor a geographically determined region, but as a community historically perpetuating itself, which is the will to existence and to power. . . .' There was no room for anti-Semitism, nor for *Geopolitik* here.

The formation of the Nazi-Nationalist Harzburg front in October 1931 did most to impress Mussolini in favour of Hitler, for it seemed to him to be a wise acceptance of his own example. Shortly after the Harzburg demonstration Goring was received by the then Italian Ambassador in Berlin, Orsini-Baroni; he held forth upon the great strength of the Nazi movement, but the Ambassador, who had always diagnosed it as a minor disorder, was unimpressed. It was only when Cerruti succeeded Orsini-Baroni in August 1932 that the Italian Embassy began to take National Socialism seriously.

Mussolini, it has been seen, had drawn his own conclusions and he interested himself eagerly in the plethora of elections which overtook Germany in the year 1932. He, or at any rate his more pro-German Press Chief, Polverelli, went so far as to think that Hitler would beat Hindenburg in the Presidential election in April, and he expected the much-talked-of 50 per cent. Nazi vote, which was never obtained, at each of the Reichstag and local elections which followed. All through 1932 Mussolini looked for a march on Berlin, but when the Nazis lost two million votes in November that year and did not promptly organize a *coup*, he decided that they had lost their chance for some time.

It was a disagreeable autumn for Hitler. When the *Fondazione Volta* invited Rosenberg to Rome to lecture on the philosophy of National Socialism he was introduced to Mussolini; but the Duce thought poorly of this Nordic doctrinaire and altogether he made a bad impression. Towards the end of the

¹ See Starhemberg, *Between Hitler and Mussolini*, referred to above. This book was written many years later and after the loss of valuable notes. Although its author might be dismissed as an inaccurate type, his testimony is mostly borne out by the available evidence and by subsequent developments.

year Gregor Strasser, who had the reputation (outside Nazi circles) of being the most serious Nazi leader, began to negotiate with General von Schleicher, the Army politician who was now Chancellor of the Reich. Mussolini thereupon accepted the journalistic talk of the day and decided that Strasser, not Hitler, was the horse to back, for Mussolini had no idea of how relentless Hitler would always be. He himself was ever in a state of vacillation between his good judgement of a situation and all kinds of chimerical temptations. Hitler often hesitated—to hear his voices, as it were—before making practical decisions, and he invented the most contradictory lies to achieve his purposes, but he never vacillated. At the end of 1932 he dismissed Gregor Strasser from his position in the Party. Strasser was one of the few Nazi leaders who had shown some independence towards Hitler and an unfanatical readiness to compromise; for this he paid with his life on 30 June 1934. (According to Spengler, who knew Gregor Strasser fairly well, Strasser was the only Nazi who bore a certain resemblance to Mussolini.) For the present Hitler remained lavish in declarations that he regarded Mussolini as the head of his own movement without whom he could never have succeeded. Not until the spring of 1933 did he experience his first disillusionment with the Duce; he was forced to admit then that Mussolini was no staunch anti-Semite.

Towards the end of January 1933 it became clear that Hindenburg was again being worked upon by Papen to admit Hitler to the Government. Mussolini began to telephone feverishly to his Embassy in Berlin to learn particulars about this unexpected success, and on 30 January, that fateful day, he was informed that his *soi-disant* disciple was Chancellor of Germany; there is evidence,¹ even, that Hitler and Göring wished Mussolini to approve the list of the new Nazi-Nationalist Cabinet.² At all events the Italian Ambassador, Cerruti, became what his French colleague François-Poncet called the Lord Protector of the Reich, and for the next three years, before the Axis was forged, in a sense Mussolini was the most powerful man in Europe.

The glorification of Cerruti lasted for about two months. Although he was able to transmit Mussolini's offer on 1 April

¹ According to Renzetti, of the Italian Chamber of Commerce in Berlin, who was a friend of Göring.

² It contained only three Nazi Ministers, Hitler, Göring, and Frick.

that Italian representatives abroad should deny all 'propagandist' news about persecution of Jews in Germany, he was also obliged to read a long telegram from the Duce to the Fuhrer in which the former insisted that Hitler's anti-Semitic policy was a dangerous mistake which discredited the dictatorships. This occasioned one of those formidable tirades for which the Fuhrer was to become famous. 'I have the most absolute respect for the personality and the political action of Mussolini,' Hitler shouted, 'only in one thing I cannot admit him to be right and that is with regard to the Jewish question in Germany, for he cannot know anything about it.'

Already another issue, linked with the Jewish question to form the measure of Hitler's hatred of the Habsburgs, had become critical between the new Germany and Italy. In the first paragraph of *Mein Kampf* we find, exactly as his background would lead us to expect, that the reunion of Germany with Austria was for Hitler 'eine mit allen Mitteln durchzufuhrende Lebensaufgabe',¹ and indeed the Nazis regarded Austria as automatically Nazified along with the Reich on 30 January 1933. While Hitler could talk pure racialism with such frantic conviction that the world—or most of it—believed so late as September 1938 that he wanted 'no Czechs at all', it has been seen that his aim of world domination by a German ruling caste was sometimes better served by *Geopolitik*. To him the annexation of Austria always meant the *Mitteuropa* policy of the Central Powers during the First World War, absolute German control of the whole Danubian basin. His longed-for alliance with Italy postulated the expulsion of Italian influence from there and Italy's consolation in the Mediterranean area. It is characteristic of Hitler that he did not bear the Duce malice over Austria. He proceeded with his strangely logical and methodical duplicity to drive Mussolini out of Danubia into the Mediterranean, and at the same time to preserve his sentimental enthusiasm for the Duce's 'genius'. What was even more characteristic was that Hitler's Danubia included the Adriatic. He may have sympathized with Italian anti-Habsburg nationalism, but only within the limits of German expediency. Far from caring about its emotional importance to the Italians, he blamed

¹ = (only approximately) 'the task of a lifetime to be carried out with all possible means'.

the Habsburgs for not having Germanized Trieste and the Adriatic coast. He was, in fact, heir to those Pan-Germans of the Reich who were closely associated with the German Navy League and whom Mr. Tower described in 1906¹ as, 'unreasonable as it may seem', pressing for Trieste as a future outlet for the Hohenzollern fleet. There is an interesting dispatch from the French Consul in Trieste a few years earlier² referring to the buying up—at a loss—of the *Sudbahn*, which controlled Trieste, by Reich Germans to whom he refers as 'le groupement de forces qui voudrait faire de cette place . . . une sorte d'annexe commerciale de l'Allemagne, en attendant une autre annexion'. (At the end of this dispatch there are 'détails sur la présence de Gabriele D'Annunzio à Trieste'.) Between the two great wars it was convenient to make the Yugoslav mouth water for its Trst, and, as soon as the Second World War made it possible in 1943, Hitler annexed Trieste and the whole *Küstenland* region—as well as the South Tyrol—to Nazi Germany, with complete indifference to the reactions of Mussolini.

'The Fascist State', Mussolini had written in the *Enciclopedia*, 'is a will to power and to government. In it the tradition of Rome is an idea that has force. . . .' For Mussolini longed to revive the glories of Imperial Rome. This ambition fitted ill with Hitler's geopolitical programme, for it drew the Duce's gaze as far north as the Danube into a region which Hitler regarded as *par excellence* his. Indeed Mussolini took a very active interest in central Europe; it was as its defender against Nazi Germany that Hitler made him great, only to dethrone him mercilessly when the time should come. When Mussolini and Starhemberg first met in July 1930 the Duce declared with visible concern that an Anschluss with Germany must never be permitted; already he announced Austria to be 'the bastion of Mediterranean civilization' while 'Prussia means barbarism. . . .' Shortly after this it seems that Mussolini encouraged Starhemberg to refuse a Nazi offer of collaboration brought from Hitler by Gregor Strasser; and already in the Austrian elections in 1930 the Heimwehr received Italian money in order to fight the Austrian Nazis. In June 1932 when they met again, still six months before Hitler took over authority in Germany, Musso-

¹ See dispatch quoted in Chapter I.

² M. de. Laigue to M. Delcassé, 26 May 1902.

lini insisted to Starhemberg that the incorporation of Austria in Germany would mean a constant threat to Italy and that her fight between 1915 and 1918 for the Adriatic would have been in vain. 'Trieste will cease to be Italian. Italy can never permit that.' At this point Starhemberg told Mussolini what he knew directly from Hitler to be the Führer's intentions with regard to Trieste. 'Yes,' said Mussolini excitedly, 'Pan-Germanism is stretching its tentacles towards the Adriatic. Italy has as little use for Pan-Germanism as for Pan-Slavism. That is why Austria is so important. If Austria ceases to exist, there can be no more order in Central Europe. Great dangers will then threaten Italy.'

Early in 1933, not long after Hitler had become German Chancellor, Mussolini spoke to Starhemberg¹ of the Danubian Basin as 'our European hinterland. That is why we seek a firm position there. Without it we shall be forced to play the insignificant role of a peninsula on the edge of Europe. We might even be pushed to Africa', and Italy cease to be a Great Power. There is no time to be lost, the Duce added, for Hitler will start rearming immediately. Starhemberg for his part spoke of the desirability of a Danubian federation led by Austria, to which Mussolini replied with the suggestion of some sort of conglomeration between Austria, Hungary, and, to Starhemberg's astonishment, Croatia, with Italian economic influence as its background. Italy and Hungary had been on particularly friendly terms since Bethlen's visit to Rome in April 1927, and the practical results of this third visit of Starhemberg to the Duce² were the Rome Protocols of March 1934. According to these Italy, Austria, and Hungary made each other what economic concessions they were able. The increase of the export of Austrian timber to Italy comprised, in Dr. Schuschnigg's view for instance, the most useful help from abroad which Austria received between 1933 and the Anschluss.³ At the same time Italy hoped to find a solution of her own raw materials problem in central and south-eastern Europe.

After the elections in Germany on 5 March 1933, the Nazis evicted the legitimate authorities in Bavaria, and on 18 March

¹ Op. cit. All this can, of course, only be an approximate indication of the words Mussolini used.

² Mussolini continued to finance the Heimwehr.

³ Dr. Rost van Tonningen, the financial representative of the League of Nations in Vienna, who afterwards became a leader of the Dutch Nazis, agreed with this

the Munich wireless station greeted the 'oppressed Party comrades in Austria who thanks to the unintelligible folly of their Government are being compelled to endure the worst terrorization. . . . Austria is now the last portion of Germany in which anyone still dares to oppress *das deutsche nationale Wollen*', and the speaker 'in all friendship' warned the Austrian Government not to cause the Nazis in the Reich to take over the protection of the freedom of German *Volksgenossen* in Austria. The man who broadcast this declaration of war was the Italophile Hans Frank, Reich Commissar for Justice and newly appointed Minister for Justice in Bavaria. In May he was invited to Vienna by the Austrian Nazis to help them celebrate the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of Sobieski's victory over the Turks. Cerruti appealed to Goring to prevent this journey and Goring responded very affably; he himself was just back from Rome where he had promised that the Austrian question should not be brought up. After Cerruti's appeal, however, he overslept until it was too late to take any action. So Frank travelled triumphantly around Austria as Hitler's deputy, until finally the Austrian police turned him out.

It is not intended here to recite the whole history of Austria from this point until her extinction in 1938. But certainly until 1936 Austria was the crux of the relations between the two dictators, and it will be necessary to recapitulate the essential characteristics of the Austrian situation. On the one hand, the post-war Republic of Austria had to contend with the problem of adjusting the economic life of a former part of a big free-trading area to that of a small area surrounded by tariff barriers and with an enormous capital city. The adjustment was bound to be painful, but it was far from the impossibility of which Nazi propaganda spoke: the new Austria was proportionately richer in raw materials than either Switzerland or Italy.

On the other hand, the Austrian Republic was politically afflicted by its division into three blocks, Clerical, Socialist, and Nationalist, none of which could arrive at a parliamentary majority alone. In the days of the Weimar Republic the Austrian Socialists as well as the Nationalists were in favour of union with Germany; the majority, perhaps, of the Clerical 'Christian-Socialists preferred a separate Catholic Austria. With Hitler master of the Reich the lines of division were modified

but above all they were sharpened. The Socialists became the uncompromising enemies of the Anschluss, but, luckily for Hitler, Mussolini's rancour against Socialists in general (which demonstrated the proverbial ardour of the convert) was exaggerated in the case of the Viennese 'Reds' by the attention they had drawn at the beginning of January 1933 to the smuggling of arms from Italy to Hungary across Austria, the so-called Hirtenberg affair.

The hostility of the Christian-Socialists and the Austrian clergy to Hitler was weakened by their dislike, too, of the Socialists, and by the 'national'—this word in Austria, it has been seen, always meant pro-German, *Grossdeutsch*—inclinations natural to the Sudeten German Archbishop of Vienna, Cardinal Innitzer. The Concordat between the Papacy and the Reich negotiated by Papen in July 1933, though it proved to be abortive, had a similar effect.

As for the Nationalists, they were divided into extremists, some of whom had had their Nazi Party before Hitler's and now had their S.A. in imitation, and the Heimwehr led by Prince Starhemberg which had busied itself chiefly with opposing the Austrian Socialists. Starhemberg had himself been with the Nazi freebooter, Sepp Dietrich, in the German *Freikorps*, and had later worked with the notorious Pabst to steal weapons from Italy; he was intimately aware of the Pan-German tradition of the Austrian lower middle class from which Hitler sprang. It is interesting not only that Hitler suggested his first visit to Mussolini, but that Hitler's idol then inspired Starhemberg with the idea of using the Heimwehr to defend the independence of Austria against Hitler. It was a *tour de force* that this was done for a few years; in spite of the hatred of Italy in Austria and the knowledge that Starhemberg depended on Mussolini, only the Styrian section of the Heimwehr openly seceded to the Nazis.

It was a *tour de force* in particular because Hitler, with Frank's broadcast and the appointment of the leader of the Austrian Nazis, Habicht, as German Press Attaché in Vienna, had let loose the Nazi terror, with all its 'refinements', over Austria. It is a dreadful fact of which Hitler was well aware that no one who has not experienced the workings of Nazi sadism (exactly how much it owed to Hitler's own inventiveness it is not possible to say) is able to believe in them. It would be unconvincing

here to make a list of all the subtle and unsubtle methods which were used, followed always by an inimitable evasiveness. Thus the responsibility of the Reich Government for these things could never be proved—this Nazi speaker's national ardour had run away with him, that crime had been perpetrated by a Jewish or Communist *agent provocateur*. What it may be worth while to notice is that Mussolini never fully understood, for he and his Fascists were too haphazard and naive. They knew about brutal police methods and gangsters with bottles of castor oil, they knew about marvellous lies in the Press, but they could never have arrived at the Nazi conception of the concentration camp or the German system of gassing the Jews.¹

* The intense Italo-German friction over Austria in the summer of 1933 was partially obscured by the Four-Power Pact in June. When Cerruti saw Hitler about this the Führer at first seemed likely to be truculent. But Neurath and Blomberg² were there, and, while Neurath remained silent, Blomberg insisted that ten years of peace were worth having; however little he thought this, it suited Hitler to concur for the moment. This seeming success of Mussolini's was undone when Germany roughly left the League of Nations in October, banging the door behind her. The Duce was annoyed at her unruliness towards him, the more because it still suited him to have the German card in his hand at Geneva. Not long after this, at the beginning of 1934, one of Hitler's few criticisms of Fascism before the Second World War is recorded. To Rauschning's surprise he now stated that Fascism had not understood 'the real meaning of the great upheaval of our era. . . . Ultimately we National Socialists stand alone, as the only ones who know the secret of these gigantic changes, and therefore as those chosen to set their seal on the coming age.'³

There was one mistake in the Austrian game for which Mussolini's responsibility has recently become clear. On 1 July 1933 he wrote to Dollfuss that 'If instead the Social Democratic Party is treated with consideration . . . the much greater and more concrete danger exists that thereby the anti-Marxist

¹ See E. Kogon, *Der S. S. Staat*. (Karl Alber, Munich, 1946) and Chapter XVII below.

² Minister of War.

³ H. Rauschning, *Hitler Speaks* (Thornton Butterworth, 1939). Cf. Hitler and Goebbels on Mussolini in September 1943; see Chap. XIX below.

weapon will be delivered into the hands of the Nazis'.¹ In August Dollfuss visited Mussolini at Riccione where the Austrian was urged towards more evident dictatorship. After something of a pause Suvich, the Duce's right-hand at the Palazzo Chigi, made a demonstrative appearance in Vienna in January 1934; a fortnight later civil war broke out between the Dollfuss régime, which professed to be defending the integrity of Austria against Hitler, and the Austrian Social Democrats, the most sincere believers, now, in that integrity. The instigation of the conflict may be attributed to Fey in whom Suvich had expressed his confidence to Dollfuss.² The crushing of the 'Austro-Marxists' helped no one but Hitler, and the German Press gleefully exploited the opportunity to insist upon the reactionary wickedness of a Government which shot its workers down. When on 1 May Dollfuss launched his new corporate constitution the winds were adverse from the start. However much Hitler nursed the notion of Mussolini as his mentor, his official and his clandestine Press neglected no opportunity of stirring up every anti-Italian emotion in the Austrian breast against this servile imitation of the Fascist corporate State; the Dollfuss experiment was also damned in Nazi eyes as inspired by the Encyclical of 1891 and by the Vatican.

At this point Hitler must have realized that the deterioration of his relations with Mussolini was almost complete. He believed profoundly in the importance of personally addressing masses or individuals, though his approach was so impersonal that he made little distinction between the two. 'Ich weiss, dass man Menschen weniger durch das geschriebene Wort als vielmehr durch das gesprochene zu gewinnen vermag',³ he had written in the foreword to *Mein Kampf*. One day Röhm, at lunch at Neurath's, began to ventilate the idea of a meeting between the Leaders to clear up all misunderstandings. Mussolini reacted cautiously and instructed Cerruti that he would only agree if a clearly defined programme were settled beforehand. Cerruti took the initial steps, then went on a few days' leave to Italy.

¹ See Mussolini to Dollfuss 1 July 1933 in State Archives, Vienna, Liasse Italien, Fasz. 477, published in *The Tragedy of Austria*, by Julius Braunthal, Gollancz, 1948.

² Ibid. Suvich to Dollfuss, January 1934.

³ 'I know that one is able to win people over much more readily with the spoken than the written word.'

What was his surprise to meet there by chance the irrepressible Papen, who informed him that the meeting was arranged—'Es wird alles glatt gehen',¹ he announced with his cheerful smile. So Adolf Hitler, preceded by a band of S.S. toughs like Sepp Dietrich to watch over him, set out upon his first journey abroad, for the first of a strange series of meetings with the genius beyond the Alps. It developed into one of those ridiculous occasions which deceived the world into not taking him seriously. Mussolini came to meet him in superlatively military costume while Hitler arrived in a raincoat (concealing a black jacket and striped trousers) and patent-leather shoes, holding a grey felt hat with which he fidgeted incessantly. No one had ever noticed him with a civilian hat before, and one French journalist described him as looking like 'un petit plombier tenant un fâcheux instrument devant son ventre'. It was by Neurath's advice that Hitler had descended to civilian clothes on this occasion and it is likely that his resentment against Neurath was permanent. The discussions had been fixed to take place at the royal palace at Stra near Padua on 14 June. The palace had long been out of use and days were devoted to making it habitable, but when the dictators arrived disrespectful mosquitoes teased them to such an extent that the Italian and German parties had to drive back to Venice; Mussolini, gossip added, had felt himself disturbed by the ghost of Napoleon who had once slept at Stra.

At last the Great Men's tête-à-tête took place at the Alberoni golf-course in Venice. No one will ever know all that was said—Neurath, who was one of the German party which had come to Venice for the occasion, told his friends that the two roared at one another like bulls. Hitler certainly held forth, mainly it is thought about the affinity between Fascism and National Socialism and about the cruel persecution of his brother patriots in Austria. (As if by magic the Nazi terrorist bomb outrages there had stopped on 14 June.) It seems that Suvich, who was vastly amused, told Starhemberg a month later that Hitler had declaimed to Mussolini about the superiority of the Nordic race. One thing applies to all the Duce-Führer tête-à-têtes. While Hitler spoke no word of any language but German, 'Der Duce', as Schuschnigg says, 'pflegte deutsch zu sprechen—hart, sehr

¹ 'It will all go off beautifully.'

langsam und artikuliert; man merkte es ihm an, dass er es mühsam aber gerne sprach.¹ Paul Schmidt, the German Foreign Office interpreter, was present at Venice on this occasion, but he does not seem to have been called upon. Yet if Mussolini denied the necessity with implied indignation it is unlikely that he followed with precision the floods of slightly Bavarianized Austrian which poured from Hitler. Later the Duce's receptivity depended upon his state of health, and undoubtedly declined with the passage of the years. Thus Schmidt's role as the medium between Mussolini and Hitler gradually increased in importance.² This, however, modified but could not clarify the relationship between the dictators, not merely because a third personality was placed between them, but also because Schmidt knew no Italian and translated Hitler's German into French; even so Schmidt was sometimes inaccurate.³ Mussolini for his part could undoubtedly express himself better in French than in German, but his linguistic vanity left him at a disadvantage with which Hitler was never troubled. The basic relationship of these two men was mirrored in this situation, the psychological importance of which will be clear to anyone who has grappled with circumstances of the kind. One should add that the lesser German and Italian lights usually spoke to one another either in English or in French. Fascist diplomacy, moreover, was notoriously careless about its linguistic and legal technique; in Fascist Italy's relations with Nazi Germany the interpreters and legal experts were always provided by the Germans.

There is an apocryphal story that at this first meeting Mussolini quoted to Hitler the Tarquin story about cutting down the flowers that grow too high.⁴ Certainly he felt him to be intractable. For their part the Nazi visitors wrote off Mussolini as dully traditional, though Hitler's dual personality made it possible for his fixational attitude to continue at the same time. It is difficult to know how much he was even aware of the hostility of

¹ = 'The Duce was accustomed to speak German—it was hard, very slow and carefully articulated; one was aware that it involved an effort which he enjoyed.' Schuschnigg, *op. cit.*, p. 220.

² See an interview with Paul Schmidt's wife in the *Journal de Genève*, 29 Oct. 1945.

³ This fact was noticed by Sumner Welles and I have found traces of it. No interpreter, obviously, can be expected to be infallible.

⁴ Cf. François-Poncet, *op. cit.*, p. 183.

the Venetian crowd which acclaimed only with '*Duce, Duce*', while Starace¹ tried to explain to Hitler that *Duce* meant *Führer*.

The Stra and Venice meeting was the prelude to two notoriously horrible events: the massacre of 30 June 1934 in Germany and the murder of Dollfuss on 25 July. There is no clear evidence of whether Hitler thought he had convinced Mussolini in any way and had thus acquired *carte blanche* for his crimes, or whether he simply did not care. To the news of 30 June there was no open Italian reaction. Those Italians, Fascist or otherwise, who knew what had happened were horrified by this example of German savagery; the frigidity, which had been intensifying all the year, of the Italian Embassy in Berlin towards the Nazi régime sank to freezing-point. With the murder of Dollfuss on 25 July the Italian Press was let loose, retrospectively too. The Germans were denounced as a nation of *pederasti* and *assassini*, and if Hitler had lectured him on Nordic nobility Mussolini himself hit back in the *Popolo d'Italia*; if these theories of racial purity were correct, he declared, the Lapps would have to be honoured as the highest type of humanity.

The events leading up to the murder of Dollfuss were some of the most complicated in the rivalry between the S.S. and the S.A. and other Austrian and German factions, but they do not call for analysis here. It is not uninteresting that after the Venice meeting the Nazis in Austria told one another that Hitler had dictated terms to Mussolini there, that Dollfuss would shortly be ousted in favour of Rintelen, and the Italian Legation in Vienna change its attitude.² Rintelen, the uncrowned king of Styria as he was called, had been *Landeshauptmann* there for many years; in August 1933 he was politely exiled by Dollfuss, who had sent him as Austrian Minister—of all places—to Rome. He was closely associated with the Alpine Montan Company, which owned the excellent iron-mines of Styria and which was flourishing now upon the requirements of German rearmament. From the point of view of *Wehrwirtschaft* it was the Styrian *Erzberg* which made Austria important to Germany. More than half the Alpine Montan shares were already owned by Thyssen and the German Steel Trust, and Nazi pressure on the employees of the Alpine Montan was very

¹ At that time Secretary of the Fascist Party.

² This I experienced in Vienna myself at the time.

strong. On 23 July Rintelen arrived in Vienna and on the 25th, when the Nazi rebels seized the wireless station, they broadcast his appointment as Austrian Chancellor. He would have done Hitler's job as well as Glaise-Horstenau or Seyss-Inquart. But Rintelen was defeated by Morreale.

The Italian Minister in Vienna in this period was Gabriele Preziosi, but the most important person at the Italian Legation was Eugenio Morreale, a vigorous and competent person¹ with the elastic title of Press Attaché. His activities, in other words, were various. He did in fact stimulate 'cultural' relations between Austria and Italy and, considering the unpopularity of the Italians in Austria, did so with astonishing success; all possible use was made of the 'common Latin heritage' as contrasted with the Reich which, except for the left bank of the Rhine, had remained beyond the *limes*. But Morreale was also very well informed politically and he did jobs like handing over the money which Mussolini had promised Starhemberg to pay to the Heimwehr. On 25 July Preziosi, like his French and British colleagues, was on leave, and it was Morreale who kept both Rome and the Austrian Vice-Chancellor, Prince Starhemberg (who was on holiday on the Lido), informed about Austrian developments; at 7 p.m. he was obliged to telephone to Riccione, where Dollfuss's family was staying with Mussolini, that Dollfuss himself had bled to death. In Austria Morreale persuaded his Heimwehr friends to mobilize and occupy various key-points. This made it possible to reserve the Viennese telephone for Austrian official use and for the use of the Italian, French, and British Legations, while the German Legation was cut off; Rome rang up every half-hour all the afternoon and evening. It was a time when, in view of an Anschluss possibility, any unheroic Austrian thought twice before compromising himself with Hitler's enemies, and it has been suggested² that Morreale was instrumental in causing the publication of an anti-Nazi Ministers' statement from which it was impossible to retreat. Rintelen was arrested at once, and later in March 1935 condemned to a life-sentence.

¹ To everyone's surprise he became a neo-Fascist in 1943

² By U. Grazzi, Italian Chargé d'Affaires in Vienna in 1934, in articles published in *Politica Estera* in Nov. and Dec. 1945, under the pseudonym 'Muzio Gertbraz'.

Mussolini was genuinely enraged against Hitler by now. He ordered the Alpini to the Brenner and sent Starhemberg, as acting Austrian Chancellor, a very strong telegram. Cerruti and the Nunzio were the first two diplomats to deliver their condolences to the Austrian Minister in Berlin. A little later when the Duce visited an Austrian boys' camp at Ostia he stormed against the Fuhrer, telling Starhemberg that Hitler was Dollfuss's murderer, 'a horrible sexual degenerate, a dangerous fool'. The climax of his anti-German campaign was reached at Bari on 6 September, when, speaking from a tank at the inauguration of the fifth *Fiera del Levante*, he said: 'Thirty centuries of history allow us to regard with supreme indulgence certain doctrines taught beyond the Alps by the descendants of people who were wholly illiterate in the days when Caesar, Virgil and Augustus flourished in Rome.'

The Duce was not content with journalism and speeches, nor yet with his mobilization on the Brenner or the pleasures of being acclaimed as the saviour of civilization. At the height of his fury against Hitler he decided upon the conquest of Abyssinia. It was in August 1934 that he spoke to Schuschnigg of a conflict over Abyssinia as inevitable,¹ and before the end of the year he had discussed the necessity with his military chiefs and some of his diplomats. He told them that because of Hitler Italy could not afford to wait. He calculated that a year would be required to subdue Abyssinia, and then the Italian Army must be back at the Brenner in full force—Germany, he added to Cerruti with considerable acumen, would not be ready for war until 1938. He did not foresee difficulties from the West if he could come to an agreement with France: It was thus to a large extent as an anti-German action that he contemplated the subjection of Ethiopia. Little wonder that Hitler believed in the particular favour of destiny when action planned against him was to be the key to his extraordinary success between 1936 and 1940.

¹ Schuschnigg, *op. cit.*, p. 220.

III

Germany and the Attack upon Abyssinia

DIPLOMATS who worked for many years with Mussolini believe that he always yearned after an alliance with France, about which, in his completely different way, he had some of Hitler's feelings about Britain. After the murder of Dollfuss, while he obviously enjoyed the prestige he was winning as the protector of Europe and the champion of civilized values, he several times threw out the hint that Italy could not always be the only Power to mobilize against Hitler. The 25 July 1934 had in fact brought about a small-scale *rapprochement* between Italy and the Western Powers in Vienna, where the three *Chargés d'Affaires* (in the absence of their Ministers, who were away on holiday) spent the days and nights from 25 July to 28 July together. The Little Entente representatives, incidentally, did much the same, watching the three *Chargés* of the Great Powers nervously.

In Fascist eyes Czechoslovakia, Yugoslavia, and Rumania were nothing but the lackeys of France. "The relations between Fascist Italy and the Powers joined in the Little Entente were also conditioned in a general way by Mussolini's revisionism and encouragement to Hungary, and more specifically by the anger which his support of Croat separatism engendered at Belgrade. The leading *Ustaša* or Croat terrorist, Ante Pavelić, who also had connexions with the I.M.R.O., the Macedonian terrorist organization, had left Yugoslavia in 1929 and spent the intervening five years in Italy and Hungary, and occasionally in Austria and Germany. The Croats were traditionally the most *kaisertreu* of the former Austrian Slavs, and their quarrel with the Serbs fortified the fierce Serb hatred of the Habsburg dynasty. This united Czechs and Serbs and made the Little Entente fanatically hostile to the possibilities of any kind of Habsburg restoration. For years these feelings gave the arch-hater of the Habsburgs, Adolf Hitler, a useful weapon in dealing with his future victims of the Little Entente, not excepting Dr. Beneš. Göring's visit to Yugoslavia earlier in 1934 had strengthened the Serbs in the belief that the Anschluss might

be the best veto on a restoration, at which, as the Nazis always insinuated, Dollfuss and the Clericals—both Austrian and Italian—were aiming. At the same time, of course, the Nazis flirted with Croats and Macedonians—disruptive elements might be useful anywhere. Rosenberg, who was, roughly speaking, Hitler's agent for the disruption of Russia, though he never stooped to the racial depths of Latin questions, patronized all kinds of Slavs, including a group in Berlin called the 'Croatia-Presse'.

At the time of Dollfuss's murder it seemed as if war might be provoked, not directly between Italy and Germany but rather between Italy and Yugoslavia. The Yugoslavs were frightened of the Italians on their weak northern frontier, and on the other hand it was, perhaps, only a *démenti* of news that Yugoslav troops had entered Austria which prevented the Alpini from crossing the Brenner. Many Austrian Nazis subsequently took refuge in Maribor (Marburg), in Slovenia. On 9 October the Adriatic air became heavier still with the murder at Marseilles of Alexander of Yugoslavia together with the French Foreign Minister, Barthou, by a Macedonian terrorist. Now Mussolini at that time had no interest in the perpetration of this crime, which may have been engineered at the last moment by no higher authority than the I.M.R.O. and the *Ustasi*; certainly it served no one's purpose except that of the Germans. Though the terrorist Göring assured the Yugoslav journalists at Belgrade on 17 October that the Reich countenanced no terrorists, on 27 October he admitted to François-Poncet,¹ as did Neurath on the 24th, that Rosenberg had been 'careless'. Clues implicated Pavelić and his fellow-conspirator, Kvaternik, who were arrested in Turin on 18 October, and it was subsequently discovered that Pavelić had left Berlin for Milan very suddenly on the eve of the murder. François-Poncet himself experienced the difficulties made by the Germans, when, after many warm offers from them, a representative of the Sûreté Nationale came to Berlin to investigate. Meanwhile Mussolini refused the extradition of Pavelić and Kvaternik, and it was tacitly agreed that Yugoslavia should vent her anger against Hungary as the protector of assassins. It took several months for the rage of Yugoslavia to subside.

¹ See François-Poncet, *op. cit.*

Barthou had been intending to proceed to Rome, and Mussolini had already prepared to welcome him in his speech in Milan on 6 October, when he warned Germany that she should not 'estrangle herself from Europe's historical evolution',¹ and spoke with enthusiasm of his hope of an understanding with France. It was finally with Laval in January 1935 that a Franco-Italian agreement was signed. After the noisy speeches of many years, Italy showed herself astonishingly yielding in the matters of territorial readjustments in Africa and the status of Italians in Tunisia; a few faintly practical steps for the international defence of Austria were planned. In February an Italo-Austrian Cultural Agreement was signed, and shortly afterwards the Italian *Capo* himself contributed a rather trite article to the *Popolo d'Italia* on the 'Historic Mission of Austria', which he defined more or less as that of a clearing-house for Italian artists. He laid great emphasis upon the catholicism of Austria, and concluded with the importance of Austria's community of language with Germany and of religion with Italy. The German return to conscription on 16 March did nothing to lessen Mussolini's expressions of wrath against northern barbarism and led to a fresh Franco-Italian encounter, to which the British were invited, at Stresa in April. Both at Rome in January and at Stresa in April Mussolini showed the technical incompetence as a negotiator of a man who was little but an orator and a journalist. He lacked the legal training of higher Italian functionaries, and where Hitler deliberately generated clouds of confusion by his interminable speeches, Mussolini, even before his young son-in-law, Count Ciano, took charge of the Palazzo Chigi, created confusion through sheer amateurishness. Others who were concerned with the Franco-Italian agreement consider that Laval was well aware that Mussolini was being generous in the hope of gaining liberty of action in Ethiopia, but Laval imagined that there would be no breach of the peace—the Italians would proceed as the French had in Morocco a generation earlier; Laval was certainly speaking the truth when he afterwards insisted that he had never agreed in any form to an open attack on Ethiopia. At Stresa there was a tremendous gathering of diplomats and journalists. A succulent lunch at the Isola dei Pescatori brought together the

respective specialists on Ethiopia, including the Foreign Office representative, Mr. Maurice Peterson, and while the greatest cordiality reigned and agreement about obvious Ethiopian technicalities was expressed, the possibility of *action* in Ethiopia was never mentioned. The result was that Mussolini became convinced that both France and Britain were willing for him to annex Ethiopia as it might please him, in return for his services against Germany. Ciano echoed the Duce's phrases about civilized man and northern barbarism when, as Minister of Propaganda, he opened the exhibition of Italian painting in Paris. And if Britain were still in doubt it was Ciano who received Lord Tyrrell at his country-house in August, and, when asked what Italy really wanted, replied without hesitation, 'But we want Ethiopia'.¹

At French instigation an Italian-Yugoslav *détente* had been initiated when a new Italian Minister arrived in Belgrade in March. This gave substance to the project of an Italian-led south-eastern Europe, and when in May 1935 the Franco-Russian and Czech-Russian treaties were signed the solidarity of the Continent against Hitler seemed complete. Great Britain's White Paper early in March had drawn attention to certain obvious dangers in National Socialism, but at Stresa Sir John Simon was cool about Austrian integrity. Suddenly the solidarity of Europe was shaken in June by the—as it seemed to the Continent—inexplicable defection of Britain, and the Anglo-German naval treaty created a breach in the wall of Germany's isolation.²

Thus during the first half of 1935 the relations between Mussolini and Hitler were as bad as they could be. The Polish Ambassador, Lipski, was something of an *homme de confiance* to the German régime, since the German-Polish Agreement of 1934 had brought Hitler this one strange friendship; he had a talk with Göring at the Schorfheide at the end of April 1935, when Göring complained bitterly that Mussolini was working against Germany in every possible field.³ At the beginning of May Lipski saw Göring again; the latter was still angry. He

¹ Ciano recounted this incident to his brother-in-law, Count M. Magistrati, from whom I learnt it. Of course Ciano may have been boasting.

² Cf. Papen's Dispatch from Vienna to Berlin, 27 July 1935, quoted below.

³ Information supplied by Monsieur Lipski, as below.

grumbled that, as they had told Mussolini at the time, Germany had only come into the Four-Power Pact to please the Duce and this was Germany's reward. . . . Like nearly all Goring's frank confidences, this was untrue; it has been seen that Germany had joined the Pact of June 1933 because her Minister of War had chosen to do so.

After the assassination of Dollfuss, the Austrian Government and State had been patched together somehow and even attained a certain appearance of solidarity for the next couple of years. The Clericals, through the President of the Austrian State, Miklas, insisted upon Schuschnigg as successor to Dollfuss, with Starhemberg still as Vice-Chancellor; since Schuschnigg was far less flexible than Dollfuss, the new Clerical-Heimwehr coalition was difficult from the start, and since Schuschnigg was known in principle to desire a Habsburg restoration, it gave, as one or two clear-sighted individuals at once perceived, marvellous opportunities to Franz von Papen. This political harlequin has been seen to have been instrumental in bringing Hitler into power in Germany, and then into the presence of his chosen Master at Venice on 14 June. Three days later Papen delivered his famous Marburg speech written for him by the unfortunate Edgar Jung in anything but a Nazi spirit. Everyone thought for a moment that Germany was returning to her senses, only to learn that Jung had been among the hundreds murdered by Hitler's orders on 30 June, while Papen, after one of his habitual thriller-escapes, blandly accepted the murder of his personal secretary and other of his associates: what was more, he also accepted the post of Hitler's special envoy to Vienna on the day after the murder of Dollfuss. The Italians were not amused and insisted that Miklas should delay the *agrément* at least until after the funeral of Dollfuss on 29 July.

Until the autumn of 1935 a certain stability was maintained in Austria. Schuschnigg had quickly found occasion to visit the Duce to establish personal contact. His stiff ascetic personality and his Tyrolese associations did not please Mussolini; the Duce, however, arranged to keep in direct touch with him through Senator Salata, a Triestino who was director of the Italian Institute in Vienna, and who had intervened, against the wishes of the Italian Legation there, to bring about the Duce's acquiescence in Papen's special mission. For his

dealings with Starhemberg Mussolini still used Morreale, who was on the worst of terms with Salata.

For the moment Austria profited economically from the political situation. During the summer of 1935 there were enough other tourists to make up for the Germans who had for two years been kept north of the frontier by the 1,000-mark tax demanded by the Reich Government from those of them who wished to cross it. The Rome Protocols served Austria well, various exports to Italy increasing,¹ and the expansion of Italy's Danubian horizon created a strong Italian interest in the Danube Shipping Company. Above all, Italian preparations for an attack on Ethiopia kept the Hirtenberg arms factory in Austria fully employed.

For a year Papen made no progress. On 27 July he, or some more intelligent member of his staff, wrote an important dispatch to Berlin which deserves a good deal of quotation. It begins by referring to the general hostility to Germany caused by the Austrian question. Every German effort in a south-eastern direction will run up against this opposition, especially since Italy regards the Danube basin as her *Expansionsgebiet*. As between Germany and Austria Papen absolutely condemns the Habicht type of open terrorism which had culminated in the Dollfuss crime. Austria is now based upon militant Catholicism and a Heimwehr which is 'enthusiastically favourable to Mussolini'. 'The dream of resurrecting the Holy Roman Empire around Vienna becomes more grotesque the more this idea of the Austrian imperialist romantics is exploited by Mussolini in order to advance his conception of a new *imperum romanum* at the expense of the German nation.' We must, continues Papen, create a mission of the united Germans to triumph over the idea of an Austrian mission, and we must insist that our mission, if opposed to political Catholicism, in no way undermines the fundamental Christianity of Germany. It was Papen who had negotiated Hitler's Concordat with the Vatican in July 1933—that first external concession to Hitler, as Pechel² emphasizes—and it was mainly on account of his Catholic connexions that Hitler had sent him to Vienna. Mussolini was only too well aware, as he said to Starhemberg,³ that Papen, with his

¹ See figures in, for example, the *Annuario Statistico Italiano*.

² Pechel, *op. cit.*

³ Starhemberg, *op. cit.*

astonishing ability to make everyone feel he was their particular friend, was more dangerous than Habicht.

All this time, far from finding the champions of the Austrians in South Tyrol mere drivellers, Adolf Hitler found them all too useful. In vain did Mussolini and Dollfuss or Schuschnigg try to emphasize that the Italian authorities were being more conciliatory on account of the Rome-Vienna friendship; the young Tyrolese, whether of Innsbruck or Bolzano, were convinced that Hitler had dictated terms at Venice or at some point later. The Bavarian Press was allowed to be extremely violent about Italian oppression, which had been drastic; but without any particular justification the wicked Latins were attacked in the winter of 1934-5 for suppressing noble Nordic Christmas-trees. It was easy to whip up feeling against Italy in Germany, and of course in Austria and the Trentino, and at the end of April 1935 the *Münchener Neueste Nachrichten*—the leading newspaper of Munich—was banned in Italy.

The German Press was also clearly hostile to Italy in the matter of her East African policy, and an Ufa film called *Abessinien von Heute*, which was markedly friendly to the Negus and his rule, was shown all over Germany during this spring (1935). In June, there was a passing, if prophetic, rumour of an Italian-German deal, Italy to drop Austria and Germany to back her over Abyssinia, but the Germans' pose, and indeed their only hope just then after the Naval Agreement, was to be Britain's friend and as such opposed to Italy. This was in fact the policy of the German Foreign Office and the Naval Staff, as also of the Reichswehr, which despised the Italian Army and expected a fresh Italian fiasco in Abyssinia. The Nazi Party felt confused between its contempt for racial inferiors and the defenders of Austrian 'separatism'; and its hatred of the League of Nations and the *status quo*. In northern Germany hatred of Italy on account of the so-called treachery of 1915 and the South Tyrol was a little less intense than in the south; especially at this time the feeling about Danzig was stronger and therefore perhaps also the feeling against Geneva. Until it was clear that Mussolini's Abyssinian policy would bring him into conflict with the League, it enjoyed no sympathy in Germany.¹

¹ The Germans felt a strong interest in Abyssinian economic development, but

In Hitler's mind, however, no breach with Mussolini occurred, and there were one or two individuals whose interests urged them to encourage this belief. Baron Braun von Stumm held an important position in the Press Department of the German Foreign Office; his second wife was a highly neurotic Italian woman, Giuseppina Antinori. Probably before the end of 1934 she and Ciano's sister, who was Countess Magistrati,¹ met Hitler secretly without the knowledge of Cerruti, to try to counteract external tendencies. The Braun von Stumm household was in every sense an Italo-German meeting-ground;² it was here, for instance, that Professor Manacorda of Florence University was often received. He was both ultra-Fascist and ultra-Catholic, and on his journeys to Germany (which began in 1936) he gave himself the airs of an important intermediary between the Vatican, Italy, and Germany. But, though he occasionally saw the Pope and the Duce and the Führer, it is unlikely that he affected the trend of their relations perceptibly.

At the beginning of August 1935, on account of the Danzig-League of Nations crisis, Lipski visited Hitler at Berchtesgaden. With a certain regret the Führer remarked that his path had diverged from that of Mussolini on account of Austria. Mussolini had failed to understand the situation, and he was now taking a grave risk in provoking the other Powers over Abyssinia. But, added Hitler, though the Duce was hostile to Germany he would regard a defeat of Mussolini as a disaster, because it would constitute too great a blow to their common Fascist-Nazi ideology. It was always the same thing. Hitler knew. Anyone who did not accept his view did not understand. And Mussolini never really knew—until perhaps on the shores of Garda in 1944—that Hitler had cast him for partner in his own Satanic revolution.

At all events it was clear to Lipski that Hitler was already determined, whatever Neurath and the German Foreign Office might wish, to prevent the humiliation of Mussolini. And, as always seemed to happen in that fatal decade, events so played into Hitler's hands that when he spoke in March 1936 of his this did not identify their interests with those of Italy in spite of the *Società Mineraria italo-tedesca* in Abyssinia.

¹ Ciano was still Minister of Propaganda at this time.

² See L. Simoni, *Berlino—Ambasciata d'Italia 1939-43* (Migliaresi, 1946), pp. 27-9.

*schlafwandlerische Sicherheit*¹ it was difficult not to be impressed. Already by the end of June 1935, without evidence (beyond Schacht's general policy) of any German scheming to bring it about, Italy had become the leading buyer of German coal. By now Cerruti was scarcely on speaking-terms with the Wilhelmstrasse and still less with Hitler. Mussolini decided to move Cerruti to Paris and to bring Attolico, his Ambassador in Moscow, to Berlin.² At this point occurred one of history's ironies. Attolico, the man who four years later kept Italy out of the war, was so anxious in August 1935 to start his mission well that he would not wait till Hitler's return to Berlin in September in order to present his credentials. It was arranged that Hitler should come from Berchtesgaden to Berlin at the end of August for this purpose, and in consequence Attolico was bound to go to the Nazi Party Congress in September 1935, although in 1934 no Italian diplomat had attended it. This was not, of course, without the approval of the Duce, who had shown signs of anxiety about his relations with Germany since June; at this time a breakdown in the League negotiations over the Abyssinian controversy was becoming apparent.

In October Mussolini attacked Ethiopia, which he could probably have had without firing a shot. It is interesting that several leading Fascists told Starhemberg that they were opposed to the venture.³ But Mussolini's was a journalistic determination to fight at all costs as a demonstration of force, because purely political action might be too 'decadent' to impress that self-same Hitler, who never wasted superfluous force upon the acquisition of power. The outbreak of war in Abyssinia was followed by a superficial strengthening of the Duce's position in Austria. While Schuschnigg remained Chancellor, Starhemberg on 17 October got rid of Fey, who had been undermining the Heimwehr in Hitler's interest, and took over the Ministry of the Interior for himself; at the same time he put at the head of the Austrian Ministry of Finance Draxler, hitherto legal adviser to Starhemberg's friend, the arms manufacturer Mandl, who, according to Papen, inspired Starhemberg with all his own Jewish *ressentiment* against Hitler. Mandl was the owner of

¹ 'The self-assurance of a sleep-walker.'

² Attolico spoke no German and never succeeded in learning much; he and Ribbentrop always conversed in English

³ Starhemberg, *op. cit.*

Hirtenberg and of arms factories in Italy, and as unpleasant as arms manufacturers are traditionally said to be. It was a most valuable asset to the Nazi cause that Austrian policy could now be interpreted as subordinate to Herr Mandl's desire for profit. 'How far Italian pressure affected Starhemberg . . . cannot be exactly gauged. But I learn on good authority that Mussolini urgently demanded a strengthening of the authority of the Austrian Government'; Papen had also heard that Starhemberg was convinced that Italy's venture would succeed.¹ The German Minister in Vienna was quick enough to sense that the Austrian Italophiles had overreached themselves. The unpopularity of Italy was now reinforced in Austria by dislike of being identified with Mussolini's defiance of Geneva and by anxiety as to the defence of Austria if the Italian Army were busy in East Africa. People complained that Austria had been led into a cul-de-sac; she now depended *einzig und allein* upon the victory of Mussolini.¹

A week or so later it was the talk of Vienna that Herr von Papen's car had been left several times, gaily and indiscreetly flying its swastika flag, outside the office of the Clerical and semi-official newspaper, the *Reichspost*. It was here that together with its editor, Dr. Funder, he now began to plan the Press Agreement of the following July. Funder seems to have been perfectly genuine; it is all the more surprising that he should have been willing to discuss with Papen at this time not only an agreement about the Press, but also the question of the Austrian Nazis who had become Austrian Legionaries in the Reich and were being trained for a *coup*. He actually told Papen, if the latter may be believed, that he favoured a secret agreement because there were so many people both within Austria and without who were interested in preventing an Austro-German agreement.² The acceptance by Mussolini of the Press Agreement which emerged later on may be regarded as the occasion of the birth of the Axis friendship; it was made possible by Mussolini's weakness, and because he was weak it was certain to spell the end of Austrian independence.

When Mussolini visited Berlin in September 1937 he spoke of the autumn of 1935 as the period of the birth of the Axis, but all

¹ Papen to Berlin, 18 Oct. 1935

² Papen to Berlin, 26 Nov. 1935. For the agreement and its text see Chapter IV.

this time the atmosphere around the Italian Embassy in Berlin was, Attolico notwithstanding, extremely cool. The Reich Government forbade the export of arms to either belligerent, so Attolico concentrated his energy on procuring coal and other raw materials from Germany, but even over supplies such as these the Germans were not encouraging. In October German exporters were warned to be cautious towards Italy in view of the large accumulation of lira balances awaiting transfer, and at the beginning of November the Reich declared an embargo upon the export of oils, fats, textiles, potatoes, iron, and steel, but not coal. On 7 November, soon after the League Sanctions decision, when Austria and Hungary voted with Italy, the *Deutsches Nachrichten Büro* issued the following statement:

'The German standpoint with reference to Germany's neutrality is well known and has in no way altered. Should an abnormal increase of exports of raw materials or food-stuffs become apparent, which threatens Germany's own economic interests, the German Government will prevent it by appropriate measures.'

If Neurath in conversation with foreign diplomats showed a slightly pro-Italian inclination, the line he followed was that, between Italy and the League, Germany was absolutely neutral. In Papen's already quoted dispatch of July he had written:

'It might be possible that through the menace to British imperial interests the Abyssinian adventure would help to bring nearer the realisation of the New Order. It remains more probable, however, that a compromise will be made at the Negus's expense—at the cost perhaps also of a notable blood-letting of Italy.'

Indeed, the possibility of this compromise tormented Hitler and his Ministers during the last months of 1935;¹ were it to be realized, Hitler feared for the programme of his life. On 9 December it seemed that the blow had fallen, for on that day the Hoare-Laval Agreement of 7 December was revealed in the French Press. Consternation reigned in Berlin at the renewed possibility of complete German isolation, and the German Press suddenly became the champion of the League of Nations against this 'plot'. Lipski was treated to a lecture in this vein when he visited Neurath about a week later. Two days after this he saw Hitler, who was greatly excited and asked him over and over

¹ It was at this period that Ribbentrop began his advances to Japan.

again what on earth the British were doing. He then indulged in a long apology for Germany's exports to Italy. He was not, he insisted, profiting from the situation, but he had to consider a serious problem of unemployment in his coal-mines: the French might accuse him of having placed an embargo upon the export of arms to the belligerents because he wished to stack up all possible armaments for himself, but this was unjust, for the deliveries in question would have been too trifling to affect the Reich. After speaking of other things Hitler reverted feverishly to the Hoare-Laval plan.

Mussolini was ready to accept the Franco-British proposition, and the French, who knew that if the Abyssinian war were not stopped Hitler would re-militarize the Rhineland and thereby emasculate the Treaty of Versailles, were determined to preserve the Stresa front and the isolation of Germany. The French believed, however, that the British (contrary to the popular legend) were less politically practical than themselves; some of them also knew of the instinctive anti-Latin and pro-German character of British public opinion, which to this day confuses the commonplace opportunism of Mussolini with the fearful logic of Hitler. It was therefore planned in Paris¹ to spring the news on Baldwin, who would have difficulty in repudiating his own Foreign Secretary. The remarkable and admirable reaction of the British against the Hoare-Laval plan was all the greater, the Stresa front was dissolved, and Hitler unshackled, let loose to advance step by step, from the militarization of the Rhineland to the invasion of Poland. History has perhaps never played a stranger trick upon Man than to allow British indignation against international lawlessness and imperialist and racial bullying to have smoothed the path of Adolf Hitler.¹ Out of this misconception was born that deformity, the Italo-German alliance, of which Hitler had so long dreamed.

¹ It was said that Pertinax and Madame Tabouis learnt of the Hoare-Laval plan from Herriot, but Laval afterwards told Cerruti that Herriot did not know, and that he (Laval) suspected a Quai d'Orsay official; naturally he himself disclaimed all responsibility for betraying Hoare to the Press.

*'This Berlin-Rome line is not a Diaphragm
but rather an Axis'*

THE first half of 1936 was a period of most uneasy pregnancy. It gave evidence, which only subsequently became public, of the fundamental incompatibility between Italy and Germany, but also of the inexorable persistence of Hitler which throve upon the weakness of Mussolini. In his Austrian policy the Duce was for Hitler the arch-divider of Germany, and other influences in Germany were hostile to Italy as treacherous and weak; slowly but steadily Hitler nevertheless advanced towards a written Italo-German alliance. Mussolini, as both Schuschnigg and Starhemberg testify, was better informed, more open-minded, more receptive than Hitler, yet his vacillation and his Italian touchiness played into Hitler's hands every time. Mussolini, it has been seen, knew very well what Papen was up to in Vienna; he made it clear that he fully understood the danger of a rearmed Germany; Starhemberg's testimony on these points derives chiefly from the spring of 1936, but there is plenty of material to confirm it. Yet the moment the Duce had flung himself into military ventures he became childishly sensitive to every slur upon Italy's military reputation, and he reacted particularly to German implications which were often coupled with references to Italy's attack upon her former allies in 1915: perhaps because of his own fiery interventionism in those days any reference to Italian turncoats touched him to the quick.

It has often been supposed—and to this the present writer pleads guilty—that Abyssinia, the Rhineland, and Spain formed a chain of Nazi-Fascist connivance. This is not true—how untrue in the case of Ethiopia has already been seen. But from the moment of the Hoare-Laval Plan Ethiopia became a trump card for Hitler, because it had split the Stresa front and freed him from 'encirclement'. At the beginning of March 1936 it was clear that Abyssinian resistance was broken and that the Italian Army might soon be free for other tasks. The Fuhrer decided that the Western Powers and the League were

weak enough for the remilitarization of the Rhineland to be risked on 7 March. He decided further that it might subsequently be worth while to return to Geneva to exploit the difficulties of the League for his own ends; for this purpose the Germans began the demand for a new, up-to-date Locarno, in spite of their insistence upon bilateral pacts at the expense of collective agreements. On the economic side, although Hitler had piously deplored sanctions as disordering to international trade,¹ Germany could not merely hope to achieve Italy's dependence by becoming the source of her coal,² but had also a splendid opportunity to make use of her impoverishment. Actually her imports of some categories of goods from Germany had been reduced because she could not pay for them: in the new situation the gain for Germany lay in the fact that the Reich could now supply Italy's Danubian markets on Dr. Schacht's terms, and, in this material way, oust Italy from Central Europe, from which the geo-politicians had always intended to expel her.

On the whole Mussolini understood as well as the French and better than the British the ominous significance of Hitler's Rhineland *coup* and the prestige it would give to the Führer; there is plentiful evidence of this besides Starhemberg's account of his angry twisting and untwisting of the paper-clips which lay on his table.³ It was clear to the Duce that however often Hitler spoke of peace, it was war that he prepared. Among Mussolini's weaknesses, however, was a certain blindness in the question of Czechoslovakia which was to cost him dear. He could not forgive the Czechs three interrelated things: their democratic convictions, their opposition to Hungarian revisionism, and their support of the Austrian Social Democrats who had been allowed to transfer their headquarters to Brno in Moravia. For these reasons Mussolini failed to grasp that in Hitler's mind the liquidation of Austria and Czechoslovakia were two aspects of the same undertaking. Hitler was far too old-style Austrian to think otherwise, and he made it clear enough later on that this was so. It was therefore absurd of Mussolini or of any other statesman at the time to suppose that one could bolster up Austria without backing up the Czechs; only too late and too rarely does the Duce seem to have understood this.

¹ François-Poncet, op. cit., p. 247.

² For note see opposite page.

³ Starhemberg, op. cit., p. 192.

Note 2 from opposite page.

During 1935 and 1936 Italy imported a much smaller quantity of general commodities from Germany and less in value. See *Annuario Statistico Italiano* 1937. The following tables show the changes in the sources of her coal supplies in the thirty years from 1909. After 1920 she was able to develop her production of electric power very greatly, so that she became less absolutely dependent upon imported coal. The South Tyrol was the scene of important hydro-electrical development.

Italian Imports of Coal 1909-1938.

(Figures in metric tons: 000's omitted)

<i>Year</i>	<i>Total imports</i>	<i>From Great Britain</i>		<i>From Germany</i>	
		%		%	
1909	9,304	8,841	94.9	169	1.8
1910	9,339	8,428	90.2	494	5.3
1911	9,596	8,767	91.3	443	4.6
1912	10,057	8,637	85.9	890	8.8
1913	10,834	9,397	86.8	968	8.9
1920	5,620	3,035	54.0	987	17.6
1921	7,470
1922	9,135	5,774	63.2	2,735	29.7
1923	9,166	6,506	71.0	1,597	17.6
1924	11,170	5,896	52.8	4,358	39.0
1925	10,517	6,734	64.0	2,735	23.9
1926	12,258	3,826	31.2	4,522	36.9
1927	14,059	6,421	45.7	4,598	32.6
1928	12,697	6,439	50.7	4,439	35.0
1929	14,603	7,111	48.7	5,534	37.9
1930	12,902	7,072	54.8	4,008	31.1
1931	11,094	5,834	52.6	3,220	29.1
1932	8,778	5,249	59.8	3,120	35.5
1933	9,562	4,747	49.6	2,201	23.0
1934	12,734	4,614	36.3	4,538	35.7
1935	14,590	3,498	24.0	7,461	51.1
1936	9,265	96	1.0	5,917	63.9
1937	12,927	1,999	15.5	7,628	59.0
1938	12,032	2,290	19.0	7,003	58.2

1909-26—Coal. 1927-38—Coal and coke.

Sources

1909-25. League of Nations International Economic Conference, May 1927.
 1927-31. League of Nations Economic Committee, *The Coal Problem*, May 1932.
 1932-8. *Annuario Statistico Italiano*.

For Year 1938.

U.S. Tariff Commission. *Italian Commercial Policy and Foreign Trade, 1922-1940*.
 Following figures are given of Italian imports of coal from principal countries:

Germany	.	58.5 per cent.
Great Britain	.	21.3 "
Poland and Danzig	.	12.3 "

' Now the strategic importance of the remilitarization of the Rhineland lay in the fact that it would make any military co-operation between France and the Czechoslovak Republic infinitely more difficult than it would have been before; it emasculated at one stroke the Franco-Czech and the Franco-Russian alliances. It was this new strategic situation which Mussolini half-realized, but which he did not seriously face. The watch on the Brenner had become more solitary, but there was a margin of several months before the new Rhenish fortifications would be ready, and serious policy should have used this breathing-space; it appears that the Italians on the Austrian frontier were strongly reinforced.

The Duce was, of course, annoyed that Hitler's Rhineland move pushed him back into the League just when he had meant to sweep out of it, but he swallowed his pride over this, and tried to enjoy a fresh phase of Hitler as the international bad boy instead of himself. Relations between Italy and Germany had not yet improved in the spring of 1936. It is difficult to gauge the value of Neurath's remarks to Bullitt on 18 May because Neurath was as false as his colleagues, and, further, the Party did not always confide in him. But there is no particular reason to doubt his sincerity in saying to his American visitor that 'the demonstrations of friendship between Germany and Italy were mere demonstrations without basis in reality.' He went on to say that at the present time he could see no way to reconcile the conflicting interests of Germany and Italy in Austria.' For the moment Germany would not encourage the Austrian Nazis because 'until the German fortifications had been constructed on the French border, an involvement of Germany in war with Italy might lead to a French attack on Germany'.¹ Thus the Germans had been expecting Mussolini to follow his original plan and to patch things up with France and Britain now that Badoglio had occupied Addis Ababa on 5 May. But after the French elections of 26 April and 3 May Léon Blum and the *Front Populaire* were about to take over the government of France and with them Mussolini would never come to terms; he had further revealed a new susceptibility; he had conquered an empire, as he claimed, for his king, and in future he would

¹ U.S. Document L.150: Memorandum of Bullitt-Neurath Conversation, in *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings* (London, H.M.S.O., 1946-), Pt. i, p. 233.

the same time Mussolini asked that Starhemberg as his personal friend should not be victimized in any way. So on 13 May 1936 Papen triumphed through the agency of Salata, and a new Schuschnigg Cabinet was formed without Starhemberg.

The testimony of Schuschnigg in all this affair is valuable and interesting; its historic worth rests upon this man's obvious sincerity, but must be qualified by his strange inflexibility and particularly by his natural *naïveté*, the weakness for which, as he himself recognizes, he was chastized for seven horrible years in the Hotel Metropol in Vienna and in Sachsenhausen and Oranienburg. And, if his book, *Ein Requiem in Rot-Weiss-Rot*, was written largely on the basis of notes made at the time of the events it records, the setting was added after that long and cruel imprisonment. If Mussolini was slow to feel sympathy for Schuschnigg, the Austrian Chancellor thoroughly enjoyed the Duce's society; he noticed his extraordinarily close contact with the Press, but mistook this Italian journalist for a really cultivated man. From Schuschnigg we hear how Mussolini loved not only to show off his German but also to quote his Nietzsche.

The conversations between Mussolini and Schuschnigg in these years 1934, 1935, and 1936 show that both men knew pretty well how things really stood—Mussolini, for instance, says (in August 1934) 'Sie wissen ja wie die Plebiszite im Reich zu Stande kommen',¹ and Schuschnigg knows that Italy without the Stresa front may at any time make terms with Germany at Austria's expense. On 5 June 1936, though Mussolini repeats the formula which had resulted from Badoglio's visit to France in September 1935, about the invulnerability of the Maginot Line, Schuschnigg describes him in the throes of a final decision against France—it was the day after Blum had formed his cabinet. The now current formula of an easier situation for Austria if Italy and Germany were friends was attractive and—on the face of things—not altogether false.

There was a hollowness about the Italo-Austrian relationship which was half admitted between Schuschnigg and Mussolini the first time they met.² In Austrian eyes the Italians were still

¹ = 'After all, you know how plebiscites are managed in the Reich.'

² In 1940 Cranö rather carelessly talked to Sumner Welles as if a full admission had been made, cf Schuschnigg, op. cit., p. 251, and Sumner Welles, *A Time for Decision* (Harpers, 1944) p. 81.

the despised hawkers of toy cats, the *Katzelmacher*. They might man the Brenner, but this was bluff because they could never cross it. Not only was the Austro-German frontier all but impossible to hold, not only would Italian troops in Austria bring in the Yugoslavs and perhaps the Czechs, but they would make all Austria pro-German and the regular Austrian Army would desert in large batches to Hitler. A few cultural interchanges between academic personages were all very well, but attempts at athletic fraternization were a disaster every time. The scuffle at Murzzuschlag because the Italian cyclists' tyres were punctured by the nails laid for them along the road was one of many such incidents. A climax was reached in March 1937 when the Nazis in Vienna turned up *en masse* to beat up a visiting Italian football team. The Germans themselves saw to it that Mussolini was supplied with a garbled version of this story.

The eternal South Tyrolese question was a major element in the whole situation. Mussolini was right enough when he said to Schuschnigg in 1935 that demonstrators in Bolzano with their white stockings and *Heil-Hitlers* were just the same Nazis as those against whom Schuschnigg was forced to take action in Austria. Such concessions as the Italian Government made at this time were drowned by the outcry, discreetly stimulated by the various Pan-German organizations such as the *Verein des Deutschtum im Ausland* based on Stuttgart, over the calling-up of young men from the Alto Adige to fight in Abyssinia: if a few troublesome ones were removed in this way, there is insufficient evidence for the presumption that the Italian authorities called up more recruits here than in the other provinces of Italy. But Austrian and South German solidarity with the South Tyrolese against Italy in the first half of 1936 was a convenient instrument, among all his others, with which Hitler could bring Mussolini to heel.

It was three weeks after the eviction of Starhemberg from the Austrian Cabinet, when Schuschnigg visited Mussolini at his Romagnol country-house at Rocca delle Caminate, near Forlì. With Starhemberg out of the way, Papen's intrigue with Funder could materialize, and on 5 June Schuschnigg put the project of a Press truce between Vienna and Berlin before the Duce, who, repeating yet again that he never would nor could weaken in maintaining the complete independence of Austria, approved.

On 11 July, therefore, the fateful Austro-German Agreement was published in the form of three clauses: (1) Germany recognized Austria's full sovereignty; (2) Germany and Austria each undertook to mind their own business, i.e. not to interfere in anything concerning the internal political structure of the other State. The third clause ran: 'The policy of the Austrian Federal Government, both in general and towards the German Reich in particular, shall always be based on principles which correspond to the fact that Austria has acknowledged herself to be a German State. This will not affect the Rome Protocols of 1934 and the supplementary agreements of 1936, or the position of Austria in relation to Italy and Hungary as her partners in these protocols.' It was added that a series of measures to relieve tension was envisaged, but the character of these measures, the most interesting part of the agreement, was only revealed later, piecemeal; as if in deference to Dr. Funder's anxieties, no official reference was made on 11 July to the question of the Press.

With their eyes open to Hitler's treachery, well aware that he would never leave a separate Austria in peace, both Mussolini and Schuschnigg allowed themselves to be fascinated by the Fuhrer's spells. His victims always retained their lucidity more easily when faced with problems not immediately their own; Starhemberg has shown that this was true of the Duce, and when Mussolini made his first agreement with Hitler in the autumn of this year Fuchs¹ quotes Schuschnigg as saying 'Hitler will reap what Mussolini has sown'.

The July Agreement made the Anschluss a foregone conclusion, the more as the nature of the measures 'to relieve tension' was revealed. It was soon announced that lenient amnesty would be extended to a considerable number of Austrian Nazis serving various sentences. The five German newspapers which were allowed into Austria were ample to feed every racial passion, while the five poor little Austrian papers which got into Germany were swamped; Schuschnigg hoped they would bring comfort to a few faithful German Catholics who were probably victimized if they dared to buy them. The 1,000 marks tax on Germans travelling to Austria was, as Papen had long advocated, removed in August 1936, so that German tourists might practise all their arts of penetration. Meanwhile

¹ Martin Fuchs, *A Pact with Hitler* (Gollancz, 1939).

the most intransigent Austrian Nazis were still receiving military training as 'Legionaries' in Germany. In return for all this what did Schuschnigg—and Mussolini—get? Germany, whose word both of them knew to be valueless, had recognized Austria's sovereignty; this Schuschnigg felt—and still feels to-day—was internationally worth while, although at the same time he promised that the policy of Austria would always in principle be that of a German State; in other words, Hitler would have grounds for protest against Austria's un-German policy every time Schuschnigg might wish to consult Mussolini.¹ Worst of all, though Mussolini and Schuschnigg had specifically agreed at Rocca delle Caminate that on no account must even isolated Nazis be allowed to enter the Austrian Cabinet (on the model of Hitler, Göring, and Frick in Germany on 30 January 1933), the Austro-German Agreement immediately brought two crypto-Nazis into Schuschnigg's Government; one of them was General Glaise-Horstenau, who became a Minister without portfolio, and the other Guido Schmidt, who was promoted to be head of the Austrian Foreign Office under Schuschnigg as its nominal chief. These two excessively treacherous personages had in fact been instrumental—together with Papen and Funder and Salata—in bringing the Agreement about, and both told Schuschnigg how difficult it had been for Glaise-Horstenau, who had dealt with Hitler on the subject, to persuade the Führer to agree. Glaise, whose obsequious manner to any casual visitor like the present writer was almost grotesque, had persuaded Schuschnigg that he was a faithful Catholic, but it was not very difficult for an untrained nose to smell that he was a Pan-German of the older Austrian generation. He had, moreover, worked with the German General Staff in the 1914-1918 War; of this he had afterwards written a military history which was particularly offensive about Italy. It gives the measure of Mussolini's surrender to Hitler that he should have seemed to acquiesce in the elevation of Glaise-Horstenau, who in November received the key position of Austrian Home Minister, for it was harder for the Duce to swallow humiliation, personal or relative to the Italians' poor military reputation, which he was determined to reverse, than to abandon political power. The July Agreement synchronized almost exactly with

¹ See below, p. 70.

the lifting of Sanctions, which might have ended Mussolini's dependence on Germany; on the contrary, soon after this he removed Preziosi and Morreale, and nominated the Austrian-born Salata as Italian Minister in Vienna. For the July agreement had very nearly synchronized also with the news on 17 July of an anti-Republican military revolt in Spanish Morocco.

After the anxieties of 1935, in 1936 a warm sun seemed to be ripening Hitler's long-delayed fruit. All through 1936 he was—according to his plan—systematically gaining power (which could be translated into terms of force) without using force openly. Meanwhile his courtship of Italy was as clumsy and treacherous as that of some country-bumpkin in a Ben Jonson or Restoration play, and it must also be recorded that Italy's responses were not much more adroit. Hans Frank paid a visit to Rome in April 1936 to deliver a lecture on National Socialist 'justice', or, in other words, the Nazi rejection of the principles of Roman Law. At a special opera performance in Frank's honour, the Roman orchestra regaled him in return with the old Hohenzollern *Heil Dir im Siegerkranz* (to the tune of 'God Save the King') instead of the Nazi national hymns. In June Mussolini's daughter, Edda Ciano, spent a month in Berlin just when her husband at the tender age of thirty-three had been made Italian Foreign Minister. Adolf Hitler consented to take her in his motor-boat around the network of lakes between Berlin and Potsdam, but as she knew no German and he no Italian their contact was tenuous and illusory. On these and an increasing number of similar occasions no sympathy was felt, only, as one participant said, a 'compelling parallelism'.

At the end of July 1936, the month of Mussolini's formal surrender to Hitler, the Olympic Games were held in Berlin—the last Olympiad before the outbreak of war. Never before had such significance been attached to them. Much German reticence in the previous months had been designed to ensure that the whole world's representatives should join in this festival of heroism—which the Nazis contrasted with democracy—in Germany. Enthusiastic exponents¹ of the demigod qualities of the Germans had long patronized the Greeks of classical times as offshoots of Nordicism, but Hitler's Olympus was a post-Wagnerian Valhalla in which half of his divided personality

¹ Notably Houston Stewart Chamberlain.

ecstatically believed, and to make the whole world (excepting only the Soviets) witness the triumph of the German Siegfried,¹ with himself acting as Odin's high priest, was also a matter of serious *realpolitik*. One of his most important methods of gaining power without the use of force was to disseminate a state of ecstasy. There is no doubt that some of the German athletes surpassed themselves through the exaltation with which *der Führer* filled them, and that the foreign visitors were duly impressed by the inspired strength of the 'new' Germany.² 'Face à la tribune officielle, où siègent, aux côtés de Hitler et ses lieutenants, le roi de Bulgarie, le Prince de Piémont, la Princesse Marie de Savoie, les princes héritiers de Suède et de Grèce et les fils de Mussolini, les membres du Comité international . . . annoncent l'ouverture des Jeux et reçoivent le serment de l'athlète.'³ The Austrian team was received with German acclamation and when its football contest with the Italians was prolonged into four matches, the demonstrations of the German public became more and more anti-Italian; in the end the Italians won. But what one or two Italian diplomats observed with greater satisfaction was that while the French team appeared to deliver a Nazi salute,⁴ the Italian athletes did nothing of the kind.

Schuschnigg attached great importance from the Austrian point of view to the replacement at the Palazzo Chigi of the old official type, Suvich, by the young Fascist Ciano on 9 June 1936: he seems even to have thought that if Mussolini on 5 June made the theatrical suggestion of paying official visits by air to Vienna and Budapest it was only Ciano who prevented the realization of the plan.⁵ Instead the evidence indicates that, while Alfieri, who succeeded Ciano at the Ministry of Propaganda, consistently used such influence as he had in favour of an Italo-German *rapprochement*, Ciano at this time was just the good young Fascist who followed his Duce in see-sawing between

¹ In *Mein Kampf* Hitler often spoke of *der deutsche Siegfried*.

² It was, of course, the United States with champions of all races which scored the highest number of events, including several negro triumphs.

³ François-Poncet, op. cit., p. 264.

⁴ Monsieur François-Poncet explains that it was an 'Olympic' salute.

⁵ Schuschnigg, op. cit., p. 246. Suvich, who had been Under-Secretary to Mussolini as Foreign Minister, was actually succeeded by Bastianini, while Ciano was successor to the Duce.

grudging admiration first for the graces of France and then for the cynical and successful brutality of Germany. One can only say that whereas Suvich exerted a certain professional restraint, Ciano delighted in 'adventures' such as the Ethiopian war or intervention in Spain. It had been settled before he became Foreign Minister that the decisive Austro-German Agreement should be made, and when Hassell returned from Berlin to Rome in the middle of June he immediately intimated Germany's willingness to recognize the Italian East African Empire by way of reward.¹ On the same occasion (18 June) Hassell told Ciano that feeling in Germany had become much more favourable to Italy and was only qualified by the suspicion that Italy was working for a Habsburg restoration. Hassell himself had denied this but the idea persisted: Ciano replied that it was a groundless suspicion. On 29 June Hassell brought Ciano an offer from Hitler to Mussolini to consider the recognition of the Empire without asking for anything in exchange [*sic*] whenever the Duce should consider the time ripe. On 25 July Germany suppressed her Legation in Addis Ababa.

Before the end of the summer an event occurred in Hitler's life which cannot be ignored. Lloyd George was the one British personage for whom we know that Hitler felt respect; the victor in a modern world war, he seems to have been in the running for superman honours. The old Welshman's visit distracted Hitler's attention from Mussolini, for it revived his interest in an alliance with Britain. At that time one could certainly not ally oneself with Britain and Italy at the same time, and Hitler seems not to have mentioned Italy to Lloyd George. He threw himself into fascinating his British guests; Sylvester refers to his 'strange dominating mannerism which seemed to grip and compel attention, a curious indescribable something, magnetic, masterful, electrical, compelling, hypnotic. . . .'² An agreement with Britain could not be so easily made, but Lloyd George's visit to Berchtesgaden had sinister results which were to be felt later on. For he encouraged Hitler to believe that Nazi Germany was invincible and must never give way, and that the United States could never afford to challenge her power.³

¹ Ciano Minute, 18 June 1936. (This and other Ciano Minutes referred to are published in *L'Europa verso la catastrofe* (Mondadori, Milan, 1948).)

² A. J. Sylvester, *The Real Lloyd George* (Cassell, 1947).

³ See De Witt C. Poole, 'Light on Nazi Foreign Policy', in *Foreign Affairs*, Oct. 1946.

Towards the end of September Hitler's hopes returned to Italy and Hans Frank appeared in Rome again, this time charged with an important mission; even the gist of his interview with Mussolini on 23 September was kept secret and though Ciano recorded it¹ he seems not to have gossiped this time. Frank began by conveying an invitation from Hitler to Mussolini to visit Germany both as Head of the Italian Government and as Leader of the Othier Revolution; in the meantime the Fuhrer hoped that Ciano would come to Germany to make immediate contact. Frank then went on to say that Hitler would only take action in Spain out of loyalty to Mussolini, for he was not concerned with the Mediterranean, which he regarded as Italy's sphere; the Baltic Sea was Germany's Mediterranean. There followed a good deal of talk about the dangers of bolshevism and the importance of direct relations between the Nazi and Fascist leaders outside the normal channels of diplomacy. Frank assured Mussolini that Germany would be loyal to the Austro-German Agreement, which Mussolini quickly claimed as due to his own inspiration. The Duce declared himself in no hurry to have his new Empire recognized, assuring Frank at the same time that Italy had to all intents and purposes left Geneva. He complained that he could not work with a Popular Front France. Hitler had, of course, been right to make the Ribbentrop attempt to make friends with the British, but, said Mussolini, it was bound to fail. A little later Frank asked the Master to explain how it was that he had been successful in his dealings with the Catholic Church while Germany, Frank admitted, had not. Religion, replied the Duce, is as elusive as a mist; it is vain, therefore, to struggle against the Churches—he did not now, he added hastily, speak of the Jews because a race is another thing. He had been able to arrange the Lateran Pacts on the basis of 'Render unto Caesar . . .' in 1929, and they had in practice spelt the victory of the Fascist State over the Church, which had dutifully supported the war against Ethiopia. When Frank asked him what the function of the party should be within the State, Mussolini replied that it should be a civilian militia at the orders of the State.²

¹ Ciano Minute, 23 Sept. 1936.

² In 1929 in the Preamble to the *Statuto* of that year the Fascist Party was defined as a 'civil militia' for the service of the nation.

For the first time Mussolini had responded to the fawnings of a Nazi leader like Frank; a month later Ciano set out for Berlin, Munich, and Berchtesgaden. Although he had left Rome with some misgivings, he was flattered by a gala performance of *Don Giovanni* in Munich and by a well-organized crowd reception, in which, as it turned out, the Führer had interested himself personally. Ciano first saw Neurath in Berlin on 21st October, when the German recognition of the Italian Empire was confirmed, and the two Foreign Ministers made a *tour d'horizon* of which Ciano's minute is available. According to Ciano, who does not seem to have been inaccurate in this kind of work, Neurath not only insisted upon the British 'encirclement' of Italy but expressed himself in very anti-British terms on Germany's behalf, and he spoke of Ribbentrop's foolish illusions about the possibility of genuine Anglo-German friendship; Ciano felt that his rivalry with Ribbentrop had now made Neurath a real partisan of Rome against London. The German Minister also expressed himself sceptically about any new 'Locarno'. When Ciano said that Italy would only remain at Geneva provisionally, Neurath said he did not wish to insist upon an Italian break with the League of Nations since Italy could perform 'a work of sabotage useful for our common ends' so long as she remained a member.¹ Neurath and Ciano then went through previously agreed formulae on opposition to Communism, a common effort in Spain, and the independence of Austria. Since, as the Italians claimed, Austrian independence had now been accepted as axiomatic, there was nothing further to say about it; in other words they preferred to avoid any reference to the game they had lost, and Neurath made things easy by expressing an ironical satisfaction over the 'totalitarian consolidation' of Schuschnigg's position.

On 24 October Ciano met Hitler for the first time at the Berghof. The two dominant themes of their conversation were, as Ciano noted, Bolshevism and Britain's encirclement conspiracy. After declaring that 'Mussolini is the first statesman of the world with whom no one else had the right even remotely

¹ Ciano Minute, 21 Oct. 1936. In the summer the Italians themselves had nearly broken with Geneva (see Ciano letter to the Council of the League read at Geneva on 26 June), while the Germans had almost seemed in earnest about their new Locarno.

² Ciano Minute, 24 Oct. 1936.

to compare himself', Hitler referred to his own rejection of British blandishments because he realized that Britain intended 'to separate our two countries in order to beat them one at a time'. This gave Ciano a splendid opportunity to present to Hitler, as the Duce had particularly charged him to do, a circular of Eden's on Germany¹ and a telegram from Sir Eric Phipps, the British Ambassador in Berlin, to the Foreign Office, two documents which had fallen into Grandi's hands and which Mussolini had had translated for the Führer: the telegram was one in which Phipps had referred to the German Government as one of dangerous adventurers. Hitler, Ciano stated, reacted violently. 'In the English view', he cried, 'there are two countries in the world to-day which are led by adventurers, Germany and Italy. But England, too, was governed by adventurers when she founded her Empire. To-day she is only governed by inept creatures.' By raising the anti-bolshevik standard, Germany and Italy, Hitler said, must now take the offensive against the democracies, though Ciano noted that he spoke as if France no longer counted. There was the usual diatribe about the Mediterranean for Italy and the Baltic for Germany. Germany would be ready for war in three years (i.e. in 1939), said Hitler, but would be still better prepared if she had four or five years' time. Though he was convinced that Britain wished to attack Germany and Italy, together they would soon be strong enough to make her give up this ambition.

The acquisition of new political friends in the anti-Communist campaign was considered. Hitler hoped that Italy would come to terms with Yugoslavia, which Britain wished to make into an anti-Italian base, and he asked that Italy, like Germany, should direct Hungarian revisionism away from Yugoslavia and against Czechoslovakia. Neurath had already spoken to Ciano in this sense when they had discussed 'economic co-operation' in the Danubian basin.

With regard to Japan Hitler only told Ciano that Germany had gone a long way towards an agreement, but Neurath had informed his Italian colleague very fully about this although he himself had been kept in the dark about Ribbentrop's negotiations with Tokyo from the end of 1935 until the middle

¹ Dated 17 Jan. 1936. Mussolini had referred to this document in his conversation with Hans Frank.

of 1936; he even told Ciano about the secret clauses of the Anti-Komintern Pact which was signed a month later (25 November 1936); the German Ambassador to Japan seems never to have been fully informed about them. Neurath agreed to an Italian recognition of Manchukuo as against a Japanese recognition of the new Italian Empire.

With regard to Spain Hitler pronounced to Ciano the gorgeous lie that Germany had involved herself up to the hilt on the anti-bolshevik side. It was Italian activity on behalf of Franco which had already reached considerable dimensions.

Ciano's minute on his encounter with Hitler ends with two apt comments. He remarked that 'every question was the object of a long exposition by Hitler and that he repeated every formulation several times in different words'. He also remarked that Hitler showed uncertainty in his attitude towards Britain; much would still depend on Ribbentrop's activities in London.

An Italo-German Agreement² along the lines of Ciano's conversations was signed at Berchtesgaden but not published to the world. The results of Ciano's visit to Germany were only announced in Mussolini's famous speech in the Piazza del Duomo in Milan on the afternoon of Sunday, 11 November. After a reference to the July Agreement which had fortified Austria politically, he went on to say:

'One great country has recently gathered a vast amount of sympathy among the masses of the Italian people: I speak of Germany.

'The Berlin conversations have resulted in an understanding between our two countries over certain problems which had been particularly acute. But these understandings which have been sanctioned in fitting and duly signed agreements, this Berlin-Rome line is not a diaphragm but rather an axis around which can revolve all those European states with a will to collaboration and peace.

'Germany, however much encircled and importuned, did not adhere to the sanctions against us. With the agreement of 11 July an element of dissension between Berlin and Rome has disappeared, and let me remind you that Germany had practically recognized the Empire of Rome before the Berlin meeting.'

It should be added in parenthesis that Germany, not being a member of the League of Nations, had never been expected to impose sanctions against Italy.

¹ See DeWitt C. Poole, *op. cit.*

² The 'October Protocols'.

Hitler had forged the Axis announced by Mussolini, and Austria was his when he chose to take it. One of the Fuhrer's most useful agents in Austria, Guido Schmidt, was responsible for a sinister epilogue to Ciano's October negotiations. Schmidt had been at a Jesuit school in Feldkirch with Schuschnigg and had gained remarkable influence over him. He does not seem to have had any great capacity except for intrigue; Zernatto, who served Schuschnigg and Austria faithfully and whose judgements are balanced and moderate, describes him as 'rather a political juggler than a man who moves forward in a straight line towards his goal'.¹ He had a Don-Juanesque way of whispering in everybody's ear 'Of course it is only you whom I love, whatever others may tell you', and while he had certainly decided that Hitler's cards would win, it seems that Ciano was right in suspecting in him a vicious delight in intriguing at Geneva.² The episode of Schmidt's remarks there to Vansittart at Mussolini's expense in 1937, although discounted as Italian slander by the faithful Schuschnigg,³ is only too credible.

On 19 November 1936, soon after the Wilhelmstrasse had announced the corollary to the October protocols, Germany's recognition of Franco,⁴ Guido Schmidt, now fully fledged Austrian Foreign Minister, went to Berlin. He dined that same evening with Hans Frank⁵ and another fervid Nazi, Bohle, chief of the German *Auslandsorganisation*. The next day he saw Hitler, who welcomed him warmly, and on 21 November he signed a secret procès-verbal with Neurath of which Magistrati in some consternation was able to inform the Palazzo Chigi. The agreement contained declarations in favour of the further stimulation of Austro-German Press and cultural and economic exchanges, together with an anti-Communist declaration. From Italy's point of view its second clause contained the sting, for while acknowledging Austria's right to act according to the Rome Protocols it laid down the necessity for 'preventive Austro-German consultation whenever Vienna might need to act out-

¹ Op. cit.

² Cf. Ciano's account of meeting Schmidt at Vienna in Nov. 1936 in Minute of Conversations at Vienna and Budapest, 9-16 Nov. 1936.

³ Op. cit.
⁴ On 21 Oct. Neurath only spoke of doing this after Franco's conquest of Madrid: see Ciano Minute of that date.

⁵ Guido Schmidt was in Rome from 14 to 17 Sept. 1936, so that one wonders whether he may have helped to prepare for Hans Frank's visit to the Duce.

side' the Rome-Vienna-Budapest triangle. This had only been negatively implied hitherto¹ and virtually annulled the third published clause of the July Agreement by which it had been made acceptable to Italy; it was surely only ineptitude which delayed Italian pressure against Schmidt until 1937, when it was too late. It was characteristically tortuous that before leaving Berlin Guido Schmidt gave an interview to the Stefani correspondent in praise of the Rome Protocols; then having opportunely chummed up with Göring too, he left Tempelhof for Vienna together with his party in two red aeroplanes lent to him by the head of the Luftwaffe, and marked with huge swastikas so that they looked like two giant Nazi flags. Mussolini and Ciano were placated by the Japanese recognition of Italian Ethiopia² which preceded the German-Japanese Anti-Komintern Pact on 25 November 1936. This latter treaty was signed in Berlin on Germany's behalf by Ribbentrop, regardless of the fact that he was German Ambassador in London. After the signature he repeated the geo-political programme to the German Press—the world would be defended against Communism, he said, by Japan in the Far East, Germany in central Europe, and by Italy in the Mediterranean. Mussolini and Ciano accepted their allotment contentedly, and concluded a secret agreement with Franco three days later. They did not recognize Manchukuo until their adhesion to the Anti-Komintern Pact a year later; even then their recognition preceded that of Germany, who had a military mission in China until April 1938.

On the last day of 1936 Attolico was already expressing the pious wish to his colleague Magistrati that Italo-German relations might remain fluid, not crystallize dangerously.

¹ See above, p. 61.

² Announced to Ciano by the Japanese Ambassador in Rome on 18 Nov. 1936.

The Duce in Germany

THE visits between Nazi leaders and Italian *gerarchi* continued to multiply. Each one tried to cultivate his opposite number. Italian *amour propre* smarted because the Nazis were so tall, but then recovered because they were so ugly. Alfieri as Minister of Propaganda had entertained Goebbels and his wife to a great film exhibition in Venice; in October 1936 Himmler visited the Italian police chief, Bocchini, in Rome; it was when he came back a little later from his return visit to Germany that Bocchini remarked that Himmler was exactly like a laughing hyena in a zoo. But in spite of these people, and Hans Frank, and Neurath at the Foreign Office, it was still Goring who was Hitler's most important *homme de confiance* for his dealings with foreign countries and especially with Italy. He was, as the French Ambassador liked to emphasize, generally accepted as enjoying the authority of Hitler's 'Crown Prince'. In addition to his connexion with the Italian royal family through the Prince of Hesse, he had a Pan-German Austrian brother-in-law, Dr. Huber, and through his first wife he had Swedish connexions. Socially he was a cut above most Nazi leaders, and his famous *bonhomie* combined with assurance as a host. His more than childish vanity and Gargantuan demeanour did not startle Germany, and Hitler had no idea that Goring was ridiculous abroad, nor that Mussolini could never take him seriously. Further, Goring was a rascal but certainly no fool; he specialized, like Papen or Henlein, in that particularly German art of intriguing with disarming frankness and total duplicity.

'I say, Chancellor', said this exponent of Italian-German friendship to Schuschnigg at Gömbös's funeral in October 1936, 'the pair of us really don't need these Italians . . . we'll deliver whatever goods you need . . .', and he thereupon offered up to six hundred aeroplanes gratis to Austria, and keep and pay for the Austrian pilots in Germany.¹ As Schuschnigg pointed out, Goring was feeling good-tempered just then; during the Abyssinian war Italy had succeeded in gaining a certain footing in

¹ See Ciano Minutes, Vienna-Budapest, 9-16 Nov. 1936.

the Alpine-Montan concern, but by now he had so to speak won it back, ensuring its control through the *Hermann Göring Werke*.

A favourite pastime of Goring as of Neurath was to explain to the British how much the Germans were doing to restrain the Italians; at the same time they frequently warned the Italians of the violent hostility the British felt towards them in spite of all German attempts to explain the Italian point of view. In November 1936, for instance, Goring told Magistrati that the British Government was 100 per cent. hostile to Italy. 'By 1941', he said, 'Axis naval preparations will be far enough advanced to make the British think twice, but at present you had better be damned careful.' After all that the Anglo-Italian 'Gentleman's Agreement' on 2 January 1937 was annoying, and some ten days later Göring set out, together with Magistrati, upon a visit to Rome. He talked a great deal in the train. Germany would not be ready for three years (i.e. not before January 1940), but Italy and Germany must prepare for a clash with the British. But the object of his journey, he said, was to discuss Austria with the Duce. Of course, he insisted, Hitler had known *nothing* about the plan to murder Dollfuss and he would have shot Habicht at once if Italy's reaction had been less immoderate; and anyway there is not the slightest reason to be afraid of the Germans on one's frontier. Then there was a pause in the conversation and Magistrati went back to his own compartment. Shortly before reaching Rome Göring, however, sent for him to say that the Austrian Question was not really 'actual' after all. 'In any case Germany', Göring said, 'will indulge in no surprises, and whatever decisions she makes on questions so vital to her as those of Austria, Danzig or Memel will be preceded by understandings with Italy.' Magistrati naturally reported all this to Mussolini and Ciano before they saw Göring, and Mussolini protested angrily that it was not that he *feared* the Germans on the Brenner!¹

Göring stayed several days in Rome, then went to Capri, then returned to the capital. On his last day in Italy this time, 23 January, a long conversation took place between the Duce and Göring, with Ciano and the German interpreter, Paul Schmidt, present.² It was interesting for several reasons, one

¹ Information supplied to me by Count Magistrati.

² See Schmidt Minute, dated 'on the journey from Rome to Berlin'.

being the fact that Göring was obviously not informed about Hans Frank's interview with Mussolini in the previous September, nor did he know what had passed between Neurath and Ciano in October. When one considers how the 'Ribbentrop-Büro' was conducting a policy of its own, independently of all the others, and that Hitler was likely to disown any of his henchmen whenever he chose, the difficulty of friendship with Nazi Germany is illustrated in yet another way. Mussolini often said different things to different people, but although dictatorship is irresponsible, Ciano at least could be safely accepted as his authentic and fully informed agent.

Thus Göring, unlike Hitler, spoke of limited German action in Spain, and, unlike Neurath, he reproached Italy (and, incidentally, Austria too) for remaining a member of the League of Nations, 'for England already a kind of invisible alliance against Italy and Germany'. When he came to the point, he blurted out the whole Nazi propaganda campaign against Austria for the next fourteen months. The Austrian régime, he said, was so clerical that it was likely to yield to pressure from the Left [*sic*]. Could not Italy induce Schuschnigg to be more loyal to the 11 July Agreement?—for if he drove the 'national' ministers out of office there might be an explosion.

Mussolini replied that the relations of Italy with Austria rested upon the principle of respecting Austria's independence 'con il dovuto riguardo alla sua sensibilità'. Since the Italians were unpopular in Austria he could only act with great caution towards Vienna. The Duce's frankness on this point suggests that Ciano's account of his visits to Vienna and Budapest in November 1936 had impressed him. For after Italophile ovations in Budapest Ciano was chilled to the bone by his reception in Vienna; the only spontaneity he observed there was when some Nazi enjoyed the excuse for performing a Roman salute which was also Hitler's greeting.¹

Göring insisted that Austria was in fact being used by sinister international forces to keep Italy and Germany apart. After repeating the assurance that there would be no surprises from Germany, Göring went on to announce that an attempt at a Habsburg restoration in any form could not be tolerated by Hitler and would mean *finis Austriae*. Mussolini offered no objection.

¹ See Ciano, Vienna-Budapest, 9-16 Nov. 1936.

In the Italian view Goring's interview with the Duce had gone badly and Magistrati afterwards warned him that the Italo-German friendship was precarious and depended precisely upon Austria.¹ In the visitors' book in his hotel in Capri Goring had found that someone had scribbled *non svastica in Mediterraneo*. When Goring left Rome, Hesse turned up and was evidently disconcerted.

When Ciano visited Hitler at the Obersalzberg in the previous October Magistrati went with him, and had an opportunity to glance around Hitler's small personal library. There he found a series of photographs of the Nazi movement and a few books on *Deutschtum* and on racial themes in general; although the Fuhrer had always proclaimed that he took no interest in the mere 200,000 Germans of South Tyrol, Magistrati made the interesting discovery of the works of their leaders, Reut-Nikolussi and Bossi Fedrigotti, on Hitler's scanty shelves. Early in 1937, oddly enough, the German Press found it necessary to return to the sufferings of the South Tyrolese, and a German book appeared about the South Tyrolese 'martyr', Noldin, who had died after his internment at Lipari. Magistrati called on Goring to discuss this new press campaign on 12 February, when he also brought up the question of Nazi Germany's persecution of the Catholic Church which was well known and much resented in Italy. In March the Pope addressed his message *Mit brennender Sorge* to the German clergy, a message in which he condemned in no uncertain terms the racial theories of the Nazis and their corruption of youth. At about the same time Goring was extraordinarily offensive to Renzetti about the Italian débâcle at Guadalajara, and Mussolini reacted with the snarl that was usual when Italy's military reputation was at stake. Thus the distrust and antipathy between Italy and Germany continued, while Mussolini made the fatal mistake of allowing the

¹ In his affidavit made in 1946 for the Court at Nuremberg, the German interpreter, Paul Schmidt, stated: 'When Goring visited Rome early in 1937 he declared that the union of Austria and Germany was inevitable and could be expected sooner or later. Mussolini heard these words in German, remained silent and protested only mildly when I translated them into French.' Schmidt's testimony was given nine years after the event and he was seriously ill when he gave it, Magistrati's account, which I have used in the text, is based on notes made at the time and is probably more reliable; further, there is nothing to support his affidavit in Paul Schmidt's own minute of this Mussolini Goring interview made on his journey to Berlin which began on the same day.

Germans to know that they had become indispensable to him; now he was about to show them that they had made him afraid.

Göring's threat about the Habsburgs was the expression of one of Hitler's peculiar susceptibilities and during this winter a clandestine Nazi leaflet was circulating in Austria which might have been drafted by the Führer himself. For this reason it may be worth while to quote its opening sentences. It was headed *Nie wieder Habsburg!*

'In spite of the Pact of 11 July 1936', it ran, 'and in spite of growing difficulties in foreign policy, the Habsburg is at work!

'Great danger threatens our Homeland, for evil and slimy fingers are grasping at their crown. The dago boy (*der welsche Jungling*), Otto, and his still more dago and devilish mother are pushing their way back to power. . . .

'*Volksgenossen!* The offspring of the imperial traitors, brought up in hatred of everything German, is to become ruler of this country and leader of its people. . . .'¹

Mussolini allowed five weeks to pass after Göring's visit. Then on 26 February Gayda, the mouthpiece of the Fascist régime, published an article in the *Giornale d'Italia* condemning the idea of a Habsburg restoration in Vienna; afterwards Ciano conveyed a message to the Austrian Cabinet that the article had become necessary in order to demonstrate the solidarity of the Axis to the French, but it was rather a matter of placating Hitler. Towards the end of April the unfortunate Schuschnigg was received in Venice and feted with Mozart and Schubert played from a garlanded ship among a fleet of gondolas on the Grand Canal. While Schuschnigg was laying a wreath where the Austro-Hungarian sailors who had fallen in the last war were buried on the Isola San Michele, Mussolini in person visited the *Milwaukee*, the Nazi *Kraft durch Freude* ship which was anchored in Venice flying its huge swastika flag for the occasion—it was pointed out that this was the first time the Duce had trodden Nazi 'soil'. Italy's abandonment of Austria, implicit in her policy since the dropping of Starhemberg, was felt to be shiftily admitted.

It was on 22 April that the main political conversation between the Austrian Chancellor and Mussolini and Ciano took place. Mussolini explained that the Franco-British Press had

¹ This came into my hands in Vienna at the time.

been claiming that Italy was faced with the choice: Anschluss or restoration. Hence Gayda's reply. It had also been necessary in order to facilitate his *rapprochement* with Belgrade.¹ Now the West was saying Italy had chosen the Anschluss. 'This is false. The alternative does not exist. Neither solution is urgent.' The Duce then analysed to Schuschnigg his relations with Berlin. First, he needed Germany against Britain. Second, the authoritarian governments as such are drawn together by common enmities though 'it is manifest that there are substantial differences between Fascism and National Socialism. We are Catholics, proud of our religion which we revere. We do not admit racialistic theories, least of all in their juridical consequences. Finally we differ over economic plans.' But the Axis has become essential. The maintenance of Austrian independence must be synchronized and harmonized with this. And the Duce even echoed Göring's reproaches against Austria's infidelity to the July Agreement which Germany had violated from the moment of its signature.

With his usual clumsy sincerity Schuschnigg insisted that he himself remained an unshaken, if academic, supporter of the Habsburgs. He also referred to a common interest between Austria and Czechoslovakia, though no political agreement existed nor was planned between them; he told Mussolini that Hodža, the Czechoslovak Prime Minister, had recently informed him that Prague desired a *rapprochement* with Italy, while if she found herself isolated by the other powers Czechoslovakia would be thrust into the arms of Russia. Two further details in this conversation should not go unrecorded. Apropos the restoration, Mussolini spoke of his own faith in monarchy as an institution while Schuschnigg told him that Neurath, himself a South German, on his recent visit to Vienna had said that Germany opposed the restoration because of the attraction a monarchy in Austria would exert on southern Germany.²

In general conversation at Venice Mussolini assured Schuschnigg that if the events of 1934 were repeated—it was obvious that they would not be—he would act in exactly the same way, while Ciano declared that Italy was now protecting Austria no longer militarily but through the Axis, politically, and both of

¹ An Italo-Yugoslav Treaty was signed on 25 Mar. 1937.

² All this is recorded in Ciano's Minute of 22 Apr. 1937.

them bandied about their catchword about the Germans being dangerous enemies but difficult friends. At the same time, under Alfieri's direction, Italian journalists disseminated typical Nazi phrases about Austria, and before Schuschnigg was back in Vienna another Gayda article appeared announcing that a Nazi Minister—Glaise and Schmidt only counted as 'national'—would soon join the Austrian Cabinet. According to Zernatto, Ciano had half-sponsored the Austrian Nazi Memorandum demanding this when he spoke to Guido Schmidt at Venice, but now he hastened to support Schuschnigg's *démenti* and to disavow Gayda—the point in question, he said, had not been raised. According to Ciano's record as it stands this is true. But when he received Neurath in Rome on 3 May, Mussolini said that he had advised Schuschnigg 'di prendere una rappresentazione dei partiti nazionali'. Even if this had only been said on some informal occasion it seems unlikely that Schuschnigg would have forgotten it so soon. It is always possible that Mussolini's German was at fault, especially in dealing with fine distinctions between 'national' and Nazi groupings. The Duce also told Neurath that he had forbidden Schuschnigg to approach Prague in any way, since this would involve Austria in the democratic system and annul the Rome Protocols. Neurath spoke of Britain's clear intention to strike first at Italy, then at Germany, or even at both together. After a brief consideration of 'the internal conditions of Russia and the relations between Germany, Italy, and Japan, the discussion ended'.¹

Hitler's steady drive towards his Italian alliance was making itself powerfully felt, and the idea of an ally, even Italian or yellow, brought a certain consolation to the German spirit. The Führer had not forgotten that he desired a German-Italian-British Triplice, and for this he had sent Ribbentrop, another Nazi foreign expert, more dogmatic than Göring, indeed *plus hitlérien que Hitler*, as Ambassador to London. In May the German Press began to suggest that the Axis was pro-British, and when Blomberg returned from George VI's coronation deeply impressed by Britain, the Germans began to assume the role of mediators between London and Rome, who were now on such bad terms that only three British newspapers were allowed to

¹ Ciano Minute, 3 May 1937. The trials in Russia gave satisfaction to the Axis Powers.

enter Italy; this was because Britain had invited the Negus to the coronation. Indeed, the Triple Alliance upon which he had determined proved to be Hitler's mirage—since both Germany and Italy felt affronted each time the other one angled for the favour of Britain; Mussolini was suspicious now of Sir Neville Henderson's nomination to Berlin as a British advance to Germany. About this time a Palazzo Chigi wit was heard to murmur: 'Datemi un asse e vi farò un' altalena.'¹

All this triangular trouble came to a head absurdly enough when Blomberg accepted the invitation Ciano had sent to him in March; at last he arrived in Italy in June. The Italians were thoroughly nervous about his visit, and apart from the fairly good impression made upon Blomberg by the Navy and Air Force—not by the Army—everything went wrong at the great review at Naples on 7 June. In the pageant of Italian military history Bligny and Argonne made an unfortunate appearance. It was terribly hot and Blomberg perspired a good deal and was concerned to observe the effect of the weather upon the immaculate component parts of his uniform. He entirely discomfited the Italians by asking for a drink of orangeade; there was every kind of wine and vermouth to be had, but it took them three-quarters of an hour to satisfy the Marshal's sober wish. At one point the great soldier was conspicuously unnerved by being piloted by the Duce himself on a short flight. On the boat to Capri afterwards he began to talk with tactless enthusiasm about Britain and finally gave an icy interview to Morgagni, the Stefani representative—'I can't understand these people', sighed the good Fascist, Starace, in disgust.

Mussolini's vanity and confusion of values from his own point of view—his lack of grasp—were revealed in the dispatch which he now ordered Ciano to send to Attolico. Blomberg had said to Morgagni that it was not his affair to make judgements about the military qualities of the Italians. 'I shall begin by saying', wrote Ciano, 'that no one asked him to pronounce any such judgement. We have proved ourselves on too many battlefields to have need of approval and recommendation even from Marshal Blomberg.' Attolico is to exert himself to induce Blomberg to add 'because their valour is proven'. 'This would

¹ 'Give me an axis and I will make you a see-saw.' The word *asse* lends itself exactly to this sentence.

certainly be useful and would please no one more than the Duce', concludes Ciano. He himself had been further exasperated on the very day of Blomberg's departure by a visit from Hassell announcing that Neurath was accepting an invitation to London. 'Von Hassell', he noted on 14 June,¹ 'failed to conceal his satisfaction over the imminent political activity of his Minister', he himself having always done his utmost in support of an Anglophile policy.

It was in this same month that Mussolini made up his mind to accept the invitation which Hans Frank had brought him, and himself to travel to Germany to visit the Führer. He was willing to come, he intimated, upon two conditions, that he should bring no civilian evening clothes and that it should be possible for him to have contact—and here he used the German phrase—*mit der grossen Menge*: the great Tribune wished to show that he could move more than one people. For a year now he had been trying to deceive himself and the world into thinking of the Austro-German Agreement as coming within the framework of the Rome-Vienna-Budapest economic alliance presided over by himself. Of late Poland and Yugoslavia had become more and more friendly to Italy as an unprovocative counterpoise to the new strength of Germany, and Mussolini thought of complementing his visit to Berlin by a conference with Austria, Hungary, Yugoslavia, and Poland. But the Germans had no intention of encouraging the tendency of the minor states to cluster around the less alarming dictator, and in the end Mussolini refused even to receive the Austrian and Hungarian Ministers in Berlin. The Italian Embassy there noticed that Guido Schmidt visited Goring between the announcement of Mussolini's visit and his arrival.

For the visit was announced on 4 September as an imminent meeting of the Chiefs of the Two Revolutions, and Mussolini left Rome on 23 September, with the three Ministers, Ciano, Alfieri, and Starace, and a retinue of about a hundred people; a new gala Fascist Militia uniform had been designed for the occasion. At Innsbruck the Duce reviewed the Austrian *Jäger*. At the German-Austrian frontier he was met by Hess, Frank, General List, Attolico, and Hassell, all, of course, in uniform, but it is a little bizarre to find that Hassell, the would-be anti-

¹ Ciano Minute, 14 June 1937. Later Neurath's visit to London was cancelled.

Nazi, had preceded Mussolini from Rome dressed in the uniform of the N.S.K.K. (*National-Sozialistische Kraftfuhrer Korps*).¹

At Munich, the factory of Hitler's predominantly Bavarian brand of Pan-Germanism, the Fuhrer himself appeared in the military version of the Nazi Party uniform, brown peak cap, brown tunic and shirt with black trousers. Everything was superlatively and gigantically organized at Munich, where it was not the German State but the National Socialist Party which was fêting the sister revolution.

To inaugurate the proceedings Mussolini laid a wreath upon the memorial to the Nazi 'martyrs' of the abortive 1923 *Putsch*. After a magnificent lunch-party given by the Party at the Brown House there was a S.S. goose-stepping parade which the impressionable Duce was never to forget. After the Party the Reichswehr had its turn, and displayed its many-sided strength in the manœuvres at Mecklenburg and in Krupp's workshops in Essen; Mussolini was tremendously impressed by the Krupp production figures. At Hanover the mayor presented the Duce with one of the famous Hanoverian breed of horses. This probably gave rise to the story which was afterwards told of the horse Mussolini brought from Italy and then, to his chagrin, could not ride in Germany in deference to Hitler's equestrian incapacity. Hitler wrote off horses as fit for museums but not for the great new mechanical age which his genius bestrode.

Lastly the capital received the state visit of the ruler of Italy. Berlin roared its welcome as best it could from behind the S.S. and police cordons, and the Press announced, as it had on and off since 1933, the end of the principles of 1789. Before the climax on the Maifeld on 28 September, when Mussolini was to have his mass contact by addressing the Berliners in German, Goring gave a lunch-party at Karinhall and took his revenge for many of their meetings in Italy by 'tickling up' the more sensitive nervous system of the Italian. Goring's young lioness made Mussolini jumpy; what was worse, the Chief of the Luftwaffe kept the unfortunate Head of the Italian Government playing with his toy electric trains until a short time before the great demonstration was due to begin.

¹ Neurath grumbled at his trial at Nuremberg that Hitler had forced him into S.S. uniform on this occasion; it was, no doubt, in revenge for June 1934. See Chapter II above.

A crowd of about 800,000 was gathered. Hitler spoke first and then Mussolini. But of course when it came to public open-air oratory, in spite of the most meticulous rehearsals before-hand, the foreigner's intonation and his gestures made his speech unintelligible. And then, half-way through, there was a tremendous thunderstorm. The loud-speakers behaved as if they were possessed by devils, and Mussolini's carefully prepared notes were soaked by the downpour of rain. Most remarkable of all, German organization suffered a total breakdown and such confusion set in that Mussolini returned alone with his chauffeur; he was soaked to his skin and in a state of collapse. It is worth noting here an indication of his lack of self-confidence: at seven o'clock the next morning he sent for Magistrati to ask whether he had been right to say *Frieden* and not *Friede*. The context had been the sentence 'To the whole world, which is anxiously asking what will be the result of the meeting in Berlin—will it be war or peace?—we can both answer, the Führer and I, *with a loud voice*: "peace"'. Magistrati happened to notice that the words in italics had been added to Mussolini's notes in pencil; his texts were always changed about a great deal. It is also worth noting that the Duce's duodenal ulcer had made itself felt again earlier in this same year, though his doctor expressed satisfaction about him to some of the entourage on his arrival in Munich: it was not until the strain of 1942 that the ulcer made Mussolini seriously ill.

This visit of the Duce's was important for a number of reasons. No specific agreements, published or secret, were made, and Mussolini told Schuschnigg that Austria had not been mentioned so that nothing had changed. Goring told Lipski that when he showed Mussolini a map with Austria marked as incorporated in Germany, the Duce had said, 'Well, you *are* getting on with things, but isn't Czechoslovakia disagreeably in the way?' There is, of course, no reason to accept Goring's word, except in so far as Paul Schmidt confirmed it.¹ According to Mussolini it was agreed that nothing should be done about Austria *senza reciproca preventiva informazione*.² In fact the two dictators themselves scarcely had time for a tête-à-tête and no

¹ See p. 74, note 1.

² Or rather, according to Ciano, Mussolini mentioned this to Ribbentrop on 6 Nov. 1937.

preparation had been made for a discussion between them. But the impression Nazi Germany made upon Mussolini was probably the most profound impression of his life. Here was power beyond all his megalomaniac dreams, and it would be well, he felt in the glow of the experience, not to hesitate to identify Fascist Italy with it. 'When Fascism has a friend', he had screamed on the *Maifeld*, 'it will march with that friend to the last.' On reaching the Austro-German frontier on his journey south he invited Hitler to revisit Italy. It appears that this time in Germany there had been no friction between them, and Hitler had allowed Mussolini his fair share of applause. Certainly the unstable Mussolini easily revised his 1934 judgement; the personification of so much might and glory who was also one's political partner was not someone to be despised or even disliked. From this time he joined the ranks of those who reacted to the Fuhrer's fascination, a fact of which Ciano was to complain bitterly in the following years.

As for Hitler, long ago he had decided that Mussolini was a genius second only to himself; as time passed he became aware that the Italians did not fit very well into his scheme of things; he convinced himself that only Mussolini could marshal them as he, the Fuhrer, wished. At the *Maifeld* he spoke of Mussolini as one of those rare geniuses, not made by history, but makers of it, and from his recurring references at highly secret conferences to Mussolini's genius¹ there is no reason to question his sincerity. It undoubtedly pleased him to have led Germany out of her isolation so obviously, and to speak of 115 million men united in defence of the Nazi and Fascist revolutions. He was incapable of conversation, and his relations with the Duce were the better because declamation had been the order of the day. Most important of all, henceforward he knew in his subconscious way that he had not merely reversed the position of June 1934, but that he had established a personal ascendancy over Mussolini. There was nothing more to wait for profitably, and he was ready, therefore, for offensive action abroad, as he had been within Germany in the spring of 1933. Far from the period of surprises being over, as he had announced in January 1937,² it was about to begin in earnest.

¹ e.g. at that at the Reichskanzlei on 5 Nov. 1937, when he spoke of Italy as *geführt durch ein Genie*.

² Speech to the Reichstag, 30 Jan. 1937.

VI

Austria Lost and Won

SIX weeks after Mussolini had left Germany, on the afternoon of Friday, 5 November 1937, Hitler held a secret four hours' meeting at the Reichskanzlei with Göring, Blomberg, Fritsch, Raeder, and Neurath, a meeting since associated with the adjutant who recorded it, Colonel Hoszbach;¹ the Fuhrer, who was always haunted by a consciousness of the Hero's race with death, demanded that the statements he then made 'be looked upon in the case of his death as his last will and testament'.

The gist of these statements was that Germany required to conquer territory in order not to depend upon imported food, and that the time had come to set about this conquest. 'If the Fuhrer is still living, then it will be his irrevocable decision to solve the German space problem not later than 1943-5', but there will probably be earlier opportunities. A preliminary to be tackled at once is the conquest of Austria-cum-Czechoslovakia, the essential nucleus of the Austria of 1914.

† Clearly Hitler already hoped to strike at the Austrians and Czechs in 1938, for he believed—indeed he hoped—that the Spanish imbroglio might draw France into war with Italy, leaving him 'free' to move.

'... From the German point of view,' he said, 'a one hundred per cent. victory by Franco is not desirable; we are more interested in a continuation of the war and the preservation of the tensions in the Mediterranean. Should Franco be in sole possession of the Spanish peninsula, it would mean the end of Italian intervention and the presence of Italy in the Balearic Isles. As our interests are directed towards continuing the war in Spain it must be the task of our future policy to strengthen² Italy in her fight to hold on to the Balearic Isles. However, a stabilization³ of Italian positions in the Balearic

¹ It was not verbally recorded, but the Hoszbach Minute is considered to give a sufficiently accurate account of what was said. See L. B. Namier, *Diplomatic Prelude* (Macmillan, 1948), p. 213 n. What Professor Namier says about Schmundt's, applies equally to Hoszbach's, records.

² *den Rücken für weiteren Verbleib zu stärken*. By the secret agreement signed on 28 Nov. 1936, Italy had guaranteed Spanish integrity.

³ *Festssetzen*.

Isles cannot be tolerated either by France or by England and might lead to a war by France and England against Italy. . . .

'The date of our attack on Czechoslovakia and Austria must be made independent of the course of the Italian-French-English war and would not be simultaneous with the beginning of military operations by these three states. He was also not thinking of military agreements with Italy, but he wished to begin operations against Czechoslovakia, exploiting this uniquely favourable opportunity in complete independence. The attack on Czechoslovakia would have to take place with the speed of lightning¹. . . .'

Earlier Hitler, as usual, spoke of Mussolini as a genius, but his callousness towards Italy as one among the pawns in his game was complete. 'No opposition', said Hitler to his military chiefs on 5 November, 'to the removal of Czechoslovakia or Austria is expected on the part of Italy; on the other hand it is impossible to judge at the moment how her attitude in the Austrian question should be interpreted, for it essentially depends upon whether the Duce is still alive when it comes to the point.'

Why was it so important that Germany should not need to import food? Because Hitler's fundamental intention to dominate the world in order to establish his caste system required a war during which much importation would be suspended. The declarations of 5 November, however, show that Hitler has abandoned the idea of a Triple Alliance with Italy and Britain, and is falling back without great enthusiasm upon the geopolitical triangle with Japan in Britain's place; Italy is in fact to be his most useful weapon *against* Britain.

It has been seen that one of Mussolini's worst mistakes lay in his contempt for the Czechs; another fatal error in his career ~~was his misconception~~ with regard to Britain. This misconception was perhaps the thing which, thanks to their ignorance, the two dictators most completely shared; it was certainly one of the grave miscalculations in Hitler's life. In 1936 and 1937 it grew into contempt for Britain in the minds of both Fuhrer and Duce, thanks to the weakness they thought Britain showed during the Abyssinian and Spanish wars. Of course there were the old stories of Ireland and India, but on 5 November Hitler adds to these:

¹ '(1) The weakening of the British position in the Far East by Japan.

¹ *blitzartig schnell.*

(2) The opposition in the Mediterranean by Italy which . . . is expanding its power position and must consequently infringe British interests to an increasing extent. The outcome of the Abyssinian War is a loss of prestige for Britain which Italy is endeavouring to increase by stirring up discontent in the Mohammedan World.'

The choice between Britain and Japan was an issue between the programme of *Mein Kampf* supported by the anti-Nazi or less Nazi generals and diplomats, as against the Nazi leaders, especially the geo-politicians and the S.S. It is interesting that over this point Ribbentrop and the Party—or was it the mere chance of circumstances?—defeated Hitler's original plan. At first the Germans approached the Japanese in order to break the isolation to which Italy, too, seemed to have condemned the Nazi Reich, but this very approach will be seen to have led by degrees from the Anti-Komintern Pact to the Italo-German military alliance and finally to the Italo-German-Japanese Tripartite Pact of September 1940.

When the S.S.-Fuhrer Ribbentrop failed to take London by storm, he swung violently over from enthusiasm for the nordicism of his Anglo-Saxon brothers to enthusiasm for the nordic vitality of the Japs. Britain, he had soon decided, was decadent and pluto-bolshevik. Through his acquaintance with Mrs. Simpson he had in 1936 expected to exert influence over a reigning monarch and one whom he believed to be susceptible to Germanic notions.¹ Thanks to a complete inability to comprehend the constitutional development of Britain, the abdication of Edward VIII was interpreted by Axis mentality as a sign of decadence instead of resilience, and Ribbentrop's view was coloured by personal pique. It has been seen that already in November 1936 he had significantly enough left London to sign the German-Japanese Anti-Komintern Pact in Berlin, and during 1937, in spite of the luxurious installations in Carlton House Terrace, his restlessness increased. Through his separate S.S. foreign service he had a staff of personal representatives who were constantly *en voyage*. One of them, called Raumer, who was an 'expert' on the Far East, turned up in Rome in the autumn of 1937 and suddenly arranged for his master to follow

¹ See Ciano Minute of 10 Mar. 1940 and Chapter XII below, as also Erich Kordt, *Wahn und Wirklichkeit* (Union deutsche Verlagsgesellschaft, Stuttgart, 1947), p. 82.

him. Neurath and Hassell were not unnaturally annoyed, but Ciano knew through tapped telephone conversations that the Anglophile Hassell despised and belittled the Italian Foreign Minister; it was, therefore, Ciano who particularly welcomed Ribbentrop to Rome towards the end of October 1937, only six years before the trial at Verona, and Mussolini, too, was bound to rejoice in again receiving so direct a representative of the Führer. Within less than a fortnight, and one day after the Reichskanzlei meeting, Ribbentrop was in Rome again to sign, on 6 November 1937, the adhesion of Italy to the Anti-Komintern Pact.¹ On this occasion Mussolini said everything Ribbentrop could have hoped for. Italy, with Sicily now as her centre of gravity, had become too Mediterranean to care about Austria. He repeated also what he had been saying since the spring and would repeat in March 1938, that if the Austrians wanted the Anschluss he was willing enough for things to take their course.

At the Munich Burgerbrau celebration on 9 November Hitler proudly drew a line under Germany's isolation as a thing of the past. 'Three States have come together. First a European Axis and now a great world-political triangle. . . . It does not consist of three feeble phantoms, but of three states that are ready and determined to realize their rights and vital interests.' When Lord Halifax combined a visit to the hunting exhibition in Berlin with a visit to the Obersalzberg he alluded to the possibility of Germany's return to Geneva as the Germans had themselves suggested in March 1936; this had often been discussed between the Western Powers and Italy, but since July Italy had insisted that Germany should participate in the discussions as an equal. The upshot this time was that Italy at last formally left the League of Nations on 11 December, and within twenty-four hours, as Hitler had promised Attolico, the Deutsches Nachrichten-Buro announced that a return of Germany to the League would never be considered again.

At the Reichskanzlei on 5 November Blomberg, and especially Fritsch, 'repeatedly pointed out that England and France', to whom Hitler had just referred as Germany's two *Hassgegnern*,²

. ¹ Ribbentrop did not tell the Italians about the secret German-Japanese clauses whose existence had been mentioned by Neurath to Ciano.

² This was wrongly translated as 'hateful enemies' at Nuremberg. It is almost untranslatable, but 'hate-filled' would be better than 'hateful'.

'must not appear as our enemies, and they stated that the war with Italy would not bind the French Army to such an extent that it would not be in a position to begin operations on our Western frontier with superior forces'. Fritsch, if less emphatically than his Chief of Staff, Beck, represented the conservative caution of the Army as against the Party's *élan*. It was even said¹ that in September, in the presence of Hitler and Göring, Fritsch had remarked to Mussolini that he alone was the *oberste Chef der Wehrmacht*, and if it came to it this would mean that the Air Force, too, must obey him.

Now that Hitler had decided upon action, those who responded half-heartedly must be removed. It was a preliminary part of the move against Schuschnigg and Beneš to dismiss Fritsch and Blomberg and the old-school diplomats like Neurath and Hassell. The method of dismissal of the generals was carried out in such typically Nazi fashion that a brief reference should be made to it now that the rumours one heard at the time have turned out to be true. Blomberg was not very popular with the Army; he had been thought to be too servile to Hitler and was nicknamed 'the rubber lion' or, after the Nazi propaganda film, *Hitlerjunge Quex*. Himmler deliberately allowed him to marry an ex-prostitute and Hitler and Göring to be witnesses of the ceremony on 12 January 1938 because blackmail potentialities always came in useful to the chief of the Gestapo. When Fritsch protested at the slur on the Army's honour, a homosexual blackmailer who had evidence dating from 1934 against a General Frisch was brought into play, and Fritsch let himself be put aside although a Military Court established his innocence.² No new Minister of War was appointed in succession to Blomberg, but on 4 February Hitler became Commander-in-Chief of all the Armed Forces, with Keitel as his *Chef des Oberkommando der Wehrmacht* and Jodl immediately under Keitel.

It might have been thought that Neurath was sufficiently cynical not to get in Hitler's way, but Hitler and Ribbentrop were now determined that Ribbentrop should be Foreign Minister. So Neurath, from whom no protest had come on 5 November, had to make way. As for Hassell, he had expressed too many doubts about the Axis, and, among other things, he was blamed for Blomberg's demeanour at Naples; the Prince of

¹ Cf. Zernatto, op. cit., p. 190.

² See full account quoted by R. Pechel, op.cit.

Hesse joined in the chorus against him and hoped to get his job, but in January 1938 Hassell was merely sent on leave, and for months the German Embassy in Rome remained without a chief. Perhaps it suited Hitler that this should be so throughout the period of the Anschluss. The atmosphere in Germany at the end of January and beginning of February 1938 may be measured by the postponement of Hitler's 30 January Reichstag speech (until 20 February) and by the precipitate flight to Italy of, among others, the German ex-Crown-Prince,¹ who was, it is true, notoriously easy to alarm.

For a moment it seemed as if the arch-intriguer, Papen, that genius in being all things to all men, was to be a victim of this purge. He had seemed to be getting on very nicely in Vienna and in Guido Schmidt he had found a twin soul in treachery. He had always opposed S.A. violence in Austria such as that which was continually planned by Captain Leopold, but the star of the S.S. had been in the ascendant since 1934, and with its representatives Seyss-Inquart and the 'economic expert', Keppler, Papen appeared to be on the best of terms; he was, moreover, playing his favourite trick of arranging personal contact, and from December 1937 was pressing for a Hitler-Schuschnigg interview. Suddenly on 5 February he was rung up by a minor official in the German Foreign Office and told that he had been recalled and was to leave Vienna immediately. He went off not merely crestfallen but scared, but he managed to see Hitler, persuade him that the interview could be made into part of the action against Austria, and to return to Vienna to fetch Schuschnigg only a few days later. It was characteristic of Hitler, of the romantic adolescent part of his split personality, that he retained a certain tenderness for Papen on account of Papen's share in bringing the German Nazis into power. Hitler knew that he required for his purposes criminal characters who would be faithful only to his person, and he loved to romanticize all this as his own Heroic response to fidelity. At Berchtesgaden Schuschnigg heard the following interchange:

Hitler. Sie haben in der entscheidenden Stunde im Jahre 1933 das Reich vom Abgrund gerettet, in dem Sie den 30. Januar ermöglichten.

¹ See Zernatto (op. cit.), to whom Austrian frontier authorities reported the arrival of the Crown Prince without luggage or passport.

Papen. Jawohl, mein Führer.

Hitler. Das werde ich Ihnen nie vergessen, Herr von Papen, sonst wäre noch alles im Kommunismus versunken.¹

The situation in Austria had deteriorated steadily since July 1936, if a little more slowly than some people had feared. Reporting to Berlin on 1 September 1936, Papen recommended 'continued patient, psychological treatment with slowly intensified pressure, aimed at changing the régime'. The Austro-German Agreement was particularly corrosive of Schuschnigg's resistance in that, like nearly all Austrians of his ex-officer category, he was hypersensitive to any accusation of disloyalty to the *Deutschtum* of the Austrian State which had now been re-emphasized. Another corrosive factor was as operative here as among the Sudeten Germans; this was the impression deliberately created by the Nazis that, though Austria would become part of Germany, she would retain her autonomy. To the last Seyss-Inquart feigned to be working only for this, and not merely large numbers of Austrians, but many foreign politicians, not excluding Mussolini and Ciano, were naïve enough to presume that Austria would be allowed some kind of home rule.

Though the S.S. in Austria as in Germany were steadily gaining in importance, Hitler continued to make use of their rivals of the S.A. In the autumn Schuschnigg was persuaded to allow the formation of what was called the *Siebener Komiteé* in part from among people associated with the old S.A. plotter, Leopold; its objective was defined as 'to pacify and attract "national" forces to co-operate with the Patriotic Front', the Austrian Government organization. In other words, Nazi activity became increasingly barefaced, and Nazis insinuated themselves into all sorts of positions in the Ministries, police, and Patriotic Front.

In November 1937, although only seven people had been present at the Reichskanzlei meeting of the 5th, there were numerous indications of the events that were to come. Austria, of course, was constantly accused by the Nazis of breaking her pledges of July 1936. Göring received a group of Austrian industrialists in Berlin and told them that the foreign guns upon

¹ Schuschnigg, op. cit. 'In the decisive hour in 1933 you saved the Reich from the Abyss by making 30 January possible. . . . I shall never forget that you did that, otherwise everything would have rotted into Communism.'

which they were counting would never shoot: afterwards he made an ironical apology. In the same month a provocative interview in a Slovene paper given by Tavs, a member of the *Siebener Komité*, caused the Austrian police to search the Committee's office in the Teinfaltstrasse in Vienna. There among all kinds of incriminating material was found a plan labelled R. H., the initials of Rudolf Hess, the Fuhrer's Deputy. According to this Seyss-Inquart (who had expressed the gravest disapprobation of the *Siebener Komité* to Schuschnigg) was to be brought into the Government with Glaise-Horstenau and Guido Schmidt; then three months later, that is, after three months of Nazi terrorization, a plebiscite was to be held. There was also provision for the murder of Papen or some other member of the German Legation in Vienna, the crime to be attributed to the Austrian Legitimists; it was thought that something of the kind might excite the Yugoslavs into convenient activities. According to the R. H. plan 'Italy will not be able to intervene as she will be much too much occupied with other matters. . . . She will certainly do nothing to prevent a change in the Austrian Government if this change is based on the pretext of the requirements of the Treaty' (of July 1936). It is interesting that at about the same time Göring was playing up the poor Habsburg ghost to Ambassador Bullitt.¹ 'There are schemes', he said, 'being pushed now for a union of Austria, Hungary and Czechoslovakia, either with or without a Habsburg at the head of the union . . . for us the conclusion of such an agreement would be an immediate *casus belli*.' His tongue must have been bulging out of his cheek, for whatever some Legitimists may have hoped,² there was never the slightest possibility of a Habsburg restoration on this scale. The Hungarians had their revisionist appetite whetted at just about this time by indications from Berlin that Czechoslovakia was soon to be partitioned,³ and they would not have dreamt of compromising themselves with the Czechs. Although he suggested that Germany was still holding back on account of Italy, Göring on the same occasion stated plainly that 'Germany would tolerate no solution of the Austrian

¹ Dispatch from Bullitt to Washington, 23 Nov. 1937.

² Cf. Otto of Habsburg's offer to Schuschnigg on 17 Feb. 1938: see below.

³ Already at Gombos' funeral a year earlier Göring had remarked to Kanya that Czechoslovakia would have to be liquidated in two or three years' time. See Ciano Minutes, 9-16 Nov. 1936.

Question other than the consolidation of Austria in the German Reich'; 'consolidation in' scarcely sounds like local autonomy.

Towards the end of 1937 and the beginning of 1938 there was a slight change in Italy's attitude. Mussolini was still agreeably excited retrospectively by his visit to Germany and all the more, prospectively, in planning his reception of Hitler in Italy. Nevertheless, a little more emphasis was laid upon the independence of Austria, and Ciano was fairly reassuring to Schuschnigg at their Rome Protocols meeting in Budapest in January, though the Axis was emphasized again as the base of the Rome-Vienna-Budapest triangle. The Palazzo Chigi was puzzled and annoyed by the endless intrigues of Guido Schmidt, and replaced Salata by a new Italian Minister in Vienna, a man named Ghigi, who was known to be a man of energy. Ever since the Abyssinian War there had been talk of an Italian-German economic agreement, but nothing had come of it. Ciano now wrote personally to Göring explaining what, for instance, Italy required from Germany for her fleet, but he got no encouragement and felt irritated. This led to renewed consideration of the possibility of a *détente* with Britain, which Neville Chamberlain's mentality was likely to facilitate.

In Berlin the leaders varied between reproaching the British, especially their Press, for showing no comprehension of the needs of 'German unity' and reproaching British Ministers like Halifax for making no objections to the Anschluss in the hope of weakening the Axis. After Halifax's visit in November Hitler spoke in this sense, this time to Renzetti. There was something in it. Chamberlain, it seems, really believed that German action against Austria would goad Italy into resisting it and make her come to terms with Britain. So late as 3 February Mussolini spoke to Ciano and Magistrati very excitedly as if he were on the verge of war with the British in accordance with Hitler's hopes, but on the 8th Italo-British conversations began in London. From then on until it was too late Mussolini's advice to Schuschnigg was to play for time. The British were the suitors because Mussolini could do more than they to save Austria, and he wished to wait for the better terms he might get if Eden were sacrificed to the blindness of Chamberlain. Ultimately, Schuschnigg was to hope, Hitler might not dare to act if Rome and London had been reconciled; further, his

forthcoming visit to Rome had been announced and might act as a brake. The Duce's advice probably contributed to Schuschnigg's acquiescence when his visit to Berchtesgaden was proposed. Eden himself was willing enough to negotiate with Italy if it helped to save Austria, but when he brought up the Austrian Question with Grandi he was told that that subject could not enter into any Anglo-Italian conversation.

The waiting manoeuvre was entirely illusory; it gave the Austrian leaders false hopes and diverted their efforts into fatal directions. While Mussolini was waiting for Hitler to drive Eden out of office for him,¹ Chamberlain refused a show of energy on behalf of Austria, as suggested by the French, in order not to annoy Mussolini. If Hitler, who had made up his mind, was affected by all this, his determination to act quickly was strengthened: there should be no Austria left by the time Britain and Italy came to terms in April. Instead of publishing the material found in the Teinfaltstrasse and challenging the world as to which party was breaking the Austro-German Agreement, Schuschnigg kept it to himself and went to Berchtesgaden to be upbraided for *his* 'treachery'.

Few things are more illuminating in studying Hitler and his relations with Mussolini than Schuschnigg's account of his visit to ~~Berchtesgaden on 12 February 1938~~. An honest man had fallen among thieves. Schuschnigg travelled with Guido Schmidt as his companion. At the Salzburg frontier they were met by Papen, who told them that the Fuhrer was in the best of moods, but would they mind that quite by chance several generals had also arrived at the Berghof? 'Who?' Why, only Keitel, Reichenau, and Sperrle, a Luftwaffe general who was back from Spain. When they arrived they were met by Hitler in his habitual brown and black uniform accompanied by these three to create a congenial atmosphere.

Then Schuschnigg was closeted with Hitler.¹ 'To start with he was harshly scolded because Austria had not left Geneva; of course his undertaking to pursue a German policy had involved this. Austria's whole history was one long betrayal. Now Hitler is determined to put an end to this story of treachery. 'I have', he declares, 'an historic task and I shall fulfil it because Providence has determined that I shall. . . . I have had to tread the

¹ Cf. Gayda's article against Eden in the *Berliner Tageblatt* on 4 Jan. 1938.

most difficult path to which any German was ever condemned, and I have played a greater part in German history than that to which any other German was destined. Not through force—I am supported by the love of my people. . . .’

There were a great many threats. How dare Schuschnigg fortify the frontier against Germany? Austria could not hold Hitler up half an hour if he should decide to act. ‘I may be in Vienna overnight like a storm in the spring! Then you will experience something. . . . After the troops will come the S.A. and the [Austrian] Legion and no one will be able to prevent their revenge, not even I!’

Schuschnigg timidly interpolated that all that might mean war.

‘You wish to take the responsibility for that, Mr. Schuschnigg?’¹ is roared back at him. ‘Do not believe that anyone in the world can impede my decisions.’ Italy?—‘*mit Italien bin ich im reinen*,’² there is the closest friendship between us.’ Then, with grotesque insinuations about the Halifax visit, Schuschnigg is assured that England will not move and that France lost her last chance in March 1936, when she could, if she had acted, have thrown the Germans back sixty kilometres immediately. . . .

‘I am not bluffing’, said Hitler; ‘my whole career proves that sufficiently. I have achieved all that I intended and have thus perhaps become the greatest German in history; unlike Mussolini I don’t go in for much talking or prenotification; his style is quite another thing. But besides mine, there are other great German names; if I close my eyes to-day everything is planned. We have a Göring, a Hess, a Frick, an Epp, and countless others. I give you the one chance of your life, Mr. Schuschnigg, to add your name to that of Germany’s great men.’

After two hours of this kind of conversation there was an interval for lunch. At table Hitler talked about the biggest buildings in the world, a bridge in Hamburg, &c., which he would build. Schuschnigg would have liked to smoke after lunch but that was not allowed;³ already the Byzantine atmosphere weighed heavily upon the visitor from the East.

¹ *Herr Schuschnigg* was an insulting way of addressing his visitor. In German no one who holds an official position is ever addressed as plain ‘Mr.’

² Again, like so much of Hitler’s German, very difficult to translate—perhaps ‘I have cleared up everything with Italy’.

³ He was a heavy smoker, but Hitler’s objection to smoking was played up deliberately. See *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, pt. xvi, pp. 191–2.

At 2 p.m. Hitler withdrew. Schuschnigg was kept waiting two hours; he was made aware that, by turns with him, Hitler was discussing Austria with a leading Viennese Nazi called Muhlmann, who had also arrived at the Berghof. Then Schuschnigg and Guido Schmidt were summoned into a small room where they found Ribbentrop and Papen and a seven-point ultimatum. Before Schuschnigg left Vienna Papen had promised him that the Agreement of July 1936 would not be questioned, only its better functioning was to be discussed. Now Papen declared he was completely taken by surprise. The seven points were simply part of the 'action' to destroy Austria, and are not particularly relevant here. It is enough to say that each one spelt the negation of Austrian sovereignty, from the first which demanded that Seyss-Inquart should be given all police powers in Austria to the sixth which claimed 'das freie Bekenntnis zur nationalsozialistischen Weltanschauung':¹ then suddenly point seven renewed 'the recognition of the independence and sovereignty of the Federal State of Austria'.

After a desultory dispute over all this Schuschnigg was brought back into the presence of the Fuhrer. When he stated that he could not commit Austria by signing, there must be three days for Vienna—the Federal President—to accede, Hitler became stormy, at once called for Keitel, and abruptly dismissed Schuschnigg. Outside Guido Schmidt kept up the intensified pressure by remarking to him that they would probably be arrested next. Then came another favourite trick. Schuschnigg was told that 'for the first time in his life' Hitler would change his mind and allow the three days. Germany's man of destiny gradually calmed himself and the Berchtesgaden 'Agreement' was prepared for signature. In the course of further volubility Hitler spoke of Italy again: 'Italy in the case of war can be held with a well-trained Air Force and submarine specialists, she only needs 200,000 highly trained men for this. Those she has. That is enough.' Hitler also made clear that in his view a German Army of 100,000 could knock out the Italian forces.² Here he added, by way of a boast, a threat, and a genuine conviction combined, that he was building up the best Army

¹ = 'the free profession of National-Socialist beliefs'.

² This is not in Schuschnigg's own account published in *Requiem in Rot-Weiss-Rot*, but he told Zernatto and others of it immediately after his return.

rectly; even in 1939 and 1940, when it came to Albania and Greece, Italian action was only half-heartedly incorrect. On 20 February, instead of the guarantee of Austrian sovereignty expected in Vienna and asked for by Rome, Hitler made nothing but an empty reference to Austria in his delayed Reichstag speech which was primarily concerned with a furious attack upon Eden: it also announced the German recognition of Manchukuo.

We now have the extraordinarily interesting account of his conversation with Chamberlain and Eden on 19 February sent by Grandi to Ciano.¹ It is difficult to doubt the facts he provides with regard to Chamberlain's intrigue with him (through another member of the Conservative party) behind Eden's back, for he could have had no motive to invent such a story, and it was obvious that if Chamberlain asked him for ammunition against Eden, as he said, he gladly provided it. With regard to the relations of Italy with Germany and apart from Grandi's refusal to discuss Austria (although Ciano wanted some agreement with London before the Anschluss could take place), the Grandi dispatch raises another interesting point. Chamberlain, quite prepared to accept the answer, asked the Fascist Ambassador whether a bargain had been made by which Italy had given Germany a free hand in Austria in return for German support 'in the Mediterranean and in Europe'. Grandi replied that this was false. So far the material available with regard to the history of the Axis reveals no agreed pirates' bargain of the kind. But the force of events, the diabolical pressure of Hitler, and the inability of his contemporaries to face it, had created a half-analogous situation. Since the summer of 1936 Italy had been able to find no way to avoid giving Germany a free hand in Austria. As for Germany's contribution, that we now know was never to have been made; or rather it was to be so small as only to keep Italy engaged in Spain.

Thus Eden was forced to resign by his own Prime Minister at the very moment of Hitler's scurrilous attack upon him. While it was clear that the issue between them was Italy, Grandi added to Ciano that Chamberlain would do nothing to resist Germany over Austria and that the British attitude over this would remain one of 'indignant resignation'. He noted an

¹ Also published in *L'Europa verso la catastrofe* (Mondadori, 1948).

atmosphere in London comparable with that when the Hoare-Laval plan was announced. But things went the other way now. Eden's resignation left men in office who were willing to accept Guido Schmidt's assurances that Berchtesgaden had witnessed normal negotiations without pressure, and unwilling, therefore, to take any Anglo-French step against Berlin: soon after—it seemed to be part of every Austrian crisis—Paris was without a Government. At last on 24 February, far too late, Schuschnigg made a Thus-far-and-no-farther fighting speech which was well received by the Viennese, but in Styria the Nazis stormed the town hall at Graz and hoisted the swastika.

Of course the Berchtesgaden Agreement was merely a manœuvre for gaining power over Austria without the use of force, without even the bother of an opposed occupation, nothing but a sham mobilization. Graz had begun well and Linz was restive, and Seyss-Inquart encouraged the rest of Austria to follow their example; meanwhile demands exceeding the 'Agreement' continued to arrive from Berlin. At the end of February Schuschnigg made up his mind to appeal to the Austrians and to the world, and to hold a plebiscite to ask his public whether it desired a free German and Christian Austria or not. Possibly Kanya, the Hungarian Foreign Minister, who visited Vienna on 3 March and told him that Hitler was only bluffing, contributed to his decision.

It was clear that Mussolini had written Austria off, if necessary; he would not, that is to say, make a further effort on her behalf. He had sent Salata back to Vienna on a visit, and in consequence journalists nodded their heads, sure that Mussolini had encouraged Schuschnigg to his speech of 24 February. But Salata belonged to the circles who had worked to undermine Austria. At this very juncture it was officially announced that Hitler would pay a state visit to Rome in the first half of May. Too late again Schuschnigg sent for his military attaché in Rome, Colonel Liebitzky, and gave him a full account for Mussolini of what Hitler had said to him at the Berghof, including each reference to Italy; at the same time Liebitzky was to inform the Duce of Schuschnigg's decision to hold a plebiscite. Mussolini received Liebitzky on 7 March very promptly and was clearly not indifferent to Hitler's remarks. But he sent a message back to Schuschnigg to say that the

plebiscite was a mistake because if it turned out a success the Germans would say the result had been faked, if it were a fiasco Austria would be finished, and if it were indecisive it would have been pointless. The fact is that Mussolini was even more interested in the preparation of Hitler's reception in Rome than in Hitler's unflattering comments upon Italy and himself. The obstacle in the way of the success of Hitler's visit was not the question of Austria, but the Vatican's irritation with the anti-Catholic policy of Nazi Germany to which Austria would soon be subjected. At about the time of Mussolini's conversation with Liebitzky, Ciano wrote to Berlin to urge from Hitler some conciliatory gesture towards the Catholic Church, and Magistrati called on Weizsacker for a fruitless conversation on the possibility.

It was on 9 March that Schuschnigg announced his intention to hold a plebiscite on the independence of Austria on Sunday, 13 March. Though the Nazis had typist spies in the Viennese offices they did not control, they do not seem to have got the news more than twenty-four hours before it was publicly announced. It seems that Berlin was genuinely taken by surprise—they had not credited Schuschnigg with so much initiative. It is unlikely that the announcement of the plebiscite altered Hitler's time-table by very much, but it gave him the occasion to occupy Austria. He was enraged by the attempt to put any question to the Austrians other than 'You want to be part of Germany, don't you?' and this only by the time that the organization of any plebiscite would be in Nazi hands. And he was certainly apprehensive as to the result. No one can tell what would have happened. Styria was already under Nazi control, but in Vienna Schuschnigg had at last approached the Socialists and there was widespread anti-Nazi feeling in the capital. On the other hand, the unseen pressure from the Reich was great, and all cautious Austrians would have felt it safer not to commit themselves. At all events, the plebiscite could not, unless he moved now, provide a 99 per cent. vote in the Fuhrer's favour, which was his idea of what a plebiscite should be.

Hitler, oddly enough, still appeared not perfectly sure about Mussolini. At about midday on Friday, 11 March, Philip of Hesse rang up the Italian Embassy in Berlin to say that he

was just leaving with an important and urgent missive for Rome. In the letter which the winged messenger carried that day Hitler wrote to Mussolini:

'In a fateful hour I turn to you, Excellency, to inform you of a decision which the circumstances have seemed to demand and which cannot now be changed. . . .

'In recent months I have seen with growing anxiety how little by little between Austria and Czechoslovakia a relationship has been growing up which we could with difficulty allow in peace-time, but which, in the case of war being imposed upon Germany, would cause the gravest menace to the safety of the Reich.

'In the course of this *rapprochement* (between Austria and Czechoslovakia) the Austrian State has begun to barricade and fortify all the frontiers. The purpose of all this can only be (1) to bring about the Restoration at a given moment, (2) to operate even against Germany if necessary the weight of a mass of at least twenty million people.

'Precisely the close links which bind Germany and Italy have, as was only to be expected, exposed our country to inevitable attacks. . . . The responsibility falls on me to prevent a situation arising in Central Europe which may perhaps, just because of our friendship with Italy, lead to grave complications.'

Hitler went on to say that Schuschnigg had given him assurances not only that all Austrians should receive equal treatment but also that some military security would be established in order that the Austrian State should not become a Czechoslovak annexe. But Schuschnigg had broken his promise from the first day and with his plebiscite proposal had plunged the country into anarchy; Hitler was bound to step in to re-establish order and tranquillity. He felt responsibility, he wrote, both as Germany's Fuhrer and as Austria's son. The Brenner frontier, Hitler states, like the frontiers of France, he regards as immutable; this he had decided in 1918. He refers to the present hour, in which he gives this evidence of the constancy of his feelings, as critical for Italy. The Fuhrer longs to see Mussolini to tell him all that he feels.

This letter is like a flashlight thrown upon the workings of Hitler's Austrian mind; it is like a flashlight thrown also upon his falsity. It is inconceivable that Schuschnigg could forget such references to Czechoslovakia, which, according to his testimony, was not once mentioned at Berchtesgaden. It is possible

that Hitler persuaded himself that he had said these things to Schuschnigg. At all events, when the letter was published in Italy at the week-end, while Hitler's outpourings about the sufferings of the Austrians under Schuschnigg appeared in the papers, everything he had said which related to the Czechoslovak Republic was suppressed,¹ and Goring pledged his word to Prague that the Anschluss meant no kind of threat to the Czechs, the integrity of whose frontiers was assured.

It is clear now, and it is interesting that Hitler was still not absolutely sure of it, that Philip of Hesse's excursion to Rome on 11 March was superfluous, because Mussolini had previously made up his mind, and, as he himself implied in his speech of 16 March, he had done so for the last time not later than Liebitzky's call on 7 March. After seeing Mussolini Hesse telephoned to Hitler from Rome at 10.25 p.m. on 11 March and announced that the Duce had been very friendly about the whole thing. He had told the Austrians that their plebiscite was an impossibility, and when they persisted in it Mussolini had said, 'damit wäre Österreich eine abgetane Angelegenheit für ihn'.² Hitler was ecstatic. According to the record of this conversation he said to Hesse four times that he was to tell the Duce he would never forget this.³ Two and a half years later Ciano noted the tears that came into his eyes at the mere recollection of this occasion. But on the evening of 11 March he made other more important statements to Hesse on the telephone. He was ready, he said, to make quite other agreements with Mussolini now, 'auch jedes Abkommen'.⁴ 'Wenn er jemals in irgendeiner Not oder irgendeiner Gefahr sein sollte, dann kann er überzeugt sein, dass ich auf Biegen und Brechen vor ihm stehe, da kann sein was will, wenn sich auch die Welt gegen ihn erheben wurde. . . .'⁵ In this connexion it may be relevant to quote Jodl's directive to the German armed forces on this same evening: '(1) If Czechoslovakian troops or militia units

¹ See Goring's instructions to Hesse on 12 Mar. in International Military Tribunal document 2949-PS. (U.S.A. 76) Hitler's letter to Mussolini was not published in Germany.

² Approx. = 'in that case he had finished with Austria'.

³ This was also repeated in various public speeches made by Hitler in the next four weeks.

⁴ = 'Indeed every agreement.'

⁵ = 'If he should ever be in any great need or danger, he could be certain that I will protect him to the uttermost, whatever may happen, even if the world should rise against him. . . .'

are encountered in Austria they are to be regarded as hostile. (2) The Italians are everywhere to be treated as friends, especially as Mussolini has declared himself disinterested in the solution of the Austrian question.'

Hesse can scarcely have started his flight when in the early afternoon¹ the Austrian Government received a message from Rome to say that the Italian Government had no advice to give; even if this had come through with every priority, it had to be coded and decoded and must have been drafted in Rome several hours earlier. Mussolini himself appears to have disappeared to Rocca delle Caminate, where the Palazzo Chigi found it impossible to reach him; once he had shown Schuschnigg all the telephonic installations there, adding that he would always be accessible to his Austrian friends. At one moment on that morning of 11 March when Seyss-Inquart and Glaise-Horstenau were threatening him with German invasion unless he immediately resigned in Seyss-Inquart's favour, Schuschnigg tried to put through a call to the Palazzo Venezia, but he himself cancelled it as soon as his visitors had left. Schuschnigg's strangely fatalistic character was an element not to be discounted in this situation, he was so sure that Italy no longer felt concerned: it was perhaps partly this which made the Duce indifferent. Dollfuss or Starhemberg or anyone with temperament might at least have excited Mussolini, but Schuschnigg knew nothing about bluff; he only joined battle when he should have known it was too late.

Hitler indulged in another of his favourite devices at this time. Demand after demand arrived in Vienna: the plebiscite must be called off, Schuschnigg must go, and so on; each time the thing was conceded, the concession was pronounced to be too late and the next demand was put forward. It was all irrelevant, for the German Army had been ordered to invade and occupy Austria at daybreak on 12 March 1938. Hitler himself rushed to his beloved Linz without the usual police precautions and from there once again, this time in a telegram, he repeated to Mussolini that he would never forget. Mussolini wired back: 'My attitude is determined by the friendship between our two countries, which is consecrated in the Axis.'

After the Fascist Grand Council meeting on 12 March it was

¹ See Schuschnigg, *op cit.*

communicated to the press that the Grand Council had taken note of Ciano's statement on Austria; the Austrian Federal Government, he had announced, had not informed the Italian Government of the results of the Berchtesgaden meeting and the action which followed it until they were accomplished facts. The Grand Council also noted that the Italian Government had immediately advised against the Schuschnigg plebiscite proposal, 'both as regards method and as regards substance and form'. It also took note 'with the deepest interest' of the Fuhrer's letter of 11 March to the Duce and declared that this letter would shortly be published—in what a bowdlerized version has already been indicated.

On 16 March Mussolini addressed the Fascist Chamber as follows:

✓ In the last few days a great event has taken place which has changed the political map of Europe. Austria as a State has ceased to exist, and has become part of Germany. The plebiscite of 10 April will confirm the accomplished fact.

'The tragedy of Austria did not begin yesterday; it began in 1848 when brave little Piedmont dared to defy what was then the Habsburg colossus. . . .

'To those more or less official circles beyond the Alps which ask why we did not intervene to "save" the independence of Austria, we reply that we had not assumed any obligation of the kind, either direct or indirect, written or verbal [*sic*].

'The Austrians, I feel bound to state, have always had the comprehensible modesty not to ask for the use of force to defend the independence of Austria, for we should have answered that an independence which needed the help of foreign troops against the majority of the nation no longer deserves the name. . . .

✗ Italy had an interest in the independence of the Austrian Federal State, but it was obviously based on the assumption that the Austrians, or at least a majority of them, desired independence; but what has happened in the last few days on Austrian territory shows that the people profoundly longed for the Anschluss.'

The Duce then insisted rather lamely that when something is inevitable it is better that you should consent to it than let it happen in spite of you or, still worse, against your will. In any case, we Italians know about national revolutions, for just the same thing under the guidance of *il grande autoritario Cavour*

happened in Italy between 1859 and 1861. Far be it from Italy to fear eighty million Germans on her frontier. . . .

‘. . . why should I not say it? Millions of Germans are listening too. The time has come which may be called the testing of the Axis. The Germans know that the Axis is not merely a diplomatic contrivance which works well in normal times, but that it has proved itself particularly solid at this critical point of the history of the German world of Europe.

‘The two nations whose unification has been parallel in time and method, united as they are by an analogous conception of the politics of living, can march forward together to give our tormented continent a new equilibrium, which shall at last allow the peaceful and fruitful co-operation of all peoples’

Italians of all shades of political opinion agree that the Anschluss and Mussolini’s reaction to it lost the Duce more popularity than any event after the murder of Matteotti in 1924, when the Fascist régime was seriously shaken. They were acutely aware of the significance for Italy of what had taken place, and they felt that Mussolini’s arguments were either false or discreditable, or both: they had not forgotten that he had eagerly expounded the reverse for many years. And with all the make-believe imaginable Mussolini must have felt uneasy. Even at this moment Hitler had—deliberately or not?—made him feel German contempt for Italy. The whole move had been sprung upon him without consultation, in spite of every pledge that he should be informed in advance. Further, at one moment a promise was given to the Italian Embassy in Berlin that the German Army would halt at Innsbruck in order not to appear on the Brenner. This pledge was completely ignored. And the German officer in command who first formally greeted the Italian troops at the Brenner was the very Nazi Colonel Schoerner who had won his ‘Pour le mérite’ at the battle of Caporetto. He was to become one of Hitler’s favourite commanders in the Second World War.

There is an epilogue to the Anschluss which is not generally known. Though Mussolini had never liked Schuschnigg and though he spoke disdainfully of him in his speech on 16 March, in April the Italian Embassy in Berlin received the following instructions from Ciano: ‘Please advise the competent authority, that it would be in Germany’s own interest to avoid the taking of

coercive measures against Schuschnigg. If he were permitted to leave Austria this would not only create a generally favourable impression, but would also be regarded with sympathy in Italy where he was always treated with respect and where it would be learnt with satisfaction that he had been free to go abroad.¹ The subject was brought up by Magistrati more than once to Goring. It is a fact to which Schuschnigg himself refers that he was threatened with a staged trial for the 'Betrayal of German Blood' which would certainly have led to his execution. This and some of the worst physical tortures to which most Gestapo victims were subjected he was spared, and, although he himself does not seem to be aware of it, the fact may be attributed to Italian intervention.

¹ Material supplied by Count Magistrati.

VII

The Führer in Italy

IN an atmosphere of nervous tension in Italy, the Führer's reception had to be prepared.¹ In Berlin, perhaps because of his family connexions with Mussolini, the work fell mostly upon Magistrati. Hitler had boasted to Schuschnigg at Berchtesgaden of his new battleship to be ready in the spring; it was to be called *Tegetthoff* then, in memory of the old Austrian Navy. Now Tegetthoff was the Admiral who had beaten the Italian Navy at Lissa in 1866, the last thing of which the Italians wished to be reminded. After considerable trouble Magistrati succeeded in getting the name changed to that of another Austrian hero, upon whom, since he was of Savoyard origin, the Axis could agree; it was finally the *Prinz Eugen* which was launched by the Regent of Hungary in the following August.²

The Anschluss had inevitably stirred up the South Tyrol again. The Nazis of Innsbruck were convinced that the Führer was on the verge of 'fetching back' the rest of the Tyrol,³ rather like a game of nuts in May, and there was a ferment south of the Brenner regardless of the publication of Hitler's pledge to Mussolini on 11 March. It was whispered that when, in his speech to the Reichstag on 18 March, Hitler had spoken of 3½ million Germans who were not yet 'freed', this number included the South Tyrolese. On 18 April Ciano wrote to Magistrati asking him to go to Göring and explain that the Italian authorities could no longer tolerate the propaganda and white-stockinged commotion which was going on and which had actually led to violent incidents. These things soon become known by Italian public opinion, and, Ciano wrote, reawakened the annoyance caused in certain circles 'by the sudden German seizure of Austria'. In order to strengthen the Axis this situation, he said, must be put straight. Surely some agreement could be brought about similar to that which had been made between Italy and Yugoslavia in the previous year.

¹ For a time the Italians considered postponing the visit.

² Horthy had been an Admiral in the Austro-Hungarian Navy.

³ Down to the old Riva frontier, they hoped.

Magistrati saw Goring twice about this. The first time Goring prevaricated. The trouble must be due to *agents provocateurs*, &c. On the second occasion the Fat Man assured Magistrati that on 18 March Hitler had referred only to the Sudeten Germans. It would profoundly sadden the Germans, he said, if Hitler's sacred word about the Brenner frontier were not believed in Italy, just at a time when Italy's attitude over Austria had so greatly increased the friendly feeling towards her in Germany. Hitherto, added Goring, with his engaging frankness, our Army people were much opposed to any risk of war on your account, but now they say Germany should back up Italy in the Mediterranean even against Britain—at least they *were* saying that, he added, until your agreement with Britain last week.¹ With regard to South Tyrol difficulties ~~did~~, he thought, become acute because young men were naturally unwilling to do military service for a country to which they did not feel they belonged. At this point he dropped the first hint of a transfer of population such as that which was arranged in 1939—it might be expedient, he suggested, to allow South Tyrolese recruits to opt for German citizenship. At all events this was something which should be discussed between Fuhrer and Duce when the Fuhrer went to Italy.

After the public announcement on 28 February of Hitler's visit to Rome in May, Ciano was put in charge of the festal preparations in Italy. At last, two months later, Ribbentrop managed to appoint a new German Ambassador to Italy; Neurath's son-in-law, von Mackensen, who not long before had had to leave the Budapest Legation on account of his too obvious entanglement with the Hungarian Nazis, was sent ahead to take over the German Embassy and prepare for the Fuhrer in Rome. In Nazi Germany an official jaunt to Italy was always scrambled for, and one reason for the popularity of the Axis in Party circles was the increased scope it provided for journeys of this kind. When Hitler left Berlin for Rome on 2 May it was with four special trains and a troop of newly uniformed journalists. There was a bevy of Party leaders, Ribbentrop of course, Goebbels and Hess, and Keitel to represent the Wehrmacht, and Himmler to guard his master against the Italian Jews; naturally Hans

¹ The British-Italian Agreement of 16 April 1938 was widely interpreted as an anti-German move on Mussolini's part in reply to the Anschluss. Cf. Kordt, *op. cit.*

Frank and Hesse had to come too, and Sepp Dietrich, and there were also Bohle of the *Auslandsorganisation* and Bodenschatz, while Germany was left in charge of Göring. It was announced that the Wilhelmstrasse legal expert, Gaus, would be with the German Foreign Office team, which made people wonder whether an alliance was to be proposed; at the last moment, however, Gaus was ill and remained in Berlin.

To Nazi persecution of the Catholics in Germany had now been added seven weeks' oppression of Catholic Austria; now and then Italian diplomacy had prevented some confiscation of monastic property or whatever it might be, but notwithstanding Professor Manacorda¹ the general tendency was clear and unrelenting. The *Osservatore Romano* maintained an unbroken silence before Hitler's visit, but when the Führer was due Pius XI closed the Vatican Museum and retired to Castel Gandolfo; there on 3 May, the day of the Holy Cross, he complained to the newly married couples that 'the banner of another cross which was not the cross of Christ' should have been raised in Rome that day.

The problem of the Quirinal also presented Mussolini with a good deal of vexation, and the Republicanism of his youth stirred uneasily within him. For it was with the King, not with Mussolini, that it was found necessary for the Führer to stay. Though he was met by both King and Duce at the San Paolo station, it was into the King's horse-carriage that Hitler was obliged to step. He annoyed the King by seating himself first, while his own irritation at finding himself in this museum-piece of a coach, drawn by mere horses, was considerable. He slept in the Quirinal for six nights and no doubt consoled himself with being the guest of a monarch whose name would always be unwelcome to a Habsburg ear. Victor Emmanuel did not conceal his chagrin at having to entertain the ex-corporal, and, if Schlabrendorff's account² of Hitler's table manners a few years later is to be believed, it would be difficult not to sympathize with the King. Hitler was aware that he was not very welcome; indeed, according to the statements³ Mussolini made later, he was positively neglected in the palace: at one public

¹ See above, Chapter III.

² *Offiziere gegen Hitler* (Europa Verlag, Zurich, 1946)

³ See Mussolini, *Il Tempo del bastone e della carota* (Milan, 1944).

ceremony it was he who motioned to the Duce to come forward and stand with himself and the King. It has been seen that before this Hitler had felt that Mussolini's was the only authority in Italy upon which he could rely, and after May 1938 his suspicion towards the Italian monarchy definitely increased; some of his Nazis told him that the ladies of the court had made a demonstrative distinction between the Italian Army and the Fascist Militia at the public functions during his stay.

In addition, in spite of Mussolini's enthusiastic preparations, the Roman population—perhaps the most sceptical in the world—received Hitler without any real warmth until after his speech at the Palazzo Venezia banquet on 7 May. This was one of those geo-political perorations with which one was becoming familiar, but it was not without significance. It referred with obvious relish to the Axis *bloc* as containing no longer a mere 115 millions, but rather 120 million souls by now.

'Two millennia', concluded the Fuhrer, 'have now passed since Romans and Germans met for the first time in history so far as that history is known to us. Standing here on this most venerable soil in our human history, I feel the tragedy of a destiny which formerly failed to draw clear frontier lines between these two highly gifted, valuable races. . . . Now to-day . . . , thanks to your historic activity, Benito Mussolini, the Roman State arises from remote traditions to new life, and north of you, formed out of numerous tribes, there has arisen a new Germanic Empire. Now that we have become immediate neighbours, taught by the experience of two millennia, we both wish to recognize that natural frontier which Providence and history have clearly drawn for our two peoples. That frontier will then render possible the happiness of a permanent co-operation peacefully secured through the definite separation of the living-spaces (*Lebensräume*) of the two nations, but it will also serve as a bridge for mutual help and support. It is my unalterable will and my bequest to the German people that it shall accordingly regard the frontier of the Alps, raised by nature between us both, as for ever inviolable. I know that then, through this delimitation, a great and prosperous future will result both for Rome and Germany.

'Duce, just as you and your people maintained your friendship with Germany in days of crisis, so I and my people will show the same friendship towards Italy in times of difficulty. . . .'

What a riot of dictatorial indulgence! Nothing gratified Mussolini more completely than to be identified not with a

mere modern Italy but with the far-flung Empire of Ancient Rome. And that part of Hitler which loved to believe in heroes and monsters derived the greatest satisfaction from the make-believe excitement of pretending that fearful dangers had been faced when the German Army marched into Austria; actually he never moved unless he thought the risk he was taking was negligible. Meanwhile there were Italians who noted that Hitler had named, not the Brenner, but only the Alps en masse, by which his frontier delimitation remained delightfully vague.

The Fuhrer was deluged with every imaginable 'sight' in Rome: historic monuments, military pageants, and peasants dancing at the Villa Borghese in all the provincial costumes of Italy. Immediately after his own return from Germany in the autumn before, it had pleased Mussolini to copy the goose-step by the introduction of the *passo romano*, and now he displayed this laborious Italian imitation to his German visitors; there were many sour Italian jokes over this. On Thursday, 5 May, Hitler was rushed off to Naples for the day, where an Italian naval review seemed to make an impression upon him. In the evening there was a gala performance of two acts of *Arda* at San Carlo; the triumph over the Ethiopians was duly celebrated. Hitler was driven straight to the station from the opera in an open car and was thus revealed in evening dress, wearing, for the only recorded time in his life, a top hat.¹ The usual photographs were taken and showed something so much more ridiculous than the best Chaplin achievements that orders came from on high that not only was nothing to be published but the films were all to be destroyed. Several Italians had a good laugh over this—not so the German Foreign Office official, Bülow-Schwante, who was held responsible and dismissed. On 9 May Hitler left Rome to return to Germany via Florence, where he spent half that day and was received with great enthusiasm. They rushed him round the Uffizi, the Pitti, and Santa Croce and up to the Piazzale Michelangelo, then a reception at the Palazzo Vecchio, dinner at the Palazzo Riccardi (in the Sala Luca Giordano), the theatre, and away. Mussolini² said later

¹ Hitler carried a top hat at the Garnisonkirche ceremony at Potsdam in Mar. 1933 and on similar occasions, but was not seen to wear it.

² Op. cit.

that, once emancipated from the oppression of the Quirinal, Hitler's mood changed and he pronounced Florence to be the city of his dreams; certainly he spoke ecstatic words about it when he saw the Duce there in October 1940.¹ For Mussolini this visit to Florence was less agreeable. All his life, after all, he had professed 'toughness'. He had resented Italy's reputation as the mere home of Europe's greatest achievements in the plastic arts and had boasted that he had better things to do than to visit picture-galleries; on 9 May, 1938, however, he was forced to enter these museums for the first time. Thus, liberated though he was from royal competition, he could not even play the host with assurance in Florence.

This second visit of Hitler's to Italy has not received much attention from the chroniclers of the time. Again it is difficult to know what passed between Hitler and Mussolini *à deux*. They were alone twice for an hour or so in Rome and also for a short time in Florence; it is interesting that this time the interpreting was not left to Paul Schmidt, but the German diplomat, Hans Thomsen, then *en poste* in Washington, was brought to Italy solely for this purpose; he was a hard, cynical, snobbish creature, a brilliant linguist who had served in Italy and had kept up his Italian. It is thought, and it seems likely, that even without Gaus at hand Hitler touched upon the possibility of a more definite alliance, such as he felt Mussolini had deserved since his acquiescence in March; according to Ciano's rather inexact statements at the Fascist Grand Council meeting on 24 July 1943, it was at Naples on 5 May 1938 that Hitler made his proposal. Mussolini, who seems to have been if anything evasive, implied that the Axis friendship made an alliance superfluous.² And yet foreshadowings now appear, with increasing frequency, of what was to become the Steel Pact. A French journalist tried to discover that Fuhrer and Duce had wrangled over south-east Europe, but there is no evidence of this. Naturally Hitler's entourage was full of official optimism; after the Anschluss, the Germans in Czechoslovakia could not be expected to wait for their 'home-coming' to the Reich (actually it was of their 'autonomy' that one still mostly had the reticence to speak when abroad), but the Anglo-French conversations at the end of April need not be regarded as unpropitious. Instead

of the irritation which Göring had shown to Magistrati with regard to the Anglo-Italian agreement, this was now interpreted as a device by which—one is almost compelled to mix metaphors over this—the poor Western democracies were to be harnessed to the Axis and cajoled into betraying the Czechs. It is fairly safe to guess that Mussolini expressed his approval of German pressure on Prague; it is possible, on the other hand, that the Jewish question was not mentioned between the two.

The persecution of the German Jews had been steadily developed, and the Anschluss had brought about many outrages against the large Jewish population of Vienna. As for anti-Semitic measures in Italy, it was in itself difficult to welcome the Nazi leaders without initiating discrimination against the Jews. Before Hitler arrived the Italian police had orders to lock up the Jewish population or send it out of the towns which the Fuhrer would visit. It was said that Goebbels refused to appear at a lunch reception in Rome at which some fellow guests might have been Jewish. Perhaps it simply began in this way.

There was no Jewish problem in Italy. If one out of a hundred of the population was a Jew in pre-Hitler Germany, it was something like one out of a thousand in Italy. The Italian Jews, moreover, had lived in Italy for centuries and were 'assimilated'. In the country as a whole 'race consciousness' was unknown; one had common traditions of language, diet, superstition, or in higher things, but one did not care about a person's breed—the absurdity of such conceptions would have been too grotesque in Naples or in Sicily. In the twenties the German Embassy had started a paper called *Il Tevere*, which was edited by a man called Interlandi, but it had a negligible circulation. When it became anti-Semitic in 1933 it was only regarded as an oddity. An earlier and more spontaneous Italian anti-Semite was a renegade priest called Giovanni Preziosi,¹ who was a friend of the Cremonese ex-railwayman, Farinacci, perhaps the most repulsive and brutal of the Fascist *gerarchi*. Earlier, during the 1914-18 war, Preziosi had been violently anti-German and had led the campaign against the Banca Commerciale Italiana, which had been founded by

¹ Not to be confused with the diplomat, Gabriele Preziosi.

the Deutsche Bank; the upshot had been the resignation of the President of the Banca Commerciale, who was Toeplitz, a German Jew. Later Preziosi discovered that his anti-German feelings had only been directed against German capitalists who were Jews. He then became editor of an anti-Semitic review called *Vita Italiana*. But neither Interlandi nor Preziosi was of any importance until 1938. The arrival in Italy of Jewish refugees from Germany, and latterly from Austria, had aroused sympathy rather than antipathy for the Jews.

It has been seen that in his Nietzsche-reading youth Mussolini's particular antagonist in the official Socialist Party had been Treves, who was a Jew. But unlike Hitler Mussolini had accepted Nietzsche's view that, if Jews tended to be servile, anti-Semites were the failures who were jealous of Jewish brains and wealth. Later, as a convert to chauvinism, Mussolini met opposition from Jewish and Masonic circles, but he still condemned anti-Semitism in an article in the *Popolo d'Italia* in 1932 as he deplored racialism in his article on the Doctrine of Fascism in the *Enciclopedia Italiana* that same year. Since his clash with Hitler in the spring of 1933 he had not committed himself publicly, though in private he went a little way to meet the Nazis at his interview with Hans Frank in September 1936, recoiling away from them when speaking with Schuschnigg in April 1937.¹ So late as February 1938 the Italian Foreign Office declared that 'a specific Jewish problem does not exist in Italy' and that the Fascist Government had no intention of taking any measures against Jews 'except such as are hostile to the régime'. It seems, however, to have been in November 1937 that Mussolini took the decisive step of boasting to Ribbentrop, without provocation from the German side, that Italy had begun an anti-Semitic campaign led by 'un uomo abbastanza popolare in Italia, l'On. Farinacci'.² It was not until July 1938 that the Duce began publicly to eat his earlier words with the same apparent relish as that with which he had swallowed the Anschluss. Three other motives may have actuated him in the racial offensive upon which he now embarked. He wished perhaps to induce a more imperialistic Italian state of mind: anti-Semitism gratified the Mohammedan world in

See the respective Ciano Minutes.

Ciano Minute, 6 Nov. 1937. (Approx. = 'a pretty popular figure in Italy'.)

which he was angling for popularity: lastly, his régime was in economic difficulty and the Nazis had shown one that anti-Semitism was profitable. But it would be impossible to believe that Mussolini would have become an anti-Jewish legislator if it had not been for the Rome-Berlin Axis. And from the beginning his anti-Semitism was condemned by the Italians as a sign of his new subordination.

On 1 July 1938 the Italian Government forbade the public sale of translations of books by foreign Jews. On 14 July a report by several professors was semi-officially published in favour of an 'Aryan-Nordic' racialistic policy for Italy, and on 25 July Starace, still the Secretary of the Fascist Party, announced that the principal task of the Ministry of Popular Culture for 1939 would be to follow up this report with a further 'elaboration and discussion of Fascist race principles'. Farinacci and Gayda were all enthusiasm, and on 5 August Interlandi brought out a new and sumptuous review, full of anti-Semitism and called *La Difesa della Razza*. The rest was to follow in the course of the autumn. A decree which was published on 1 September declared that all persons whose fathers and mothers were Jewish, and who had settled in Italy or the Italian colonies (except Ethiopia) since 1919 must leave the country within six months under pain of expulsion. On 2 September all Jewish teachers and students were excluded from every school or university in Italy as from that autumn term. In October and November the anti-Semitic campaign continued, state or semi-state employment was denied to Jews, mixed marriages were forbidden, and Jewish property began to be confiscated. The most immediate sufferers, of course, were those who had fled from Hitler.

With the one exception of Farinacci, even the Fascist gerarchi disliked the new anti-Semitic policy because it seemed to them, as it did to the Italians as a whole, humanly absurd and—what came to the same thing—only worthy of Germans. An uneasy foreboding of vassalage was felt. This reaction did mitigate the practical effects of the new decrees to some extent. In his speech at Trieste on 18 September Mussolini himself felt obliged to make exceptions and to seem generous, though the efficacy of the exceptions was largely cancelled later on. 'Those', he cried, 'who imply that we are mere imitators or, worse still, have

obeyed suggestions, are poor idiots whom we do not know whether to despise or to pity.'

How vociferously had the Axis been declared to be the last hope for the defence of Europe's heritage of civilization! Now Hitler had got so far as to be subjecting some 75 million people to the directly dehumanizing process to which he had pledged himself; at the same time he was causing the arbitrary segregation of human beings into a depressed class in the very home of humanism. And around Germany and Italy the smaller countries hastened anxiously to fall into line, and to cultivate an attitude of disdain towards the scapegoat Jews. In what was in fact his de-civilizing action the new Tamburlaine—no Scythian shepherd could have been more remorseless than the son of the Austrian *douanier*—found his Axis partner an invaluable instrument. For since the Italians were not a brutal nation and Fascism had for so long held aloof from the brutalities of the Nazis, Hungarians, Poles, and the rest felt it wise to fall in with Mussolini in order to keep on the right side of Hitler. Thus if the Duce's policy became servile towards the Führer, how much more was their policy obliged to incline to the wishes of Berlin.

VIII

Mediation at Munich

IN the eyes of the world, of the Great Power populations, anti-Semitism in Italy was obscured by the more obviously disturbing problem of the Czechoslovak Republic which was now veritably encircled by the Nazis. Mussolini's series of speeches in Venetia in September 1938, in which he spoke of the Italian Jews, was part of the Axis campaign against the Czechs. It was not for the first time in the history of Bohemia that Czech and Jew had found themselves thrown into alliance against Germanism. The details of the Czech-German situation in the thirties are not directly relevant to the subject of the relations between Hitler and Mussolini,¹ but it is necessary to indicate some of its salient points in a history of the Axis.

The Czechs were a competent, hard-headed, common-sense people who did not expect life to be easy. In 1918 they set up a state in partnership with the far more backward Slovaks from whom they had been separated by a thousand years of history; this state contained also a large German minority and a smaller Hungarian one; lastly, Ruthenia² was attached to it, a strip of poor mountainous country with a mixed but mainly Ukrainian population. The extraordinary fact is that in an age of rising nationalistic feeling this state should have been in every way the most satisfactory of the new political entities which emerged from the First World War. The success of the Czechs seems even more remarkable when one considers that they had inherited the most notoriously intransigent Germans of old Austria: the Germans who fringed Bohemia and Austrian Silesia had no rivals in racial fanaticism except in Styria; in Vienna they were mostly spoken of as if they were a little mad.

About 3¼ millions of these Germans became Czechoslovak citizens in 1919, and from this time onwards called themselves (after a mountain range) Sudeten Germans; partly because their numbers gave them strength they were probably the best-off minority in the whole of post-Versailles Europe and certainly in a far better position than the Germans, Slovenes, or Croats in

¹ They can be found in my *Czechs and Germans* (Oxford University Press, 1938.)

Fascist Italy. Of course the Czechs made mistakes. They are an ungracious, inflexible people, and they often indulged in pin-pricking; in view of the arrogance—or worse—with which the Germans had treated them before 1918, it is astonishing that they behaved as well as they did, but pin-pricking often creates more violent repercussions than real oppression, since it leaves its victims so much more able to react.

The Czech leaders, allowing history to override what should have been open questions in their minds, made two grave mistakes. A man like Thomas Masaryk, one of the few great political figures of this century, was so accustomed to the incessant din of Pan-German agitation in old Austria-Hungary that Hitler did not alarm him. I remember his saying in the spring of 1934 that it was foolish to think that there was anything new about Hitler or that Hitler meant war. Alas, there was something entirely new about Hitler. Where Bismarck was *klein-deutsch*, Hitler was the first Pan-German to have all the power of the German Reich behind him. The other mistake the Czechs made in subjection to the anti-Habsburg slogans which they had used as part of their own emancipation campaign within old Austria was to say and to believe that the Anschluss was preferable to a Habsburg restoration. It is true, and the documents which have recently become available show how true, that nothing could have enraged Hitler more completely than a Legitimist success, but the Anschluss—when ever Hitler might bring it about—was bound to spell a strategic death-sentence upon Czechoslovakia.

The truth is that no policy could have saved the Czechs unless (even this is not certain) Hitler had believed that he would face a war on two fronts by attacking them; it is clear from the minutes of the conference of 5 November 1937 that he hoped that any danger from Russia need not be considered 'in view of Japan's attitude', while he believed 'that in all probability England and perhaps also France have already silently written off Czechoslovakia, and that they have got used to the idea that this question would one day be cleaned up by Germany'. The Czechs had been the tailors and coachmen of imperial Vienna, where the word 'Bohemian' had no artistic allurements but signified very lower-middle-class, or, in other words, socially impossible; Hitler had certainly not forgotten

that Hindenburg had originally called him *der böhmische Gefreite*—the Bohemian corporal—in this sense.¹ The Czechoslovak Republic stood for everything Hitler most disliked: it was over-centralized from an administrative point of view, but it was certainly anti-dictatorial and a country where one could vote and write and speak as one chose. What infuriated Hitler most of all was that Czechoslovakia was like old Austria-Hungary on a small scale: it was a *Nationalitätenstaat*, and it was 'worse' than Austria-Hungary because it was to a much greater extent under the leadership of Slavs. Hitler could foam at the mouth at the iniquity of such a thing. All the racial groups in Austria-Hungary, he used to declare, were corrupted by inter-mingling with one another instead of preserving their purity, by thinking of themselves as the subjects of Francis Joseph rather than as members of their race. Above all, this kind of morass dragged the Germans down from the privileged position which was their due on to the same footing as ignoble Slavs and Jews. Whenever Hitler and Rosenberg wanted to work up a case against Russia they accused her, too, of being a nationalities-state which inevitably bastardized its better elements.

Czechoslovakia provoked Hitler further because on the one hand she was a refuge for those who fled from the Nazi terrorization of Germany, and on the other she had important industrial resources with the huge Škoda arms-factory at Pilsen, all of which he coveted for the carrying out of his designs. She was traditionally Russonophile and Francophile and the driving force behind the anti-revisionism of the Little Entente. Finally, the Czechs were a rationalist people, the last who were likely to be carried away by emotional mysticisms.

Since 1933 the German minority in Czechoslovakia had been busily used to prepare the destruction of the Republic; the fact that the mainly German-speaking areas had suffered with particular severity from the world depression had facilitated this whole undertaking. Late in 1933 the old D.N.S.A.P. or Nazi Party of Czechoslovakia had ostentatiously dissolved itself, but it was immediately succeeded by a *Sudetendeutsche Heimatfront*, which soon changed its name to the Sudeten German Party (S.d.P.): it was led by Konrad Henlein. From 1933 to

¹ This phrase also suggested something ridiculous because of the extremely popular book about the 'brave soldier', the Czech, Schwejk.

1938 one was denounced as a cynic and a Communist and probably a Jew if one found it difficult to be convinced by the many public announcements of the complete independence of this party from any organization in the Reich and its perfect loyalty to the Czechoslovak State. In the end it became obvious—and in a speech in Vienna in March 1941, Henlein boasted of it—that his party was directed and financed from Berlin. It became obvious, too, that the demands of the Sudeten German Party systematically increased, and that, like so much good Nazi spadework, they were systematically confused so that it was impossible to accede to them. At one time, though there was no clear language-frontier between Germans and Czechs, Henlein demanded territorial autonomy, at another non-geographically organized personal autonomy for whoever could be claimed as a member of the German group. More and more the Sudeten German leaders insisted, like the Austrian Nazis, that their people must be free to profess National Socialist beliefs which spelt the negation of both the Austrian and the Czechoslovak States. More and more all Sudeten Germans were terrorized by one method or another into joining the Sudeten German Party. These processes reached a climax with the Anschluss, and two German political groups which had held out until then, the Sudeten German Agrarians and the Catholic Party, immediately offered their allegiance to Henlein. At the same moment Eisenlohr, the German Minister in Prague whom Hitler was planning to assassinate if convenient, tightened up his control of the Henleinists.¹

Already on 17 March Henlein asked Ribbentrop for a 'very early personal talk'² and was secretly received by the Fuhrer on 28 March; the next day Henlein conferred with Ribbentrop, Weizsäcker, Eisenlohr, Professor Haushofer, and S.S. Obergruppenführer Lorenz of the *Volksdeutsche Mittelstelle*.³ It is worth mentioning that Mackensen was also present on this occasion and thus went off to take over the German Embassy in Rome in April charged with the most detailed information on the Czech-German situation up to that time.

Hitler had condemned Czechoslovakia to destruction, we

¹ Dispatch from Prague to Berlin, no. 57, of 16 Mar. 1938, quoted as Document 3060-PS. at the Nuremberg Trial. See *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part ii, p. 30.

² Document 2789-PS., *ibid.*, p. 31.

³ Document 2788-PS., *ibid.*

know, in November 1937, and at the beginning of March 1938, still before the Anschluss, a letter of Ribbentrop's to Keitel refers to military aims against the Czechs which it would be better not to reveal to the Hungarians.¹ On 21 April 1938, six weeks after the Anschluss, Hitler saw Keitel in order to bring the anti-Czech military programme up to date. It may be noted that in considering how the Czechs were to be provoked the German chiefs preferred suggestion (3)—'Lightning-swift action as the result of an incident [e.g., assassination of German ambassador in connexion with an anti-German demonstration].'² Three days later Konrad Henlein struck a more provocative attitude than he had adopted hitherto at a demonstration at Karlsbad where he made eight demands, claiming a hotch-potch of every kind of autonomy and finally 'full liberty for the Germans to demonstrate their adhesion to Germanism and to the ideology of the Germans' (Point 8). A week after this Hitler left Berlin for Rome and was back in Germany on 10 May.

On 18 May the Czechs observed a mobilization of various S.S. units³ at certain points on the Bohemian frontier; it was all, as it was no doubt intended to be, a little mysterious, and on 20 May the Czech military leaders⁴ insisted upon mobilizing a part of their forces and occupying the Czech frontier fortifications. The Nazi post-Anschluss plans were not quite ready and the Germans could not answer this 'intolerable provocation', as Hitler would certainly have preferred, by an immediate attack. It was particularly annoying because on 21 May there had been a perfect frontier incident which had to be wasted. Two Henleinists on motor-cycles had ignored a challenge from a Czech frontier guard and he had shot them dead. The Germans had

¹ It was at this time that General Beck, the Chief of Staff, who had not been vouchsafed any detailed information whatever, protested against the whole anti-Czech plan; his objections were completely ignored until he protested to Hitler in person in the autumn. He was then told that blind obedience was all that was required of him, and resigned.

² *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part i, p. 164. Eisenlohr was a Minister, not an Ambassador.

³ S.S. troops were no doubt used so that Hitler could, as he subsequently did, declare that not a single Reichswehr soldier had been moved. the whole crisis was deliberately confused with normal spring manoeuvres.

⁴ 'On the initiative of President Beneš' See J. W. Wheeler-Bennett, *Munich*, p. 55 (Macmillan, 1948).

to be content with a demonstrative funeral on 25 May, with the swastika greatly in evidence and wreaths sent from the Führer personally, at the frontier town of Eger, the core of Pan-Germanism. Between the incident and the funeral, on 22 May, Jodl's diary refers to a 'fundamental conference between the Fuhrer and K. Henlein'.

'The intention of the Führer', wrote Jodl, 'not to touch the Czech problem as yet is changed because of the Czech strategic troop concentration of 21 May [*sic*], which occurs without any German threat and without the slightest cause for it. Because of Germany's self-restraint the consequences lead to a loss of prestige for the Fuhrer which he is not willing to suffer a second time. Therefore the new order is issued for Green [attack on Czechoslovakia] on 30 May.'

It should be noted, however, that this new order was based on a draft of Keitel's dated 20 May which was probably made before news of the Czech move was received. It was on 28 May that Hitler conferred with his chief advisers on this draft, and on 30 May he signed the conclusions reached after their deliberations. The statement he signed is, not surprisingly, lengthy:

'It is my unalterable decision to smash Czechoslovakia by military action in the near future. . . . It is . . . essential to create a situation within the first four days which plainly demonstrates to hostile nations eager to intervene the hopelessness of the Czechoslovakian military situation, and which at the same time will give nations with territorial claims on Czechoslovakia an incentive to intervene immediately against her. In such a case, intervention by Poland and Hungary against Czechoslovakia may be expected, especially if France—owing to the obviously pro-German attitude of Italy—fears, or at least hesitates, to unleash a European war by intervening against Germany.'

This time the Fuhrer, correctly enough, expected trouble from Russia. All preparations for the destruction of Czechoslovakia were to be ready 'as from 1 October at the latest'.¹

What was the state of mind of the Axis Partner by now? The wealth of authentic Ciano material which has become available provides a mirror of the Duce's mind, and there one finds an aggressive serenity on the surface, and beneath it an uneasy awareness of the disproportionate strength of Germany and of her remorselessness, and the same sort of sanguine belief in the

¹ *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings* part II, pp. 7-8

possibility of side-tracking Hitler as one found at this time among the Anglo-French appeasers. Mussolini and Ciano, far from accepting their own expulsion from south-eastern Europe by the new super-Habsburg, believed that they could dam up the German flood at the gates of the Balkans. It was this which intensified their interest in Albania and cemented their friendship with the Yugoslav Premier, Stoyadinović.

Just before Hitler's visit to Rome, Ciano had visited Albania, ostensibly for the wedding of King Zog. He was annoyed to find that the King liked to ape all things Viennese, and that the new Queen, though Hungarian, was unfriendly to Italy, while the Fuhrer had provided the most magnificent of all the wedding presents. 'We should not forget that the Magyars have very often provided the advance guard of Germanism', and he noticed the tireless activity of the German Minister in Tirana. Finally, he suggested that '*un'affermazione italiana*, possibly definitive and totalitarian in character, would counterbalance in relation to the Balkan world the undesirable increase in the prestige of the Reich brought about by the Anschluss'.¹ Thus already the conquest of Albania was envisaged, and envisaged as that of Ethiopia had been, as an anti-German move.

Ciano's encounters with the Yugoslavs at this time are exceedingly interesting. They grumble to him over the disturbing effects the Anschluss has had upon their German minorities, and he agrees with them that the German Government is not responsible and must take steps to suppress this inconvenient exuberance.² Now the German settlements all over old Austria-Hungary were perhaps Hitler's favourite instrument in the pursuit of his ambitions, and one wonders whether Ciano and Stoyadinović deliberately shut their eyes to this unpalatable fact or whether they dared not confess the truth to one another. Stoyadinović was in other ways a cold-blooded realist. Already in April, in spite of his alliance with Czechoslovakia, he contentedly envisaged her disintegration and the survival of only a much smaller neutralized Czech State; like Mussolini and Ciano he believed that that would be allowed. He asked of the Hun-

¹ Note by Ciano for the Duce, 2 May 1938. (Also published in *L'Europa verso la catastrofe*.)

² Minute by Ciano on conversation with the Yugoslav Minister in Italy, 15 Apr. 1938.

garians only that they should await their moment and not take offensive action which would still create a *casus belli* for him as a member of the moribund Little Entente. It is perhaps characteristic that when Ciano met Stoyadinović in Venice on 18 June 1938, while the latter seemed totally blind to the German menace to Poland, he warned the Italian that, whatever assurances to the contrary the Germans might give, they had designs on the Adriatic.¹ In the middle of July Ciano told Magistrati (who was on a visit to Rome at the time) that since the Agreement with Britain was working badly on account of Spain, Italy was being unwillingly pushed farther towards Germany. Many Italians, Ciano admitted, would now like Italy to line up with the satisfied nations, but this would be inconsistent with Fascism. 'We must consolidate what we have already won.' Italy's power of attraction in the Balkans is growing—'some time our position in Albania must be revised.... But it will be best not to commit ourselves to anyone.'²

(The Czech question presented itself to Italy as an opportunity not so much for the aggrandizement of Germany but rather for the gratification of dependants like the Poles³ and the Magyars towards whose claims Hitler was remarkably cold.) When the Hungarian Ministers, Imrédy and Kánya, came to Rome in July, Mussolini told them that Italy would support Germany unreservedly, but it was clear that he did not then expect a European crisis over the Czech question. The Magyars did not get the pact with Italy which they would have liked, but Mussolini offered to tell the Yugoslavs that he wished for an increase of Hungary's power, and it was agreed that a statement should be published confirming the validity of the Rome Protocols as between Rome and Budapest although Austria had disappeared.⁴

From the day when Hitler decided on action against Czechoslovakia 'as from 1 October' at the latest, he was certain to press more vigorously for a written military alliance with Italy in order to frighten France into inaction. On 19 June 1938 Ribbentrop invited Attolico to his house and tried to work upon

¹ Minute by Ciano on conversation with Stoyadinović, Venice, 18 June 1938.

² Information supplied by Count Magistrati. The April Agreement with Britain had been invalidated by Mussolini's fierce speech at Genoa on 14 May.

³ The Polish claim was trifling and of dubious validity, and therefore impolitic.

⁴ Minute by Ciano, 18 July 1938.

him in this sense; he treated him to a series of 'confidences', which included the announcement that Germany was secretly calling up reservists (to do 'labour service') and a reference to the development and invincibility of the Siegfried Line. In a telegram to Attolico dated 27 June Ciano said 'All this is very important and interesting' and suggested that he should shortly meet Ribbentrop at Como to discuss it; he also asked Attolico to find out how far negotiations between Germany and Japan had gone. Shortly after this Hesse was sent to Rome to explain to Ciano the advantages of a military alliance between Germany, Italy, and Japan, but the Italians repeated that an alliance was superfluous.

Hitherto Attolico had not made his personality felt very strongly in Berlin, but now he was filled with agitation and cautiously engaged himself to prevent the war upon which Hitler was determined, or at least to prevent Italy from entering upon it.¹ He knew that Italy was in no state to do more than bluff. He knew also that Germany was about to take great risks. On 10 August Reichswehr apprehensions were expressed to the angry Hitler. Jodl complained in his Diary that the General Staff lacked 'vigour of soul, because in the end they do not believe in the genius of the Fuhrer. And one does perhaps compare him with Charles XII . . .'; since the conflict between the generals and Hitler 'is common talk', even Jodl feared for morale. Already in June the head of the German Intelligence Service, Canaris, who was one of the sceptics, confirmed to the Italian Military Attaché in Berlin that Germany was mobilizing, and Attolico reported this, too, to Rome in the hope of opening Mussolini's eyes.

The interview with the Hungarians confirms other indications that up to 18 July Mussolini little suspected that Hitler had determined upon war in less than two and a half months' time, and Attolico's news was sceptically received in Rome at first. On the day of the Duce's conversation with Imrédy and Kanya, Attolico saw Ribbentrop again. The German Minute of this interview records that Attolico took the opportunity to express his personal opinion that France would intervene in

¹ In spite of his remark on New Year's Eve 1936, Attolico was not at first opposed to Ribbentrop's alliance projects. See Mario Toscano, *Le Origini del Patto d'Acciaio* (Rivista di Studi Politici Internazionali, 1947).

a German-Czech conflict. A hand-written confidential note (marked only for the Reich Minister) is appended saying that 'Attolico added that we had made it unmistakably clear to the Italians what were our intentions regarding Czechoslovakia. He also knew the appointed time well enough so that he could perhaps take a two months' holiday then, which he would not be able to do later on.' This was obviously a piece of self-justification on Ribbentrop's part. Attolico, importuned by Rome from now onwards to discover exactly what Hitler's programme was, may have attempted every method, including that of 'try-on' assertions, of extracting the information he required. But although the German plan was exactly worked out to the last detail, the least unsatisfactory statement he could get was from Weizsacker on 3 August to the effect that he should take his leave before the end of September. A note by Ribbentrop dated 23 August states that when Attolico had pressed him again a few days before this:

'I replied that in case the Czechs should again provoke Germany, Germany would march. This would be to-morrow, in six months, or perhaps in a year. However I could promise him that the German Government, in case of an increasing gravity of the situation or *as soon as the Fuhrer made his decision*, would notify the Italian Chief of Government as rapidly as possible. *In any case the Italian Government would be the first one to receive such a notification.*'¹

This, in view of their experience in the past, was wholly unsatisfactory to the Italians who returned to the attack again and again. Though he preferred not to record it, Ribbentrop, urged on by Hitler, continued to press them to make a military alliance with Germany, and it was not unnatural that they were anxious to ascertain the exact implication of this. On 27 August Attolico, according to Ribbentrop's own note, specified that Mussolini asked to be notified of the date upon which the Germans contemplated action in order 'to be able to take in due time the necessary measures on the French frontier'. It was useless; Ribbentrop would only repeat his formula that the Duce would be the first to be informed, and he grumbled, poor man, that he did not understand what the Italians wanted. *You tell us your intentions*', the obedient Weizsacker said, help-

¹ Document 2791-PS. (My italics.) *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part ii, p. 13.

fully, when Attolico again approached him. The Italian Ambassador, rather at his wits' end, suggested that the only thing would be for Ciano and Ribbentrop to meet, but Ciano refused this suggestion on 4 September and instructed Attolico to demand from Hitler 'exactly how things stand' since he could not, he said, allow the Italian public to think that its rulers 'had again been taken by surprise as in the case of the Anschluss'. This was exactly four days after Hitler signed Jodl's plan for the staging of the incident necessary to provoke war and one day after a conference between Hitler, Keitel, and Brauchitsch at the Berghof, when the fullest details were elaborated, Hitler for once showing anxiety with regard to danger from the West. Of all this the Italians knew nothing; they were constrained to listen to German public declarations on the wireless for their information. To the Magyar leaders who visited Germany between 21 and 26 August the Germans were fairly non-committal, but the Hungarians were at least invited to staff talks on 6 September: Hitler pointed out to them that those who wished to join in the meal must help to cook it.¹ At this point Jodl noted in his diary on 8 September 'that Hungary is at least moody and that Italy is reserved'. Though the Italians, who might equally be asked to march at any moment, were pressing feverishly for Staff talks, it was not until April 1939 that Keitel managed to find time for them.

The Nazi Party Congress from 6 to 12 September, at which Hitler praised the action taken 'with admirable determination' by Italy against the Jews, inaugurated a tremendous preliminary bombardment which was intended as the overture to war. The Sudeten German leaders, Henlein and Karl Hermann Frank, rushed across the frontier to Germany on 15 September; together with Colonel Kochling, their liaison with the Reichswehr, they were put in charge of the Sudeten German 'Free Corps' along the frontiers of Bohemia; the purpose of this corps was defined by Hitler as 'Protection of the Sudeten Germans and maintenance of disturbances and clashes',² and from 19 September they were extremely active,³ violating the boundaries of Czechoslovakia whenever they could. At the same time two

¹ *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part ii, p. 15.

² See Schmoldt file, Document 388-PS, in *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part ii.

³ The Reichswehr complained that they were too active.

S.S. *Totenkopf* battalions were operating *across* the Czechoslovak frontier 'on direct orders from Hitler'. On 19 September a message was passed to the separatist Slovaks to revolt against the Czechs on the following day. Chamberlain's first visit to Germany (15 to 16 September) had made as much impression as a piece of cotton falling upon steel.

There was a parallel Italian campaign—Mussolini barked while Hitler bit. For the Duce behaved exactly like a dog that barks and wags its tail at the same time, not sure which end of itself it wishes the world to take seriously. On 15 September he published his letter to Runciman in the *Popolo d'Italia* demanding a plebiscite on the Saar model¹ in Czechoslovakia. He meant it half genuinely as a constructive proposal, and he coupled it with a declaration of what the Fuhrer had no doubt said to him in Rome, and was to repeat at the *Sportpalast* on 26 September, that if the Czechs were *offered* to Hitler he would refuse them. Of this the innocent Mussolini appears to have been convinced.

On 17 September the Duce set out upon a ten days' visit to the Venetias, a tour which was inaugurated by the speech at Trieste to which reference has been made. In all these Venetian declamations his theme was: 'We hope for a peaceful solution, but we know exactly where we'll stand if it comes to war. Beneš is the man who incited the League of Nations against Italy; now his tyranny over "eight different races" must be ended;² there must be justice for the Hungarians, the Poles and the Slovaks as well as the Germans.' The Italian public was desperately anxious for peace and was, no doubt, thankful to hear from Mussolini at Verona on 26 September (after Chamberlain's second visit to Germany) that, Versailles being extinct, a new Europe could now be born where there would be justice for all peoples and reconciliation between them. From the 22nd to the 24th Mussolini had broken his journey and returned to Rome. There he found a message of gratitude from Hitler and the German people for his 'historic' activities, and the ominous news that Hesse, who had been flitting backwards and forwards between Germany and Italy, would shortly bring

¹ The League of Nations held a plebiscite in the Saar territory in Jan. 1935. British, Italian, Swedish, and Dutch troops were sent there to safeguard the public peace.

² Cf. his speech at Padua on 24 Sept. 1938; he counted up to seven by inventing a Rumanian minority in Czechoslovakia, and then called it eight.

him a personal message from the Führer.¹ When he got back to the north he knew that Hitler had named 1 October to Chamberlain and he referred to the fatal date in one of his last speeches. This was not, even now, what the Germans had intended, but Hitler made the best of it and followed up Mussolini with his own tirade against Beneš at the *Sportpalast* on 26 September. At 13.00 on 27 September he 'ordered the movement of the assault units from their exercise areas to their jumping-off points'.² He did not intend to be defrauded of his war by the 'inept' rulers of Great Britain and France.

This is not the place to examine the Munich Conference from a general point of view, but only as a part of the history of the Axis to which it bears a particular relationship. Attolico had urged the calling of an international conference, and Göring on 9 September had suggested to Magistrati that Führer and Duce should meet at the Brenner; there had also been feelers from Paris, but the initiative which led directly to the Munich Conference was that of Chamberlain. The Duce returned from Verona with the news that Germany would mobilize at 2 p.m. on 28 September to receive the British request for mediation. The war he had not believed in was upon him. He had been playing with fire. Chamberlain gave him the chance not to get burnt, but instead for his features to be lit up by the glow of the flames as they died away. It was probably the greatest good fortune he ever enjoyed.

Attolico was the undecorated hero of the occasion. A telephone message came through from Rome to the Berlin Embassy at 11.5 on 28 September; after Ciano had got the connexion with Attolico, the Duce himself took up the receiver. 'He began by saying that he stood at the Führer's side in every eventuality, but believing Germany at this moment to have triumphed both morally and materially, he asked the Führer to delay all marching orders for twenty-four hours. A reply was asked for by midday, two hours before Germany was due to mobilize. With the message translated a hatless Attolico rushed out to find his car, but the chauffeur had disappeared. He hailed a taxi and reached the Reichskanzlei, already vibrating with military preparation, just after 11.30 a.m. The French Ambassador was

¹ Ciano Minute of talk with Mackensen, 22 Sept. 1938.

² See Schmundt file in *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, loc. cit.

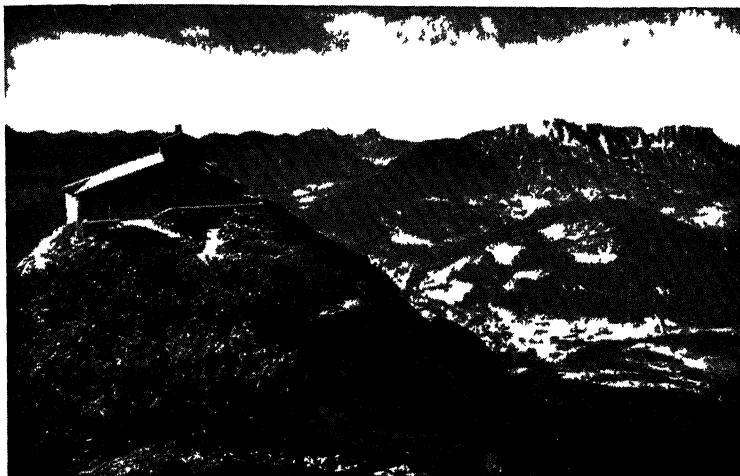
closeted with an excited Hitler when a S.S. officer came in to announce the Italian Ambassador with an urgent message.¹ Hitler sprang up and left François-Poncet alone for a quarter of an hour. When he came back at about 11.45 he announced that his friend Mussolini had also asked him to hold things up. He paid no more attention to François-Poncet and soon afterwards withdrew. At 12 noon Attolico telephoned the Führer's acquiescence and Mussolini suggested a Four-Power meeting.² Hitler offered him Frankfurt or Munich; the Duce chose Munich and within a few hours Paris and London had agreed.

There was one pattern which ran through the tangle of negotiations over the Sudeten German question and was indeed the motif of Hitlerite 'diplomacy'. Brusque demands had come from Henlein or from Hitler which were then trimmed and pruned in the Western capitals so that their rudeness be concealed and the Czechs induced to accept them. But by then they were always 'superseded' and the whole business must begin again. Before he left Berlin Attolico informed himself carefully as to what Germany would now claim, but in the train to Munich Weizsacker told the Italians that Ribbentrop, who was determined that Mussolini should not cheat Hitler of his war, would see that the Führer put forward even more intransigent demands. On arrival at Munich Attolico informed the Duce of all this and gave him the penultimate programme. On this occasion the Duce played up smartly. Declaring that he knew his German friends were in agreement he put forward the demands which Ribbentrop had intended to 'supersede'. The Axis creaked. But Hitler could not face isolation yet. Thus the Pact of Munich was based upon the obsolete Berlin programme carefully noted by the tireless Attolico, formulae which the Western Powers found themselves able to accept.

This was one of the strangest episodes in the history of the two dictators. At first Hitler seemed stunned by the fact that the other Nietzschean colossus of the world should have halted him. At the Munich conversations he stood in the shadow of Mussolini, who could put up a creditable show of speaking the

¹ According to Magistrati, Attolico managed to get his message to Hitler independently of Goring, who tried at Nuremberg to take the credit for its delivery. It is not true that Mussolini telephoned directly to Hitler, as Goring claimed.

² Without the Czech representative proposed by Chamberlain.



THE BERGHOF, ABOVE BERCHTESGADEN



HITLER WITH SIR NEVILLE HENDERSON (*left*) AND PAUL SCHMIDT (*centre*) AT THE LAST DIPLOMATIC RECEPTION IN BERLIN BEFORE THE OUTBREAK OF WAR (SPRING 1939)

four languages of the day though his English was particularly sketchy; Hitler was even more helpless linguistically than Daladier and Chamberlain, whom, nevertheless, he there learnt to despise as vermin. The Italians on this occasion managed to do just as much military swaggering as the Germans, and, if François-Poncet¹ is to be believed, Hitler behaved rather like a doting flapper towards Mussolini, who was delighted to find himself the centre of attraction. Halfway through the evening, after conferring since 12.45 p.m., the atmosphere still being strained, the French and British were sent off to sup in each other's company while the Axis comrades sat down to table together. Hitler spouted hysterical venom against the Czechs, and Mussolini could do little but nod periodically, in sinister anticipation of their future meetings. At 1.30 a.m. on 30 September the Munich Agreement was completed.

Superficially Munich might be counted as a Mussolini triumph. The Duce had shown that he did not fear war but he had proved to be the saviour of peace. He returned to Italy perhaps more popular than he had ever been before; the King paid a tribute to his success, for he came from his estate near by at San Rossore to meet him at Florence, on the journey back to Rome. For two years now the Italians had felt themselves slipping down a slope into the sea of vassalage to Hitler, but now it seemed that the Duce, alone in the world, could forbid the tide to rise. The Italian public, like the public in Britain and France, was only too eager to believe that Hitler 'wanted no Czechs' and that this was Hitler's 'last territorial claim in Europe'; if this were so the period of crises might be over and peace might be secure. The British recognition of Victor Emmanuel as Emperor of Ethiopia on 16 November 1938 crowned the Duce's success at Munich.

¹ Op. cit.

IX

The Steel Pact

IT is quite clear now that Adolf Hitler was extremely angry at the temporary interference with his plans at Munich which meant that he had only acquired broad fringes, but not the whole, of Bohemia and Moravia. Oddly but characteristically he did not blame the brother Superman. At a birthday party at his old friends', the publisher Bruckmann and his Rumanian wife, on 14 October, this was made clear. 'Der zuverlässige Freund sei Mussolini, der unbedingt "marschiert" sein würde.'¹ But it made very little difference. We know that he had decided to seize Austria and all Czechoslovakia for a start, and he was already examining the requirements of breaking 'all Czech resistance in Bohemia and Moravia'; a week after the tea-party he signed a directive with plans to bring this about.²

Meanwhile, the gestures of carrying out the Pact of Munich were half-heartedly gone through. The new Czech and Slovak frontiers had to be fixed, and when adjusted they were to have had a quadruple guarantee. The Munich Agreement, however, had only laid down directions for the new Czech-German frontier, and when Mussolini had expressed the view that his Hungarian³ and Polish friends must be satisfied before he could guarantee the future Czecho-Slovak State, Hitler was only too pleased. Three Four-Power sub-commissions of the International Commission⁴ were set up to trace the new frontiers and arrange the necessary transfer of powers of all kinds; the French and British representatives noted with some interest that their Italian colleagues seemed as surprised as they were themselves by the shameless dictation of the German members of the sub-commissions. The Frontier sub-commission, for instance, was

¹ U. von Hassell, *Vom Andern Deutschland* (Atlantis Verlag, 1946), p. 27 = 'Mussolini was his reliable friend and would certainly have fought.'

² See *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part ii, p. 42.

³ The Hungarian Foreign Minister, Count Csáky, had even paid Mussolini an impromptu visit on 29 Sept. at the Prinz-Karl Palais at Munich.

⁴ The Czechs were supposed to be represented too, but this stipulation, like that for plebiscites in certain areas, was a dead letter.

Ukrainians,¹ the big majority of whom lived in the most fertile Soviet territory, and who could always, it was supposed, be kept in a state of helotry by the Germans.

Until the end of October, therefore, Ribbentrop sabotaged any sort of arbitration with regard to Hungary's new frontiers. The Italians would have preferred Four-Power action on this issue, too,² but feeling it was useless to propose it, they pressed hard for Axis arbitration.³ Hitler's desire for a written military alliance with Italy was now sufficiently strong for him to wish to humour the Duce over the Magyar-Slovak controversy. On 2 November, within five days of an ostentatious German surrender on this point, Ciano met Ribbentrop at Vienna and a new frontier was drawn by which Hungary gained the three towns of Kassa, Munkács, and Ungvár, though Ruthenia remained as an all-but-independent federal member of what had become a Czecho-Slovak Confederation. This German-Italian award was signed at the Belvedere, Prince Eugene's magnificent Hildebrandt palace. Ciano could not help teasing Ribbentrop about the situation. 'My dear Ribbentrop,' he said, 'you can't, you know, defend Czechoslovakia with the same enthusiasm as that with which you destroyed her a month ago at Munich.'⁴ That was the sort of thing Ribbentrop never forgave.

Axis relations continued to the end of the year to be exceedingly tricky. Mussolini had not much appreciated Hitler's signature of Chamberlain's perpetual peace pledge at Munich, though it was obviously meaningless. No sooner had the Duce improved his relations with Britain in order to launch the anti-French campaign announced in Ciano's speech to the Chamber on 30 November than Ribbentrop left for Paris, where he spent the two days from 6 to 8 December.⁵ A declaration was signed on 6 December guaranteeing the Franco-German frontier; although respect was paid at the same time to each country's

¹ This idea had been invented by Austrian professors.

² The Munich Pact decreed this if the 'respective Governments' had not come to terms at the end of three months.

³ See Ciano Minute, 28 Oct. 1938.

⁴ Information from Count Magistrati.

⁵ The prelude to this had been François-Poncet's farewell visit to Hitler on 18 Oct. before he left Germany to become French Ambassador in Rome. Ciano's speech on 30 Nov. was the occasion of notorious demonstrations against the French with cries for Tunis, Nice, and Corsica.

relations with other Powers, Mussolini resented the timing of the German Minister's visit.¹ Count Welczeck, the German Ambassador in Paris, afterwards described Ribbentrop's behaviour in the French capital as completely pathological; on every occasion he required that there should be more fuss made about him than on the occasion of the British royal visit to Paris in the previous summer. Meanwhile the world, including Italy, had been horrified by the November pogroms in Germany, while the Italians themselves, and especially the Vatican, observed with distress the anti-Semitic laws which were piling up in Rome.

In addition to his absorption of pre-1914 Austria-Hungary, which, like pre-1914 Germany, had impinged upon Poland, it has been seen that Hitler required, before he went farther, to transform the Anti-Komintern Pact into a military alliance. During the summer Ribbentrop had constantly tried to encourage the Italians² to think in these terms, and, at Munich he had presented Mussolini and Ciano with the draft of a defensive triple alliance. After Munich Hitler felt that the Duce was showing too much independence; at this point it was, however, the Japanese who held things up. Oshima, the former Military Attaché, now Ambassador in Berlin, voiced the aggressive and pro-German tone of the Japanese Army, but naval and financial circles in Tokyo wished on no account to break with Britain. Ribbentrop felt impatient. He knew that Attolico, his eyes opened by what he had experienced in Berlin, had become hostile to a written alliance with Germany. In the days when Ribbentrop was Ambassador to Britain he had sent his agent, Raumer, in the autumn of 1937, to arrange a sudden visit to Rome. Now on Sunday, 23 October, he suddenly telephoned to Ciano saying he would like to come to Rome on the following Friday or Saturday, the 28th or 29th, as he had a personal mission to the Duce on ~~behalf of the Fuhrer~~. Only on the 25th, when the thing was arranged, did he tell Attolico that he would be leaving for Italy the next day; even then he feared that Attolico might put a spoke in the wheel and he mentioned

¹ In a report to the Fascist Grand Council on 5 Feb. 1939 he stated very unconvincingly that he had agreed in October to Ribbentrop's Paris visit.

² The Italians were not averse, but Ciano wished, for once, to be prudent; he disliked the form of the negotiations with the Japanese, through military personnel and behind the backs of the diplomats. See Mario Toscano, *op. cit.*

nothing but the Hungarian question as the cause of his journey. He did, in fact, preface his alliance offer by giving way over Hungary in his preliminary talk with Ciano.

‘On 28 October Ribbentrop urged a triple German-Italian-Japanese military alliance upon the Duce and his son-in-law more definitely than ever before. The alliance was necessary, he said, for the inevitable war against the democracies which Hitler expected in three or four years, though of course, he interpolated at one point, the present situation was very favourable for the Axis and *from September 1939*¹ onwards a conflict with the democracies could be faced. Hitherto the Fuhrer had hesitated over the alliance for two reasons, one that it might have weakened Chamberlain and Daladier, and the other that it might have induced an Anglo-American alliance. He had now come to the opposite conclusions: the appeasers were safe and any threat of war would fortify American isolationism.

Mussolini, however, replied that Italian opinion was not ‘yet’ ripe. Axis, yes: German military alliance, no. He referred to the Army—the officers, not the rank and file—and his bugbear, the *bourgeoisie*, as hostile, and he added that Germany’s quarrel with the Catholic Church created a serious obstacle. Later, when the time had come, the alliance must not be purely defensive, ‘since no one is thinking of attacking the totalitarian states’, said the Duce; for our part we Italians know where we are going but we must then have the objectives of our alliance defined.² Of course, said Ribbentrop obligingly, the Mediterranean will become an Italian sea. Later he implied that Germany was eager for Italy to have her turn of acquisition soon.

In December a rumoured military agreement between Great Britain and France changed Mussolini’s unstable mind, but Attolico carefully failed to find Ribbentrop to tell him so. During Christmas spent at Rocca delle Caminate the Duce’s latest decision crystallized, and when he returned to Rome on New Year’s Day, 1939, he ordered Ciano to write Ribbentrop a letter accepting the German proposal of 28 October for the transformation of the ‘Anti-Komintern Pact’ into a military alliance which, it was suggested, the Japanese also seemed ready to sign towards the end of January. The reasons offered

¹ My italics.

² See Ciano Minute of Duce-Ribbentrop-Ciano meeting, 28 Oct. 1938.

to Ribbentrop for Mussolini's decision were exactly the opposite to Hitler's reasons for proposing a military alliance. Ciano gave them as:

- ✓(1) 'The now certain existence of a military pact between France and Great Britain.'
- ✓(2) 'The prevalence of a warlike attitude in responsible French circles.'
- (3) 'United States military preparation which is intended to supply men and, above all, materials to the Western democracies in case of necessity.'¹

Attolico, who had been in Italy on leave, was charged with this letter to Ribbentrop with which he arrived in Berlin on 4 January. According to Magistrati he was by no means so content as Ciano's diary suggests, and determined, as far as possible, to use his instructions about commercial discussions² and the South Tyrolese question as the conditions of any alliance. 'It would be a good thing to follow up Hitler's project for removing from South Tyrol the Germans who wish to go', Ciano noted in his diary on 2 January.³ Ribbentrop immediately produced the drafts of a Tripartite Political Pact and a secret military convention, both of which Attolico dispatched to Ciano on 6 January. When on 18 January Ciano went off for a five days' visit to Yugoslavia, he expected to travel from Belgrade to Berlin to sign a Tripartite Alliance.

Ciano was fascinated by the warmth with which he was received in Yugoslavia compared with the frigidity of the atmosphere when he first went there in 1937. The change was due, he established, to the state of fear and suspicion of Germany in which the Yugoslavs now lived, so that Italy had become a palatable alternative. When Ciano broached the matter of Albania (which lay so close to his heart) to Stoyadinović, the latter hesitated for a moment but then fell in with Ciano's plans, since they would be relatively easy to realize if Germany were agreeable; he added that though he foresaw no German opposition he was convinced that the Nazis would be secretly annoyed by an Italian occupation of Albania.⁴

¹ Ciano to Ribbentrop, 2 Jan. 1939.

² A commercial agreement was signed in Feb. 1939—see Ciano Diary, 13 Feb. 1939.

³ See Goring's conversations with Magistrati, above.

⁴ See Ciano Minute on Yugoslav journey, 18-23 Jan. 1939.

Unfortunately for the Fascists, Stoyadinović, who was, as he told Ciano, working up to a Fascist system on the Italian model, fell from power a fortnight later. Thereupon Ciano persuaded Mussolini to fix the first week in April for Italian action against Albania. 'In the meantime I shall see Ribbentrop and perhaps mention this to him.'¹ But the Duce, as usual, vacillated. Again the Japanese were holding things up, but he must at least have his pact with Berlin before seizing Albania. Indeed, at this point he conveniently developed a preference for a dual alliance as less provocative to America and Britain,² though the Japanese were making difficulties about an alliance aimed against any country but Russia. Suddenly there was startling news that the Germans themselves had designs upon oil-wells in Albania. Ciano warned Mackensen that Italy considered Albania as all but part of Italy, and the Germans made haste to deny 'baseless' rumours. It was important to them to keep Rome sweet-tempered for the Ides of March, and at last it was agreed that there should very soon be Italo-German Staff talks *dandone notizia alla stampa*.³

The moment for the breaking of the last Czech resistance was approaching. This had become obvious to any competent observer in Berlin. It was particularly clear to Attolico because Ribbentrop sedulously avoided him from the beginning of March. On 11 March, at the *Heldenfeier*, Attolico, observing Hitler's hectic face, said to himself that the Fuhrer was certainly on the eve of a *coup*.⁴ He telephoned at once to Hesse's residence in Kassel⁵ to inquire after the health of Princess Mafalda and thus learnt that Hesse had been called urgently to Berlin. This suggested only too forcibly that the 'winged messenger' was waiting for a 'ritualistic message' for Rome, as Attolico warned the Palazzo Chigi. At last, on 14 March, he was able to see Ribbentrop, who made clear to him that Germany would 'incorporate Bohemia (with Moravia), make Slovakia a vassal

¹ Ciano Diary, 7 Feb. 1939. He had already made a vague indication in Vienna at the time of the Belvedere Award.

² *Ibid.*, 8 Feb. 1939.

³ 'To be announced in the press.' See Ciano's telegram to Attolico, 10 Mar. 1939. The Staff talks at last materialized at Innsbruck on 5 April.

⁴ Cf. M. Donosti, *Mussolini e l'Europa, la politica estera fascista* (Leonardo, Rome, 1945).

⁵ The Prince was *Ober-Präsident* of Hessen-Nassau.

state, and cede Ruthenia to Hungary'.¹ In the night Hacha was bludgeoned into submission and the next morning Hesse set out for Italy, without advising the Italian Embassy this time, and with only a verbal message. Hitler thanked Mussolini for the understanding he had again shown; this last operation had liberated another twenty divisions which could now serve Axis policy elsewhere. But if the Duce were contemplating any large-scale action it would be better to wait another couple of years when a hundred such divisions would be available. Mussolini snapped back that he required no foreign troops for eventual Italian action against France, he only wished to know that Germany was disposed to give him raw materials, coal, and arms.

This time Italian opinion was at least as indignant as at the time of the Anschluss; Hassell, indeed, heard from friends in Italy that 'die Stimmung gegen uns dort fast wieder wie 1934 ist'.² Ciano said to a colleague that 15 March 1939 was sadder for Italy than the Peace of Campoformio. In his diary he wrote: 'The German action destroys not the Czechoslovakia of Versailles but the state established at Munich and Vienna.'³ What weight can one give in future to the other declarations and promises which concern us more directly? It is useless to deny that all this worries and humiliates the Italian people.' The remedy he offered was, of course, immediate action against Albania.

Mussolini was in two minds. He knew that Hesse's visits had become grotesque—'every time Hitler takes another state, he sends me a message'. But he thought that Germany was now so strong that even if everyone else, including Italy, allied against her, she could only be held, not driven back: it seemed to him therefore that now, more than ever, was the time to ally with the winner (16 March). This was the first important divergence between Mussolini and Ciano. On 19 March the Duce agreed that the German alliance must be dropped—'the very stones would cry out against it',⁴ but on 21 March he admonished the

¹ Ciano Diary, 14 Mar. 1939. The Anglo-French guarantee of the Munich frontiers was forgotten by everyone except the Czechs

² Hassell, op. cit., p. 54 'Feeling against us there is almost the same as in 1934.'

³ The Belvedere, or Vienna, Award had itself constituted a breach of the Munich Agreement.

⁴ *Si rivolterebbero le pietre.*

Fascist Grand Council in favour of 'una politica di intransigente fedeltà all' Asse'. 'You are polishing Germany's boots', said Balbo.¹

Ciano had never seen his Duce in such distress: for Mussolini knew at this moment that he was impaled on the horns of the dilemma which Hitler had created for him. 'The Balkans were quivering with the shock of the German occupation of Prague, and there was talk of the Croats putting themselves under German protection. 'In that case,' said Mussolini, 'either we must fire the first shot against Germany or be swept away by a revolution the Fascists themselves will make; no one will tolerate the swastika in the Adriatic.'² Ciano sent for Mackensen and reminded him that the condition of the Axis was Germany's recognition of the Mediterranean (including Croatia) as Italy's sphere; Berlin promptly sent a docile reply, the Mediterranean never could nor should be German. Mussolini received this answer, which was contained in a marvellously hypocritical letter from Ribbentrop to Ciano,³ with scepticism.

In a moment, however, Mussolini was reacting to the old turncoat taunts—'We can't be political whores.' He was irritated by the activity of the democracies; he was irritated by anti-German comments from the King. He must stick to the German alliance, but its objects must be defined and the Germans must stick to their own proposals about the South Tyrol. At this point the twentieth anniversary of the foundation of the Fasci was celebrated, and Hitler overwhelmed Mussolini with a personal letter⁴ which was so fulsome that both the German and the Italian Foreign Office preferred to prevent its publication, though the Duce himself felt that this 'robbed it of much value'. The letter spoke first of the rebuilding of the Roman Empire by Mussolini. With the foundation of Fascism a new path was opened for humanity. . . . Providence has decreed the fundamental similarity between Nazism and Fascism. . . . 'Nothing', wrote Hitler, 'can in my eyes bind the German and Italian people more closely to one another than the diabolical hatred felt towards us by the rest of the world

¹ Ciano Diary, 21 Mar. 1939.

² Ibid, 17 Mar. 1939.

³ Ribbentrop to Ciano (Personal), 20 Mar. 1939.

⁴ Hitler to Mussolini, 25 Mar. 1939. Mackensen, when handing the letter to Anfuso, asked for it to be kept strictly secret.

which we have never harmed. You felt this when you created the Empire. We Germans have experienced it in the last twelve months during which we have simply put an end to an intolerable situation.' These siren notes were too much for the Duce. In the interests of an accurate analysis it should perhaps be recalled that since 1937 Mussolini's duodenal ulcer had been troubling him afresh: the victims of these ulcers are the victims of doubt. On 26 March he made an aggressively pro-Axis speech: after all, if he gave up the Axis, with which he had now identified Fascism, the Fascist régime might be shaken.

It has been seen that, for nearly a year, Ciano had been urging the annexation of Albania to counterpoise the aggressions of Hitler. He now took the childish satisfaction of trying to spring this Italian *coup* upon the German Embassy in Rome in an unconvincing way. On 6 April Mackensen came to him to say that there was talk in every Roman café of an impending attack upon Albania, whereupon Ciano came out with well-worn sentences about the necessary restoration of order; these were duly conveyed to Berlin, though Attolico had informed Ribbentrop on 5 April of the action intended and Ribbentrop had expressed his approval. The Nazis were doubly delighted. It was a justification of their own methods, while at the same time the Albanian move disturbed the relations of London and Paris, as of Belgrade, with Rome, and all in favour of Berlin. When Ciano returned from a flying visit to Tirana he sent secret messages to his Embassies in Paris and London that they were to spread the notion of the anti-German character of the attack upon Albania, but their efforts to do so met with little success. Thus the Albanian action, which Ciano had genuinely planned as a move against German influence, increased Mussolini's fear of isolation and threw him into the arms of Germany. The negative attitude of the Japanese was confirmed on 2 April,¹ and this destroyed the possibility of avoiding too great dependence upon a single strong ally. It all suited Hitler marvellously. He had ceased to care so much about Japan now when the first flicker of a *rapprochement* between Germany and Russia had caught his eye.²

The Italian 'Hands off Croatia' move and seizure of Albania were rather as if a cat had caught two mice rather proudly at

¹ See M. Toscano, *op. cit.*

² See *Nazi-Soviet Relations* (U.S. Department of State, 1948).

the side of a tiger which was chewing the bones of a man. The occupation of Prague had given Germany, more cheaply but a few months later than Hitler had planned, Bohemia and Moravia with their powerful industries; it brought in its wake the subjection of Slovakia and Rumania by the treaties signed on 23 March, the Rumanian treaty safeguarding Germany's oil supplies. At the end of April the leaders of Hungary, Teleki and Csáky this time, came to Germany to receive their master's orders; after four and a half months of the Belvedere Award, they had got their common frontier with Poland, but in six months' time Poland herself was to be destroyed. Ribbentrop told them that if Britain and France should make war against Germany, Italy and Japan would immediately be at her side, and he had no doubt that Hungary would join them. The visitors acquiesced; they also took orders helplessly about the privileges to be granted to the German minority in Hungary. It is not uninteresting that Ribbentrop repeated to this audience what he had said to the Duce on his last visit to Rome, that the number of Axis divisions 'must be counted as double in view of Adolf Hitler and Mussolini being in command'.¹

Poland was the next direct victim on Hitler's programme. A month before Munich, that is, on 26 August 1938, the German Foreign Office had drawn up a secret document in which, after noting the utility of racialist slogans in the destruction of Czechoslovakia, it was added that 'this method of approach towards Czechoslovakia is to be recommended because of our relationship with Poland. . . . The fact is that after the liquidation of the Czech question, it will be generally assumed that Poland will be the next in turn. But the later this assumption sinks into international politics as a firm factor the better.'² The Nazis need not have worried; even their friends grasped none of this until the Ides of March 1939.

Already in October and November 1938 Hitler was drawing up directives aimed against Poland (and Lithuania), and it was at this time that Ribbentrop first asked Lipski for Danzig and an extra-territorial motor road across Pomorze. On 21 March 1939 he returned to the charge, and his arguments were reinforced by Germany's seizure of Memel on 22 March and by

¹ See German Minute of this meeting.

² See *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part II, p. 134. TC-76—G B. 31.

Hitler's denunciation of the German-Polish Treaty (of 1934) in his Reichstag speech on 28 April. At the end of February, when Ciano visited Warsaw, the extensive anti-German demonstrations, made especially by Polish students, were an interesting pendant to the statements in the *Gazeta Polska* about the common interests of Poland and Italy. At the time Ciano felt a little embarrassed, but he was first actually alarmed about Poland when Goring came to Rome in the middle of April for the offer of the Crown of Albania to the King of Italy. The tone in which Goring spoke of the Poles reminded Ciano 'too peculiarly' of that in which he had spoken of Austrians and Czechs *in altri tempi*.¹ A few days later Attolico reported that he regarded German action against Poland as imminent. 'That would be war and we have the right to be informed in time', noted Ciano, and arranged to hasten a meeting with Ribbentrop.² This was all the more necessary since the Albanian operation had revealed the military inefficiency of Italy after the long strain of her intervention in Spain. At last the struggle there was drawing to its end, though it was 18 May 1939 before Franco entered Madrid.

While Goring's attitude towards Poland had made Ciano impatient to see Ribbentrop, the German leader's conversations in Rome had put great emphasis upon German-Italian solidarity.³ A fortnight later the Rumanian Foreign Minister brought a message from Bonnet to Mussolini almost begging Italy to reconcile herself with the West. Gafencu⁴ has recorded the state of mind in which he found the Duce on 1 May, evidently tormented by the decision he was in the act of making in favour of a treaty with Hitler. It was three days after this that he gave Ciano his final instructions for his meeting with Ribbentrop. Three months earlier, in a report to the Fascist Grand Council dated 5 February, Mussolini had declared in favour of negotiating with France (on the basis of the repudiation⁵ of the 1935 Franco-Italian Treaty) because Italy could not risk war until 1942. He instructed Ciano now at the beginning of May to make clear that war could not be risked until 1943

¹ Ciano Diary, 16 Apr. 1939.

² Ibid., 20 Apr. 1939. On 30 April Ciano wired to Berlin suggesting that Ribbentrop should meet him in north Italy.

³ See *Nazi Conspiracy and Aggression*, vol. iv, pp. 518-19.

⁴ G. Gafencu, op. cit.

⁵ Announced on 17 Dec. 1938.

for a number of reasons. In the first place Italy needed to pacify Libya, Albania, and, most of all, Ethiopia, where the Italians were in difficulties; later they would be able to recruit large numbers of soldiers there. Further, Italy required time to complete six ships then under construction, while all her artillery needed to be renewed. There were a million Italians in France, the bulk of whom Mussolini wished to repatriate before it came to war. If the Axis Powers waited Japan might have mastered the position in China and therefore be very much more useful. Italy needed time to remove her main industrial centres from the Po valley to the south. Finally, the Duce was counting upon the international exhibition which he had planned to hold in Rome in 1942 to bring in a substantial amount of foreign currency of which he was grievously in need.

In addition, the Duce's instructions reverted to the importance of further preparing Axis opinion, especially by means of a *détente* between Berlin and the Vatican. With regard to Russia it was desirable to prevent her from joining the Western Powers, but nothing more should be attempted; any sort of pact with her would be incomprehensible to the Axis populations and would therefore weaken the Axis structure. Mussolini also complained that the South Tyrolese situation as it stood played into the hands of the enemies of the Axis.¹ Most ironical of all, he stated that the military agreements envisaged must be carefully prepared so that, given the specified circumstances, they would come almost automatically into effect. He wished, no doubt, to make sure of the Japanese.

The momentous meeting between the Italian and German Foreign Ministers at the week-end of 6 May 1939 was conditioned by Mussolini's susceptibilities towards the city of Milan and towards the French; occasionally history makes these tasteless jokes. Milan was the city of the début of Fascism; it was at the Piazza San Sepolcro in Milan that the Fascist Party had presented itself to Italy in 1919. But Milan was the capital of Lombardy where feeling against the Austrians in particular

¹ The instructions handed to Ciano by the Duce on 4 May must be what Badoglio refers to as a document drawn up in April 1939. Cf. P. Badoglio, *Italia nella Seconda Guerra Mondiale* (Mondadori, 1946). One other trifle deserves mention. Usually the Germans lied to the Italians, but in this Memorandum Mussolini stated that he had had no further approaches from France since those of Baudoin (see Ciano Diary), although Gafencu had just brought the message from Bonnet.

and Germans in general had always been strong. The French press, which had a capacity of getting under Mussolini's skin, had been saying that though he had originally announced its birth in Milan, there would be hostile demonstrations against the Axis there now. At first it had been suggested that Ribbentrop should meet Ciano at some small place on Lake Garda or Lake Como, but Mussolini insisted that Milan be put to the test. Ciano arranged with Parenti, the *Federale*, that special precautions should be taken, but was himself surprised at the warmth—or was it good organization?—of his own and Ribbentrop's reception.

Ciano found Ribbentrop reasonable and moderate for the first time; in spite of the quips of the Vienna Award days, they got on rather well. While agreeing to an alliance with Germany, Ciano insisted that Italy could not go to war until after 1942, for the reasons Mussolini had enumerated.¹ Ribbentrop said that Hitler must have Danzig and that he would insist on the *autostrada* across the Corridor in order to relieve the atmosphere in Germany. Ribbentrop 'confirms that it is Germany's intention to let the question mature, ready, however, to react in the sharpest way should the Poles ever change to an offensive policy'. After a few months France and England would have lost all interest in Poland.

'Germany, too, is convinced of the necessity of a period of peace of not less than four or five years', though she could, of course, be ready for war much sooner. This is what Ciano wrote in his official minute; though he was lazy there is no reason to think his positive statements were inexact. On 11 April, twenty-five days earlier, Hitler had issued his 'Directive for the Armed Forces 1939-40' requiring them to be fully prepared for the seizure of Danzig and for *Fall Weiss* or the attack upon Poland. Could falsity go much farther?

After their talk, Ciano gave a dinner for Ribbentrop at the Continental Hotel, and during the evening he telephoned to the Duce to report general agreement along the lines of his instructions. Mussolini reacted with nervous enthusiasm; it is thought that the ~~Anglo~~ Anglo-Turkish negotiations mentioned in the House of Commons the day before were preying on his mind. Defiantly he ordered Ciano to publish the news that a written Italo-

¹ These reasons were repeated in the Cavallero Memorandum—see below.

German alliance had been agreed upon in Milan.¹ Implying that although the Japanese had been delaying things all the year it might still be better to wait for them, Ribbentrop had hesitated at first to accept a dual alliance.² But in fact he had got exactly what Hitler wanted. Before the Fuhrer went farther with his offensive against Poland he required, as he thought, the Italian Alliance to frighten off Britain and France. As for the Japanese, though Ribbentrop did press once again for their inclusion a week later,³ Litvinoff had fallen⁴ and from now on Germany soft-pedalled on anti-Russian motifs. For some weeks Ribbentrop had been hinting at a *détente* between Russia and the Axis,⁵ and in Milan he continued to do so; when he left Italy he returned to Berchtesgaden to join in certain expert discussions on Russia.⁶ Neither Mussolini nor Ciano nor the Italian diplomats in Berlin took this change in German policy seriously enough; Attolico had drawn attention to it in a telegram to Ciano on 25 April, and it has been seen that Ciano had instructions to protest against it on 6 May, but the protest was completely ineffectual.

The extraordinary ineptitude of Fascist diplomacy was illustrated still more forcibly in the matter of the drafting of the treaty. Ciano managed to veto 24 May as the date of the signature since that was always celebrated as the anniversary of the Italian declaration of war against Austria-Hungary in 1915. But he left the entire wording of the new pact to the Germans. The Fuhrer did not waste the opportunity. On 13 May Ciano was startled to receive the text inspired by Hitler and drafted by Gaus. 'Non ho mai letto un patto simile; è vera e propria dinamite.'⁷ Though Attolico insisted that the permanence of the Italo-German frontier should be guaranteed in the preamble, and Mussolini, it seems, reduced the duration from eternity to ten years, the main German draft was obediently swallowed by Italy; it certainly created an automatic liability.⁸

¹ I agree with M. Toscano, *op. cit.*, in discarding Ciano's Verona prison version where he also refers to a secret clause which never existed.

² Ciano Diary, 6-7 May 1939.

³ *Ibid.*, 14 May 1939.

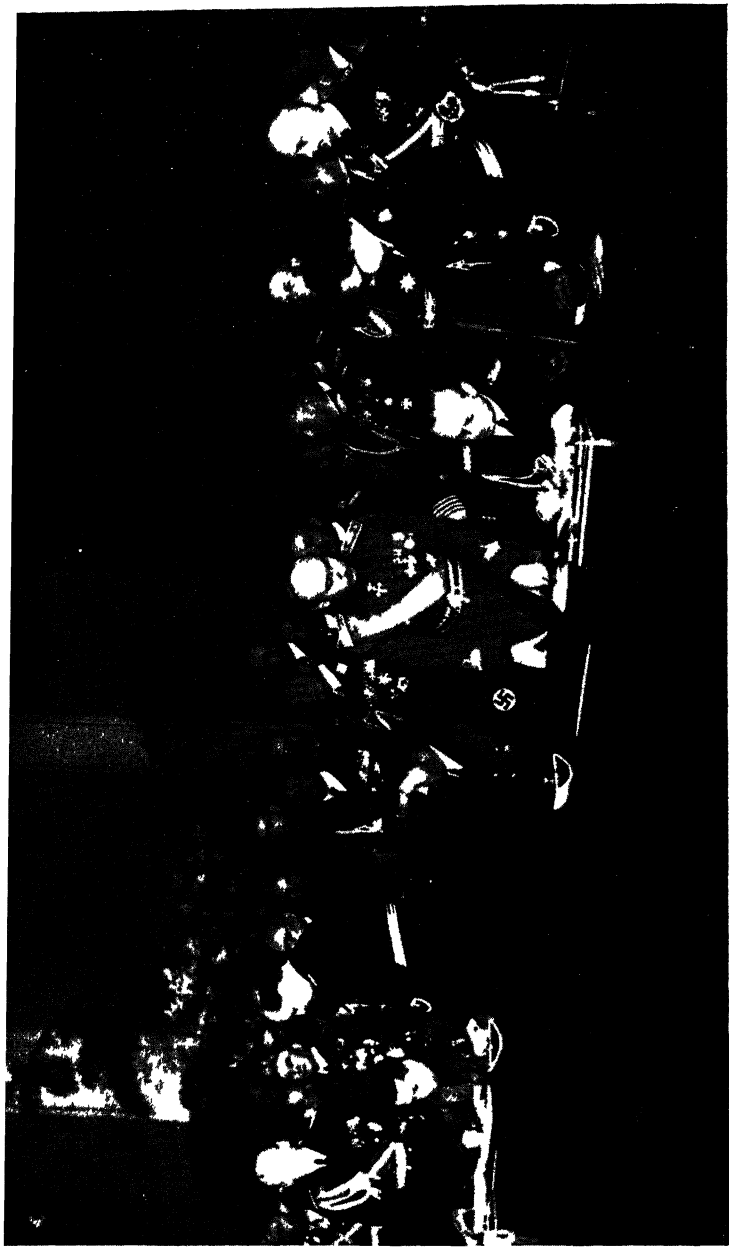
⁴ On 3 May 1939.

⁵ See M. Toscano, *op. cit.*

⁶ Hilger and Schnurre had been summoned to advise the Fuhrer; they were the German Foreign Office specialists on Russia.

⁷ Ciano Diary, 13 May 1939. (Text in Appendix at end of this book.)

⁸ Cf. Ciano's instructions of 4 May 1939, above.



THE SIGNING OF THE STEEL PACT, 22 MAY 1939

While Attolico was acutely aware of the folly of this, it is curious that he, like the other Italians concerned, still attached value to a German signature; they thought that Article II of the new Alliance Pact, which bound the high contracting parties to consult with one another immediately should their common interests 'be endangered through international events', would have the advantage of being a safeguard in the future against German 'surprises'. Article III, however, cancelled out any advantage created by Article II, for it stated that 'If it should happen, against the wishes and hopes of the contracting parties, that one of them becomes involved in warlike complications with another Power or with other Powers, the other contracting party will come to its aid as an ally and will support it with all its military forces on land, on sea, and in the air'. There was not even the conventional protection that the *casus foederis* required the aggression to have been committed by the enemy. The preamble to the treaty, moreover, was definitely aggressive in tone with regard to the securing of *Lebensraum*—in conjunction, of course, with peace (paragraph 3).

Ciano arrived at the Adlon in Berlin on Sunday, 21 May, to sign the new pact the next day. Ribbentrop, he says,¹ assured him again that Germany required a 'long' period of peace, at least three years. (The Germans were so insincere and careless about this that the period changed every time.) At a dinner given by Attolico, Ciano invested his German colleague with the Collar of the Annunziata, which made him the cousin of the King of Italy. This brought tears of jealousy into Goring's eyes; he made a great fuss and said he, Goring, deserved the decoration since he had been the true promoter of the German-Italian Alliance.

The treaty was signed with much ceremony on 22 May by Ribbentrop and Ciano in the presence of Hitler, Goring, R  d  r, and Brauchitsch. At one point Mussolini had had the unfortunate idea of naming it the *Patto di Sangue*, but it has gone down to history as the Steel Pact. In the previous October the Duce had said the alliance must not be purely defensive, but this was probably the most frankly 'offensive' alliance in modern diplomatic history. Through the mission of Hans Frank leading up to the Axis Protocols (October, 1936), and as the crown to

¹ Ciano Diary, 21 May 1939.

all Ribbentrop's advances, Hitler had attained his objective. In point of fact by this treaty Mussolini gave him *carte blanche* to attack Poland and to plunge into the Second World War.

A secret protocol was signed at the same time about which the maddest conjecture has been rife: it was said that Hitler and Mussolini agreed to give each other support in the case of either being threatened by internal enemies, a possibility which Hitler would never have admitted. When the Allies captured this among all the other documents it was found to be nothing but a postscript to Article IV of the treaty. Article IV provided for the establishment of a permanent commission, subject to the two Foreign Ministers, for the intensification of military co-operation so that Article III could be implemented with adequate speed. The secret protocol provided only for the sending of specialists to the respective Embassies to develop the press, news, and propaganda services on behalf of the Axis and to the detriment of its enemies.

As a matter of fact a good deal of propaganda in favour of the Steel Pact was required in each of the Axis countries themselves. Ciano, who was very self-conscious about this sort of thing, was pleased with the Berlin crowd reactions to his visit, but Magistrati noted that they were far less spontaneous than in October 1936. Hassell, who felt a natural resentment against Ciano, was gratified to learn from friends, one himself an employer, that 'as the Party had failed to collect enough applauders on the first day (people being sick to death of these things), the Labour Front had then been mobilized; at a time of great labour shortage employers had been implored to send their workmen out, at full pay rates of course. . . .'¹ Young Pirzio Biroli,² who afterwards married Hassell's younger daughter, had been staying with the Hassells. He told them 'remarkable things'³ about the irritation in Italy against the régime and against the Germans. The Italians, he said, were angered by the presence of Gestapo people and German aeronautic experts. 'The chief cause of the anger of the Italians is, of course, that Mussolini is

¹ Hassell, op. cit., p. 57. Hassell also quotes the current gossip about the *Monstrebankett* at Ribbentrop's Dahlem villa on the evening of the signature of the Alliance and of Ciano's unseemly behaviour.

² Son of the General who was afterwards Military Governor of Montenegro—see Chapter XVIII.

³ *Wunderdinge*.

simply being dragged along by us.' People are saying 'si stava meglio sotto Mussolini'.¹ They are afraid of war. They only hope Mussolini may hold Hitler back since he (the Duce) must know how weak Italy is. Pirzio Biroli gave examples, too, from his own experience as a reserve officer, of the shocking state of the Italian Army. All this was before the news of the signature of the Military Alliance. 'I have the honest impression', wrote Ciano on his return to Rome, 'that the pact is more popular in Germany than in Italy.'² It should be added that, according to the Italian constitution, the King's consent, which in this case was neither sought nor obtained, was required for the signing of treaties. By his tacit acquiescence Victor Emmanuel lost a magnificent opportunity of identifying the Monarchy with national fear and suspicion of the Steel Pact.³

Beyond the reaffirmation of the frontier the running sore of the South Tyrol was not mentioned in the new Treaty, but yet it may be said that Germany paid for Italian adhesion by the concessions she at last agreed to make to the Prefect of Bolzano. It was true that the Anschluss had aggravated his responsibilities, for good Austrian Nazis considered that when the Anschluss 'liberated' North Tyrol, *ipso facto* this should mean the reattachment to it of the Southern Tyrol, and the Innsbruck Nazis encouraged those in Bolzano to think that this was imminent. When Magistrati, to whom the question had been handed over, saw the Duce in Rome in the middle of April, Mussolini was greatly annoyed that no progress had been made and told Magistrati to go into the matter with Ribbentrop. At Milan Ribbentrop was conciliatory to Ciano about it and promised to take steps towards the evacuation of at least 10,000 people who had remained Austrian after 1919 and had now become German citizens. At the time the Italian authorities were thoroughly exasperated, among other things by German tourists who motored around the South Tyrol with large Nazi flags as if they were in Germany; at last, to Ciano's dismay,⁴ but by the orders, it seems, of the German *Landesgruppenleiter* in Rome,⁵ the

¹ = 'We were better off under Mussolini.'

² Ciano Diary, 24 May 1939

³ There were rumours that the King had threatened to abdicate until he received written assurances from Hitler that he would not invade Poland, but they were not true. See *The Economist*, 'Germany over Italy', 17 June 1939.

⁴ Ciano Diary, 17 June 1939.

⁵ Hassell, *op. cit.*, p. 61.

Italians arrested the local Nazi leader, Kaufmann, but Hitler followed this up with the *gesto chic* of offering to punish him in Germany. It was Himmler who took up the South Tyrolese question in earnest on 15 June, and German and Italian delegations met at the Gestapo headquarters in the Prinz-Albrechtstrasse in Berlin to discuss it; the German delegation was predominantly S.S. with Himmler, Heydrich and his friend Karl Wolff to lead it; Woermann (a 'Ribbentrop man'), Bohle, and Weizsacker were also members. The Italians were represented by Attolico, Magistrati, the Prefect of Bolzano, the Italian Consul at Innsbruck, and another diplomat or so. Himmler turned out to be very well informed about the South Tyrol, and a plan was fairly quickly prepared on the basis of the indications Goring had thrown out more than a year before. People of German nationality living in the South Tyrol were to be transferred as soon as possible to Germany, while the rest were to opt before the end of the year; if they voted to become German they, too, were to be transferred to the Reich. It is interesting that a rumour was spread by the Germans, and very soon believed all over the world, that the South Tyrolese who opted for Italy would be moved away from their homes to barren districts in southern Italy. Such a thing seems never to have been contemplated. The Nazi régime was, not surprisingly, coy about any open reference to the understanding with Italy over the South Tyrol, which was publicly confessed in very sheepish fashion on 4 July. It provided a particularly inhuman example of geopolitics in practice, after all the sacred-soil slogans which Hitler had exploited in the past, and it filled the genuine German patriots of South Tyrol with despair. It is interesting that already on 20 June, only five days after the Italo-German commission had tackled the question in Berlin, two South Tyrolese leaders came to Hassell¹ fully informed as to what was in store for them; Lorenz of the *Volkstumsmittelstelle* had told them that he was now forbidden to touch the question of South Tyrol.

In practice the July project² was only slowly, painfully, and partially executed. A certain number of *Reichsdeutsch* citizens

¹ Hassell, *op. cit.*, p. 60.

² Confirmed in an agreement signed by Ciano and Mackensen on 21 Oct. and published on 21 Dec. 1939.

were removed during the second half of the year. In December 1939 the German-speaking South Tyrolese were called upon to opt for Italian citizenship or departure to Germany within three years. Out of 266,985 of them, 185,085, or just over two-thirds, voted for the second alternative: of these, 77,772, or less than half, had actually left Italy by 1 September 1943. Many of those who arrived in Germany were settled in Alsace and Lorraine after the defeat of France. All along the Italians felt a lack of conviction about the whole business; at just about the time of the signature of the Steel Pact, at a semi-official German dinner, German policy had been expressed as 'the restitution of the *ur-deutsch* provinces of Trentino and Trieste',¹ and this sort of thing was constantly repeated, whatever orders Lorenz might receive. It is not irrelevant to note here that Trieste had been gravely impoverished by the Anschluss, which stopped or diverted many Austrian exports to and via Italy. On 18 July an Italo-German Agreement was published by which Germany received a free zone in Trieste and guaranteed that port a transit trade of 40 per cent. of Trieste's total trade in 1938. The Triestini were not very gay about this, for since the Anschluss Germany had controlled 70 per cent. of their 1938 trade and they felt themselves to be unpleasantly dependent upon Hitler already.

There was an Italian postscript of considerable importance to the Steel Pact. It is only too characteristic of Mussolini that its signature left him torn with anxiety. There is no evidence that Hitler ever looked back in doubt as to the wisdom of anything he had done. But Mussolini tormented himself, as well he might. General Cavallero was nominated vice-president of the mixed commission envisaged in Article IV of the Alliance Treaty, and on 30 May, the day before his departure for Berlin, the Duce entrusted him with a secret memorandum for Hitler which repeated and developed the instructions Ciano had taken to Milan. Despite German assurances Mussolini found it necessary to state again that Italy would not be able to go to war until after 1942. After repeating the reasons given to Ribbentrop in Milan, the so-called Cavallero Memorandum re-emphasized the need to fortify² the relations not only between the Governments but also the peoples of the Axis, for which purpose a

¹ See *The Economist*, 'Germany over Italy', 17 June 1939.

² The Italian word really means 'to deepen'.

détente between National Socialism and the Catholic Church would be important. And there must be more fifth-column preparation against the Western Powers; in this preparation Russia, 'introduced into the West by London', might be useful. Lastly, Mussolini modified his March outburst about fighting France alone; now he rather offered that Italy should subscribe more man-power if Germany could contribute more *mezzi*. The Axis must prepare for a long war of attrition, he concluded, and be ready, therefore, for the swift occupation of Danubia and the Balkans¹ in order to ensure a supply of raw materials. This was a dangerous suggestion. Hitler was always ready to make long speeches about the Mediterranean for you and the Baltic for me, but it rankled in his Austrian soul that an outsider should, as it were, claim the Habsburg inheritance for 'us'; the Danube, rather than the Rhine, was his Germany's river.² Always he had more immediate and more precise plans of which Mussolini was unaware.

¹ In Ciano's letter to Ribbentrop on 2 Jan. 1939, he referred to the importance of drawing Hungary, Yugoslavia, and Rumania into the Axis system on account of their raw materials.

² Cf his interview with Molotov on 13 Nov. 1940, where Hitler stressed this and his claim to former Austrian territories. See *Nazi-Soviet Relations* (Department of State, 1948).

'To attack Poland at the first suitable opportunity'

ON Tuesday, 23 May, the very day after Ciano and Ribbentrop had signed the Steel Pact and while Ciano was still in Berlin, Hitler called together his military chiefs to a secret conference at the Neue Reichskanzlei. There were present Goring,¹ Raeder, Brauchitsch, Keitel, Milch, Halder, Bodenschatz, Warlimont, and six other officers of whom Colonel Schmundt was responsible for the record of the meeting; it is written in his gothic script with a few corrections in another gothic handwriting. 'Subject of the meeting: "Indoctrination on the political situation and future aims".' The major part of the Schmundt minutes were read, in an unsatisfactory English translation, at the Nuremberg Trial on 26 November 1945, and it will only be necessary to refer to the most relevant sentences here. As usual this peroration of the Fuhrer was an odd mixture of clear common sense with blind illusion.

Hitler delivered himself of the usual 'stuff'. Germany must be strong in order to acquire living space and must have living space in order to be strong. She cannot afford to wait.

'At present we are in the same state of national exaltation as two other states, Italy and Japan. The national-political unity of the Germans has been achieved. . . . Further success cannot be obtained without the shedding of blood. . . .

'Danzig is not the subject of the dispute at all. It is a question of expanding our living space in the East and of securing our food supplies, of the settlement of the Baltic problem. . . .

'"In Europa ist keine andere Moglichkeit zu sehen. . . ."² . . . Poland sees danger in a German victory in the West, and will attempt to rob us of that victory. There is, therefore, no question of sparing Poland, and we are left with the decision: *to attack Poland at the first suitable opportunity*.³

¹ At the Nuremberg Trial Goring's presence on this occasion was rather vaguely questioned by Milch. see *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part viii, pp. 254 and 296.

² Wrongly translated at Nuremberg as 'There is no other possibility for Europe'. It means that there is no other possibility in Europe for Germany.

³ Underlined by Schmundt himself.

'A repetition of the Czech business is not to be expected. It will be war this time. The first objective is to isolate Poland'

There is then considerable confusion because the Fuhrer says there must be no simultaneous conflict with the Western Powers, but that there may be.

The central theme of Hitler's discourse was how to defeat England, in his belief 'der Motor, der gegen Deutschland treibt'.

And apropos the claim that secrecy is the first essential for success occurs the following sentence:

'Our aim must also remain hidden from Japan and Italy. The possibility of an Italian break through the Maginot Line should be examined. The Fuhrer thinks the break-through feasible.'

It is impossible to believe that Hitler had not talked in this vein to Ribbentrop who had just signed the Steel Pact; it is equally impossible to imagine the consternation of Mussolini—whose respect for the Maginot Line was exaggerated—had he known what was being planned for his ramshackle army. The Italian Embassy in Berlin never had an inkling of what had taken place at the Neue Reichskanzlei that day; Attolico's gloomiest moments were not darkened by this. When Cavallero delivered the Duce's memorandum to the Fuhrer on 5 June there was no ostensible reaction beyond a reference vaguely made by Hitler to meeting Mussolini about all this some time soon at the Brenner; it was this suggestion which in the end brought Ciano to Salzburg in August. Cavallero left Berlin for Italy on 10 June; since the impervious Hitler had in no way protested against the contents of the memorandum, the Italians in Berlin, as in Rome, took silence to mean assent. Yet on 22 June Keitel signed orders for the execution of *Fall Weiss* and a concealed German mobilization.

On 17 June Goebbels' furious attack upon Poland in his speech at Danzig combined with other indications to re-arouse Attolico's fears, and the Italian Ambassador began to support the idea of another meeting between the Chiefs themselves. Ciano¹ was still too innocent to believe that *after* the Pact with its consultation clause the Germans would thus conceal their intentions from him, and on the eve of his departure on a ten days' journey to Spain he put the whole thing off. Neverthe-

¹ Diary, 3-7 and 20 July 1939.

less, on 13 July, while he was visiting Franco, the Palazzo Chigi proposed that Mussolini and Hitler should meet at the Brenner on 4 August. Indications of Germany's concealed mobilization were multiplying, and Italian officials and Germans of the Weizsacker¹ type hoped that Mussolini might again hold Hitler back, while Ribbentrop was quite glad of the opportunity to shout and boast. As the situation sharpened the Duce became less bellicose and contemplated the pleasures of a bigger and better Munich; he talked of a plebiscite in Danzig, and he decided, while Ciano was away, to propose an international conference on the question; for instructions on the preparation of this he summoned Magistrati from Berlin. Ciano returned on 19 July and was annoyed to find all this *en train* without him. However, when he and Magistrati went to Mussolini, Ciano was overruled. 'Why', said the Duce, 'should not the two chiefs of the authoritarian countries, accused as they always are of desiring war, make themselves protagonists of a practical peace plan such as the project of a conference between Italy, Germany, France, Britain, Poland, and Spain, a gathering capable of assuring to the peoples a period of well-being and tranquillity?'² Mussolini did not know that Hitler and Ribbentrop were determined to fight, but he realized that they would dislike the conference idea and say that he was trying to back out of the alliance. Though he insisted that this was not the time to embark on war, he repeated several times that 'whenever Germany finds it necessary to mobilize at midnight, we shall mobilize at five to twelve'. Finally the Duce fortified Magistrati with a new list of considerations which made open war inadvisable for some time: a war of nerves served the Axis better than its enemies while real war would not now come as a surprise, a conference would provide a popular way of handing Danzig over to Germany, if the others refused to confer they would be in the wrong, and so on: according to Italian information, Poland, France, and Britain were in earnest and intended to fight.³ Mussolini made it plain that he would not

¹ Cf. E. Kordt, op. cit., but the evidence at Weizsacker's trial conflicted with this interpretation of his role.

² Information provided by Count Magistrati.

³ Cf. Halifax's telegram to Loraine of 13 May 1939 which the Italians intercepted and Mussolini later sent to Hitler as a 'strong sign of his (the Duce's) readiness to co-operate'. See Correspondence from Nuremberg in *The Times* of 13 Jan. 1948.

move without Germany's prior agreement, and he naturally asked for secrecy.

On the following Tuesday, 25 July, Magistrati, together with Attolico, visited Ribbentrop in his castle at Fuschl to urge the conference plan upon him. (The conversation, as so often between Axis representatives, was in English.) Ribbentrop was in one of his genius grade II states and uttered long obstructive dissertations such as that suffered by Sumner Welles in March 1940; he prefaced many of his sentences with the words 'I will tell you very frankly'. Germany could not retreat, neither could he meet the Poles at a conference after their inexplicable refusal of his motor-road proposal. Half-way through he reversed gear for a moment and said that Hitler agreed with Mussolini that a conflagration was undesirable at present and that he would move against Poland only if he were certain that Poland would be completely isolated. Then he objected again to the conference idea because the Axis would thereby be exposed to the attacks of the Jewish-Masonic Press. The great advantage of the Axis should be that it was led by two strong men who could act outside international combinations. Finally, he objected to a draft communiqué in favour of a conference which the Duce had prepared for the Brenner meeting because, he said, this meeting must finish with something tremendous, not with something banal.¹ So that was the end of the Brenner project for 4 August, which was replaced by the Salzburg meeting exactly a week later.

At the beginning of August 1939 Ciano's fluttering attention was diverted by the Collar of the Annunziata which he was about to reap for his Albanian sowings. It was on 4 August that the optimism which he based upon the Steel Pact pledges and which his brother-in-law, Magistrati, encouraged from Berlin, was at last shaken by Attolico. It might well be. Nostitz told Hassell at about this time that 'at present we are at the third and last phase of partial mobilization against Poland. On 26 or 27 August everything is to be ready.'² The military order for the German seizure of Danzig had been drawn up on 27 July, and the necessary crisis was heated up during the first week in August. Forster, the Nazi boss in Danzig, was at the Ober-salzburg on 7 August, and on 9 August Germany intervened

¹ Magistrati.

² Hassell, op. cit.: entry for 7 Aug. 1939.

without any legal right to do so between the Senate of Danzig and the Warsaw Government. On the afternoon of Friday, 11 August, the League of Nations High Commissioner for Danzig, the Swiss diplomat, Basle historian, and Genevese *causeur* Carl Burckhardt, was with Hitler for two and a half hours. The Fuhrer was threatening, and one of his threats was that he could count upon the unstinted support of Italy and Japan.

That same morning Galeazzo Ciano arrived by air at Salzburg. On the eve of his departure from Rome on 10 August Mussolini had ordered him more emphatically than ever before to insist upon the necessity of postponing military action and of calling a European conference. But Ciano found an implacable Ribbentrop determined on war even if the Germans should be given 'more than they have asked for'. Just before lunch at Ribbentrop's Fuschl mansion, the German Minister quoted the recent Polish statement on the Danzig Senate and added in so many words that Germany was bound to destroy Poland for this. The lunch-party was plunged in the blackest gloom. Ciano, already startled rudely out of his Milan-Berlin illusions, was pale and shaken, and whispered to Magistrati *Siamo alle botte*—we are almost at blows. Mostly there was silence at table; at one point Ribbentrop discoursed upon the difference between woodcock and snipe. Afterwards there was a bleak expedition by car to the Wolfgangsee. The irony was heightened by the fact that the Italians were in uniform and the Germans not.

Ciano had ten hours of Ribbentrop on that Friday. 'La nostra conversazione assume talvolta toni drammatici. . . . Mi rendo conto di quanto poco noi si valga, nel giudizio dei tedeschi',¹ he noted in his Diary. The tragic bitterness of his disillusionment is almost greater in his Minute of their meeting. Ribbentrop, he wrote, admits that he has changed abruptly from the day when he said the Axis needed two or three years' preparation for war and justifies this by referring to a new situation, and yet he fails to show that the situation has changed in any way. He starts out from two axioms which it is impossible to discuss with him because he simply replies by repeating them. They are (1) that the conflict will be localized, (2) that even if France and Britain wish to react, there is nothing they can do

¹ = 'At times our conversation became pretty dramatic. . . . I realize how little we count in German judgement.'

about it. At one point Ribbentrop accepted Ciano's wager that the Western Powers would fight.

When Ribbentrop told Ciano that Russia would not enter into the war and referred to fairly definite conversations between Moscow and Berlin, Ciano pointed out that the secrecy maintained towards Italy with regard to all this was difficult to reconcile with the terms of the alliance and with the absolute loyalty observed by Italy towards Germany. Certainly, if we may go by Ciano's Diary, he had, since the Steel Pact, scrupulously informed Mackensen of the development of Italy's relations with Britain and France and with regard to her policy as a whole. It is true that he had discussed Germany's relations with Russia very freely with a Soviet diplomat in Rome on the strength of the 'deductions' of Rosso, his Ambassador in Moscow.¹

Ciano repeated Italy's arguments in favour of delay and tried to urge the conference idea upon Ribbentrop; as a matter of fact, according to the communiqué drafted by Mussolini to be published at the end of the Salzburg conversations, he specifically asked only for a tentative intimation that the Axis Powers had not banged all the doors. The communiqué had been drafted in French and English by the Italians, and the following is the English version (as recorded in the German Minute of the meeting with Hitler on 12 August):

'The Minister of Foreign Affairs of the Reich, Mr. von Ribbentrop, and the Italian Minister of Foreign Affairs, Count Galeazzo Ciano, have examined—in the course of their conversations at Salzburg—the general situation in Europe and the problems concerning the common policy of the two allied countries.

'The two Foreign Ministers were able to² realize once again in [*sic*] this occasion, the perfect identity of views existing between their Governments, and reaffirm the common decision of Germany and Italy to resist the policy of encirclement [*sic*] promoted by the great democracies, and to defend their vital rights, opposing by force any attempt of aggression directed against them.

'At the same time the Foreign Minister of the Reich and the Italian Foreign Minister wished to reaffirm the peaceful intentions of their Governments, and thoughtful of the destinies of Europe, they agreed to state that, according to their opinion, it is still possible

¹ See Schulenburg's Memorandum of 16 Aug. 1939 in *Nazi-Soviet Relations*.

² The German typescript has *zu* in the English text.

to reach—through normal diplomatic negotiations between the various Governments—a satisfying solution of the problems which trouble, in such a serious way, the life of Europe.'

Ribbentrop objected that the communiqué would be interpreted as weakness, then he admitted that it might be good tactics but went back to the repetition of his axioms. Finally, he refused any precise indication of Germany's plan of action since 'ogni decisione era ancora chiusa nel petto impenetrabile del Führer'.¹

When Ciano got to Berchtesgaden after lunch on Saturday, 12 August, he found himself faced, in addition to Hitler and Ribbentrop and the interpreting Paul Schmidt, with an agent of Himmler's now attached to the German Embassy in Rome, a young S.S. Führer called Dollmann.² When the official conversations began Magistrati and the other Italians were sent off to drink coffee with a Nazi Party official called Martin Bormann. We shall hear of both of them again.

Ciano's and Schmidt's accounts of these Berchtesgaden meetings do not conflict, but it is interesting to see how Ciano, in summarizing the whole thing for the Duce, sorted out the material which Schmidt probably wrote out in chronological order. It must have been an impossible task to make a coherent record of any 'conversation with' Hitler.

By now Hitler had all but decided to begin the 'action' to destroy Poland on 25 August, that is in just under a fortnight. It was all the more important to him that the Rome-Berlin Axis should seem alarmingly strong because he was still uncertain with regard to Russia, and Japan³ had continued to be elusive; in any case it would be difficult to enjoy the friendship of both, however much one might pretend to be doing so. It was equally important to him to prevent any Italian mediation; he was determined that no *Schweinehund*⁴ should prevent this war this

¹ Ciano Minute of Conversation, 11 July 1939. = 'all decisions were still locked in the impenetrable breast of the Führer'.

² Dollmann went to Rome ostensibly as some kind of 'cultural' attaché, but not in consequence of the Secret Protocol of the Steel Pact which was never really implemented.

³ Japan was apparently not mentioned by the Germans during the mid-August talks.

⁴ This was the term he used when addressing his commanders-in-chief on 22 Aug. See below, p. 173.

time. Thus, knowing Italy's military weakness, Hitler was yet dependent upon her politically, and it is strange to find that Mussolini made no use of this fact. Once he had been made to realize that Italy was in a condition of military exhaustion, the Duce warmed up to the delectable prospect of a new Munich, but his proposals, which might have been imperative, were apologetic, and Ciano dared not risk his displeasure by deviating from his instructions.

¹ The meeting on the afternoon of 12 August lasted for three and a quarter hours. The gist of Hitler's oft-repeated remarks was that an Axis war against Britain and France was desirable while the Axis was led by the two Great Men and before these two should be much older. With this in view Germany and Italy must respectively 'liquidate' Poland and Yugoslavia, treacherous friends in their rear; he reverted several times to the desirability of an Italian attack upon Yugoslavia,¹ which as a piece of connivance would be much more useful from a German blackmailing point of view than a mere annexation of Albania. He gave a number of inconsequent reasons for his own imminent attack upon Poland. First there was his *felsenfeste Überzeugung* that no one else would intervene; if the Western Powers did move it would show that they would have attacked the Axis anyway. The action against Poland could not be delayed because after October Poland might do the most dreadful things to Danzig, and Germany would be unable to react since Poland would then be submerged in fog and mud until the spring of 1940. Another explanation offered by Hitler was that since on geopolitical grounds he was 'evacuating' South Tyrol² in Italy's favour, which might in the eyes of the world appear like weakness, Italy must understand that he would lose too much prestige if he now allowed Poland to express, unpunished, the indignation which German provocation had aroused in her. Ciano did not bother to take note of Hitler's appeal to him to

¹ Ciano noted in his Diary on 12 Aug. that Hitler only excited himself when he spoke of the destruction of Yugoslavia. In his Minute on the 12 Aug. meeting Ciano noted that Hitler urged Italy to take Croatia with Dalmatia, but not Slovenia. This also suggests pre-1914 Austria, which included Slovenia, while Croatia was Hungarian; Dalmatia had been Austrian too, but in view of its Italian enclaves Hitler could not openly veto its Italian occupation.

² Hitler spoke of the South Tyrol more than once, according to later entries in Ciano's Diary.

remember that Danzig was the Trieste of Germany, but this was recorded in the German Minute by Schmidt.

When Ciano later announced that Mussolini insisted upon a peaceful Axis gesture and would have liked an international conference to be called, Hitler argued that one could not leave Russia out now as at the time of Munich, and since she would vote with Britain, France, and Poland, Germany, Italy, and Spain would be in an unsatisfactory minority. This was the strangest argument of all, since Russia's presence would only occur thanks to Germany. The carefully staged arrival of the telegram from Moscow a little later, according to which, the Germans stated, Russia was ready to enter into political negotiations with Germany, also suggested that Russia would be more likely to side with Germany against Poland. Perhaps this patent discrepancy contributed to the scepticism of Ciano and his colleagues with regard to Germany and Russia; in spite of the warnings of the Italian Ambassador in Moscow,¹ they never really believed in German-Russian friendship, however temporary, until Ribbentrop left for Moscow on 22 August. As a matter of fact, on Thursday 10 August the Soviet Chargé in Berlin spoke of the outcome of the negotiations with the Western Powers as still uncertain, and on Saturday the 12th he announced 'that he had received instructions from Molotov to state here that the Soviets were interested in a discussion of the individual groups of questions that had heretofore been taken up. . . . Such a discussion, however, could be undertaken only *by degrees*. . . .'² At this point the Germans could count on nothing more.

By far the most important paragraph in Ciano's account of the 12 August meeting occurs at the point when Ciano has very briefly recorded his own efforts to re-state the Italian point of view.

'The Fuhrer interrupted me to say that what I was saying was perfectly true and that he agrees with Mussolini that two or three years—not more than that—would be useful to the Axis to improve its position and preparation. He would have waited as had been agreed. But Polish provocation and the aggravation of the situation make German action urgent—action which will not, however,

¹ See M. Toscano, *op. cit.*

² *Nazi-Soviet Relations*, pp. 44-6 and 48-9.

provoke a general conflict. The Fuhrer is certain, therefore, that where Italy is concerned, he will not have to ask for help according to the existing obligation' (*l'aiuto secondo l'impegno esistente*).

An equivalent paragraph is not to be found in the German Minute, which is much more detailed; it appears by comparison with the German records of the talks on 12 and 13 August that Ciano wrote both his accounts after the meeting on the 13th, since he seems to have attributed several things to the Saturday conversation which Schmidt recorded as having been said on the Sunday. Yet, although Ciano was much more slapdash than Schmidt, there was less likelihood than usual of linguistic misunderstandings, because, while again there was no Italian interpreter present, Dollmann spoke perfect Italian. And finally, though Hitler fought against the defection of Italy even in a localized war until his letter to Mussolini less than a fortnight later, he did then pretty well repeat what Ciano claimed he had admitted on 12 August. It should not be forgotten that in March¹ Hitler had warned the Italians against starting a war before 1941, while in April in Rome Göring had spoken of 1940 as the earliest feasible date.

After his initial talk with Ribbentrop Ciano was *bouleversé*, and with that completeness which is characteristically Italian. The relations between the Axis Powers were now such that the Italian Foreign Minister kept his aeroplane under special guard each of the two nights at Salzburg lest someone should interfere with it. Discussing the position into which Italy had been not even manœuvred but kicked, Ciano, Magistrati, and Attolico—whose anxieties Ciano had earlier regarded as hysterical—took refuge in the bathroom of Ciano's hotel suite; they hoped that the Gestapo microphones did not reach quite so far. There on the evening of the 12th Attolico begged Ciano to regard Italy as freed from the Steel Pact by the infraction of Article II by Germany and by the release from the obligation in Article III which Hitler had pronounced to him. Ciano was worried. He knew that Mussolini did not want to be released and then left out at the time of a victorious distribution of plunder. He knew that the cause of Fascism would suffer. With Attolico and Magistrati he decided at all events to give up the idea of publishing the communiqué, which was far too emphatic about

¹ See above, Chapter IX.

Axis identity of views; this he conveyed to Ribbentrop before he met Hitler again the next morning. The Fuhrer agreed: 'So bleibe nach jeder Seite hin Tur und Tor offen, niemand wurde gebunden und nichts wurde verhindert.'¹ Hitler seemed even more decided on the 13th.² He ranted marvellously against the Western Powers who, he said, were determined to rule the world and regarded Germany and Italy as *nicht ebenbürtig*. This psychological element was perhaps the worst in the whole situation and could only be ended by a life-and-death conflict, said Hitler.

At the end the Fuhrer indulged in the habitual eulogies. 'He was personally fortunate to live at a time in which, apart from himself, there was one other statesman who would stand out great and unique in history; that he could be this man's friend was for him a matter of great personal satisfaction, and if the hour of common battle struck he would always be found on the side of the Duce "und zwar auf Gedeih und Verderb".'³ This is Schmidt's version. Ciano only noted 'Hitler tiene a ripeterme più volte il suo desiderio di incontrarsi col Capo del Governo, ma non mi accenna a questioni politiche e dice che "gradirebbe averlo una volta ospite alle rappresentazioni musicali di Bayreuth".'⁴

No sooner had Ciano's aeroplane safely left Salzburg for Rome, on the afternoon of 13 August, than the Deutsches Nachrichten Büro, in spite of the joint agreement to the contrary, published a communiqué emphasizing the identity of the views of Italy and Germany in the Salzburg conversations; this was quoted by a part of the Italian Press though ignored by Stefani. Attolico could endure this confusion and bad faith no longer, and on his own initiative he followed Ciano to Rome to try to ensure that Italy should make clear that since Germany had broken Article II, she did not feel bound by Article III of the Steel Pact.⁵ Before leaving Berlin he had heard from

¹ Schmidt Minute, 13 Aug. 1939. 'Thus doors were left open on all sides, no one was tied and nothing prevented.'

² Ciano Diary, 13 Aug. 1939.

³ = 'For better and for worse', only it is much more forceful.

⁴ = 'Hitler insisted on often repeating to me how much he wished to meet our Chief, but he did not indicate that political questions were to be discussed, and he added that he would be happy to have him some time as his guest for the musical festival at Bayreuth.'

⁵ Canaris had already expressed this view in conversation with the new Italian Military Attaché in Berlin, General Roatta.

Dirksen, their Ambassador in London whom Hitler and Ribbentrop simply refused to see, that Britain would certainly fight. As Ciano had indicated on 12 August when Hitler said that the French would be held up by the Italian fortifications ('Hier gab Graf Ciano einige Zeichen aussersten Zweifels zu erkennen',¹ noted Schmidt), the Italians were greatly afraid of a French occupation of the Po valley, the more since scarcely any of their plans for moving their war industries to the south had been realized. (According to Hitler it was, of course, the Italians who were to break through the Maginot Line.)

Once back in Rome, Ciano's mind was made up, and he did all he dared to back up Attolico. In particular he took steps at last to make Mussolini aware of how strong was anti-war and anti-German feeling in Italy. Many of the people around the Duce were so accustomed to telling him what he wanted to hear that it was difficult to induce them to speak the truth. But even Starace was prepared for anti-German demonstrations now if Germany should attack Poland.

Until the end of the month the battle swayed backwards and forwards in the Palazzo Venezia. Mussolini was at one moment furious with the Germans, but then again he could not face the slur on his 'honour' if he did not march with Hitler, or he remembered that he might miss his booty; or he was suddenly afraid of Hitler's revenge and, if Badoglio is to be believed,² spoke of strengthening the defences of the Brenner. On 18 August Attolico was back in Germany. He met Magistrati at Munich and together they saw Ribbentrop with a message from Mussolini to Hitler insisting that a Polish-German conflict could not be localized; Attolico added that Italy simply lacked the coal and petrol she required if she were faced with war in the Mediterranean. Ribbentrop was more exasperating than ever. 'As for coal', he said, 'Germany is rich in that and will be richer still when she has occupied the Polish coalfields. She will be able to supply a great deal to Italy, if necessary via Switzerland. Rumania and Russia will look after petrol.' That evening Ribbentrop telephoned to Attolico to say that 'the decisions

¹ = 'At this point Count Ciano showed signs of extreme doubt'

² See Badoglio, op. cit.; but Badoglio's chronology is sublimely vague and misleading. Mussolini was, it seems, afraid of documents which the Germans had found in Vienna.

indicated to Ciano had now been taken'. In other words, Hitler, who had decided at the time of the Danzig crisis over the Polish customs (4-5 August) to go all out for a treaty with Russia, had on 18 August sent a further message to Moscow to this effect.¹

The next day Ribbentrop met Attolico and Magistrati again at the Österreichischer Hof in Salzburg with Hitler's answer; it was more rigid than his attitude to Ciano a week earlier. He could not, he repeated, retreat before Poland's provocations, but the war would without question be localized and victorious. Attolico obstinately insisted that Italy could not agree. Thereupon Ribbentrop asked to speak to Attolico alone and Magistrati withdrew. As soon as he had left the room Ribbentrop upbraided Attolico with the indiscretions of the Italian diplomats in Berlin; the Italian Embassy, he said, was the centre of gossip about Axis difficulties, and how was it, he asked, that the Belgian Legation had been informed that Italy was not coming in on Germany's side? Attolico flew into a calculated rage; he immediately called Magistrati back to witness his repudiation of the slur Ribbentrop was casting upon the Italian Embassy and Ribbentrop rather sulkily crumpled up.

On 20 August Mussolini, to the despair of Ciano and Attolico (who had returned to Rome), was all loyalty to Hitler, but on the 21st, while the German Press was busy denying rumours that the Duce had reacted negatively in the Polish crisis, Ciano seems to have brought him round. He (Ciano) offered to go to Salzburg again at once and to speak out: 'Hitler won't make me put out my cigarette as he did Schuschnigg.'² They tried to reach Ribbentrop by telephone. When at last he replied at 5.30 p.m. he said he could decide nothing until he had received an important message from Moscow. Five hours later Ribbentrop telephoned again to say that he would prefer to see Ciano at Innsbruck on the next day as he must then leave for Moscow immediately to sign a political pact with the Soviet Government. This piece of news startled Rome that evening as much as it shook the rest of the world in the next few days.³ The Japanese, too, had been taken completely by surprise. For the moment Ciano dropped his idea of another talk with the Germans.

¹ See Ribbentrop to Schulenburg, no 185 of 18 Aug 1939 in *Nazi-Soviet Relations*, p. 61.

² Ciano Diary, 21 Aug. 1939.

³ 'Wie eine Granate', Hitler boasted.

With Ribbentrop preparing to leave for Moscow, the Führer reassembled his commanders-in-chief at the Obersalzberg on Tuesday, 22 August, and bade them prepare the attack upon Poland for the Friday night, 25 August, as an essential preliminary to war against the West; the latter was necessary and might follow immediately. Hitler's tirades, two hours before and two hours after a luxurious lunch¹ on 22 August, appear to have been more than usually Nietzschean.² There were masters and supermen on the Axis side and none in the West to oppose them. Therefore one must fight at once.

'... Essentially it depends on me, on my existence, because of my political activity. . . . Furthermore, the fact that probably no one will ever again have the confidence of the whole German people as I have. . . . But I can be eliminated at any time by a criminal or an idiot.

'The second personal factor is the Duce. His existence is also decisive. *If something happened to him, Italy's loyalty to the alliance would no longer be certain.*³ The basic attitude of the Italian Court is against the Duce. . . . The Duce is the man with the strongest nerves in Italy.

'... There is no outstanding personality in England or France. . . . Our opponents are little wormlets.⁴ I saw them at Munich.'

In the afternoon came further classic examples of the brutal German tradition.

'I shall give a propagandist reason for starting the war—no matter whether plausible or not. The victor will not be asked later on whether he told the truth. . . . Shut pity out of your heart. Act brutally. . . . The stronger is in the right. Greatest ruthlessness.'

¹ See Gisevius, *Bis zum bittern Ende* (Fretz & Wasmuth, Zurich, 1946), vol. II, p. 119.

² Texts found in the O.K.W. file at Flensburg, see *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part I, p. 171. Gisevius, op. cit., vol. II, p. 119, says it was forbidden to make a record at the time and there are therefore several versions of these addresses, the O.K.W. ones leaving out several piquant details; it is agreed that they reproduce the general trends quite accurately. The American publication *Nazi Conspiracy and Aggression*, vol. VII, includes a version which contains the words 'since . . . Mussolini is menaced by the weak-headed King and the treacherous scoundrel of a Crown Prince, I have decided to go with Stalin . . . Stalin and I are the only ones that see only the future. . . .'. Gisevius was in fairly close touch with Canaris, who made his own very full notes in the room, and was horrified.

³ My italics.

⁴ Note the double diminutive (= 'kleine Wurmchen').

The next morning Schwerin-Krosigk, who happened to be in Rome, saw the Italian Foreign Minister an hour or so before Ribbentrop reached Moscow. The German Minister informed Ciano that the whole German people was of one mind about the urgent necessity for the solution of the Polish question.

'Count Ciano replied that a great deal would depend upon the attitude of the Axis peoples. For it would be necessary to fight with utmost tenacity, since in case of a defeat we would have to count on a peace which would practically mean the end of the Axis Powers. Count Ciano concluded the conversation by stating that despite the great diplomatic success of the Russian Pact he considered the situation as very serious.'¹

On 24 August Hitler flew from the Obersalzberg to Berlin to meet the triumphant Ribbentrop, the greater Bismarck, back from Moscow; not since the unexpected Anglo-German naval pact of June 1935, as some say, had this master and servant felt more exultant, and they waited in a state of feverish exaltation for their great adventure to begin on the very next night, between 25 and 26 August. Before the time was up, however, the master spirit faltered: in the German Admiralty Register on 25 August was written: '*Fall Weiss* already started will be stopped at 20.30 because of the changed political conditions. (Mutual Assistance Pact between Great Britain and Poland of 25 August noon² and information from the Duce that he would be true to his word but has to ask for large supplies of raw materials.)'

This is not the place to examine the genesis or the making of the Anglo-Polish Treaty. Here it need only be noted that, whereas Hitler had expected the Western Powers to be cowed by his pact with Russia, he was all the more astonished by the British pledge to an almost helpless Poland which Britain was in no position to support. The Anglo-Polish Treaty is, however, relevant to the story of the Axis in that Hitler and Ribbentrop asserted later, and possibly believed at the time,³ that it was the knowledge of Italy's defection which spurred the British on, while other people believed that Mussolini's letter

¹ Schwerin-Krosigk to Ribbentrop, 23 Aug. 1939, in *Nazi-Soviet Relations*, p. 79.

² The Anglo-Polish Treaty was not signed until 5.35 p.m.

³ Ribbentrop said at Nuremberg that he remembered Hitler saying so immediately cf. *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part x, p. 183.

to Hitler on 25 August was caused by the news that Britain had decided to commit herself to Poland. The truth is that while the British were in a general way fairly well informed about Italy's weakness, the Italians had, it has been seen, all along expected the Western Powers to fight; but British and Italian action on 25 August 1939, though each conducive to the delay of the attack upon Poland by exactly a week, were independent of one another. It should be added that people like Weizsäcker¹ considered that the difficulties made by Italy affected Hitler more than the news from London, though others attributed major importance to the Anglo-Polish Treaty.²

Spoiling for battle and believing all to be prepared as he wished, on the morning of 25 August Hitler drew up a letter to Mussolini in which, at last, he clothed with much tardy explanation the naked statement of the conclusion of the German-Russian Agreement. He had not announced it hitherto, he said, because he had not conceived the magnitude of the scope of the Nazi-Soviet conversations, but at Moscow 'the vastest pact of non-aggression to-day existing' had been signed. Twice Hitler insisted that the Moscow Agreement would prevent any attack upon the Axis by Rumania, while it would ensure a modification of the attitude of Turkey.³ Then he implied that he was about to attack Poland, though he still concealed his time-table from his so greatly revered ally. 'And finally,' he concluded, 'I can assure you, Duce, that in a similar situation I shall offer Italy complete understanding and that you can be certain of my future attitude in every situation of the kind.'

Ciano was informed of the arrival of the letter at about 2 p.m. and went with Mackensen to deliver it to Mussolini about one hour later. According to Mackensen's subsequent wire to Ribbentrop,⁴ the Duce translated the letter correctly to Ciano and then very cautiously indicated his objections, the usual things—it was too soon to start a war, a general conference might have settled everything, and so on. At 5.30 p.m. Ciano was telephoning Mussolini's answer to Attolico to be conveyed

¹ As reflected in Hassell, op. cit., p. 77.

² Ribbentrop certainly did at Nuremberg on 29 Mar. 1946.

³ Italy constantly showed particular anxiety about both Turkey and Rumania.

⁴ Ribbentrop at the Nuremberg Trial said all this had occurred earlier, but Mackensen's telegram is clearly dated and timed.

message Magistrati said to the Ambassador, 'But by when do you suppose all this is to be consigned?' and Attolico looked at him without answering. When he reached his destination an icy Ribbentrop naturally asked him the same thing. 'Why, at once,' said Attolico, 'before hostilities begin.' Most modern diplomats avoid responsibility—not so Attolico; he knew the attack on Poland was postponed and he took this risk in the hope of preventing it altogether. Soon after 3 p.m. Ribbentrop telephoned Hitler's reply this time. For organizational and technical reasons it was impossible to supply the oil and the copper immediately, and only thirty A.A. batteries could be sent at once. In these conditions Hitler understood Mussolini's situation and asked him only to busy the Anglo-French, as he had himself proposed, with propaganda and suitable military demonstrations. In view of his pact with Russia Hitler would not be afraid to solve the Eastern Question even with the danger of complications in the West. For the moment Attolico had helped to save Italy but not Europe; Hitler's hesitation on 25 August had lasted less than twenty-four hours.

At about 7 p.m.¹ the Italian answer to Hitler's recoil was telephoned by Ciano to Attolico. Mussolini repudiated Attolico's ingenious device. But, while saying that his requirements needed to be met only within the next twelve months, he noted that Germany was not in a position to fill the holes made in Italy's military resources by the Abyssinian and Spanish wars. According to his Diary Ciano felt assured by the 26th that Mussolini had really made up his mind, although the Duce writhed with the humiliation of confessing his weakness. But if he was not to fight, all the more he longed to mediate. Already on 23 August Ciano had urged upon the British Ambassador that Germany should have Danzig but the rest be settled by a conference, and Mussolini reverted daily to this theme. His message on the evening of 26 August concluded with the words:

'And it is also for this reason that I allow myself to insist afresh—and certainly not on account of considerations of a pacifist character alien to my spirit, but in the interests of our two peoples and our two Régimes—upon the possibility of a political solution which I still

¹ Ciano's Diary says about 8 p.m. but 6.42 p.m. is the official timing given.

think can be attained, such as to give complete moral and material satisfaction to Germany.'¹

The Duce's insistence upon the possibility of a political solution probably enraged Hitler far more than his military defection. It was the night after receiving this message from Mussolini, about half an hour after midnight on the morning of Sunday, 27 August, that Dahlerus² was taken to see Hitler and found him in a wild condition. The Fuhrer asked a great many questions about mysterious England. He then worked himself into a state of hysterics about Germany's strength. Dahlerus describes in his book how he screamed that he would build U-boats and aeroplanes:

'The voice became more indistinct and finally one could not follow him at all, then he pulled himself together, raised his voice as though addressing a large audience and shrieked—shrieked "ich werde Flugzeuge bauen, Flugzeuge, Flugzeuge, und ich werde meine Feinde vernichten".'³ Just then he seemed more like a phantom from a story-book than a real person. I stared at him in amazement and turned to see how Goring reacted, but he didn't turn a hair.'

Then Hitler asked Dahlerus why he had never been able to come to an understanding with the British, and when he was told, because they had no confidence in him, he exclaimed, 'Idiots! Have I ever in my life told an untruth?' Henderson had gone to London the day before with one of Hitler's 'last offers', including the usual cavalier alliance offer: it becomes clear that the Fuhrer had decided on war independently of what Henderson was to report to him the day after his return, i.e. on Tuesday, the 29th. This was, in so many words, telephoned by Ribbentrop to Mackensen very late on 26 August, just before Mackensen was to convey to Mussolini another message from the Fuhrer which was probably sent off immediately before the talk with Dahlerus—it reached Rome at 3.40 a.m. on 27 August.

¹ = 'Ed è anche per questo, che mi permetto nuovamente di insistere e non mai in base a considerazioni di carattere pacifista aliene dal mio spirito, ma in base agli interessi dei nostri due popoli e dei nostri due Regimi, sulla opportunità di una soluzione politica che ritengo ancora possibile e tale da dare piena soddisfazione morale e materiale alla Germania.'

² Dahlerus was a Swede who knew Goring and tried to intervene to prevent the war. His account of his efforts was called *Sista Forsoket* (Stockholm, Norstedt, 1945): an English translation called *The Last Attempt* was published in 1948.

³ = 'I shall build aeroplanes . . . and destroy my enemies.'

It accepted Italy's non-belligerency, and, as Ciano noted in his Diary, asked only for three things: that Italy's decision should be kept secret as long as possible, that Italy would do all she could to bully the Anglo-French by the means already suggested, and that Italy should send industrial and agricultural labour to Germany. The third request was made as if it involved a very great favour; Ribbentrop telephoned twice within ten minutes later that morning¹ to insist upon the other two.

Meanwhile Loraine informed Ciano of the proposals Henderson had brought to London. They had meant little enough to Hitler, but it was first-rate diplomacy to tell the Italians at this moment that Hitler was offering Britain an alliance—on conditions—behind their backs. 'La questione delle trattative segrete a Londra ha dato un forte colpo ai tedeschi, nel suo [Mussolini's] giudizio',² wrote Ciano. 'He says that Hitler acts in this way out of fear of intervention by the Duce, which would succeed in ending the crisis at the last moment, as occurred at Munich last year, and which would increase Mussolini's prestige of which Hitler would be jealous.'³ There was not quite so much in this as Mussolini would have liked, but it was true that Hitler had sent for Henderson to make him the offer immediately after Attolico's midday visit to Ribbentrop on 25 August when the Duce's message had hinted once more at a political solution. On the evening of the 27th Ribbentrop telephoned to Mackensen again, belittling the offer to London and saying that war was practically certain; it is clear now that this statement was not made merely, as Ribbentrop liked to say at his trial, to keep the Italians up to the mark: a quarrel was picked with Henderson as soon as he returned.

For the following week the situation now arrived at between Italy and Germany matured. On 1 September, when Hitler had irrevocably crossed the Polish frontiers, the Italians extracted a more definite statement from him⁴ that he would not need Italian help, a statement which they immediately published in their Press; it was similar to what Hitler said to

¹ At 8.40 and 8.50 a.m.

² = 'The matter of the secret negotiations in London has given the Germans a heavy blow in Mussolini's estimation.'

³ Ciano Diary, 27 Aug. 1939.

⁴ According to Simoni, *op. cit.*, p. 18, Attolico mysteriously coaxed this from a *trasognato* Fuhrer, but it appears to have been transmitted by the Germans to Rome.

the Reichstag on the same day but was never published in Germany. The Italian newspapers as from 1 September seemed to become less anti-Ally; Bocchini had said to Ciano on 30 August that if there should be demonstrations in favour of neutrality the police and carabinieri would join with the public. All this week, from 27 August to 3 September, Mussolini and Ciano urged Hitler to accept their mediation and a conference, since, as they repeated each time, Germany was in a very strong position and would get at least Danzig for nothing; they suggested, also, that an exchange of populations might be opportune in the German-Polish case. Ciano sounded the British and French and found the French most eager, for one reason because both Gamelin and Darlan seem to have been as scared of an Italian attack as the Italians were scared of them.¹ At one point it was thought that a conference between Germany, Italy, Britain, France, and Poland might open on 5 September. Several times during this week Hitler thanked Mussolini almost obsequiously for his mediation offers and on 1 September at 13.00 Mackensen delivered one of the Führer's personal letters to the Duce in which he not only thanked him for all his efforts 'and especially for his offers of intervention', but added that he had hoped not to expose Mussolini to the danger of acting as mediator in circumstances which would make his efforts vain. For he was at all costs determined to 'avoid mediation' and in this same letter referred with ill-concealed satisfaction to the breakdown of negotiations; certainly he stopped to ask whether the French and British, in requiring the halting of the German Army if they were not to declare war, were presenting ultimata or not, but it can only have been in order that his forces might advance farther into Poland.

Early on 2 September the Duce, nevertheless, made one last effort to bring about a conference, and dispatched a telegram to Berlin in which he stated that he still had a possibility of bringing

¹ Gamelin in his *Servir — les Armées françaises de 1940* (1946) says that he and Darlan emphasized the importance of the 'absolute neutrality of Italy', though some well-placed British observers thought the French rather wanted the Italians in the war as opponents whom they had a good chance of beating.

² I know that this interpretation is not generally accepted. Kordt (op cit), for instance, rejects it while producing, as it seems to me, evidence in its favour, e.g. that on 30 August Hitler was planning to demand more than Germany's 1914 territory.

the Powers together: he emphasized that it was the attitude of France which justified his attempt and that a mere halt of the German Army might be accepted all round. Early that evening, however, Rome was informed from London that Britain could only fall in with the Italian mediation offer if the Germans withdrew to the frontier, and Daladier took up the same position in addressing the French Chamber. Mussolini has been condemned for misrepresenting the situation in his telegram to Berlin that day, but if he attempted anything at all it was useless to speak of more than a halt to the Fuhrer. Moreover, he knew through his Ambassador in Paris, Guariglia, that Daladier and Bonnet were not the same thing. Indeed he was justified by a call from Guariglia to Ciano in the following night to say that Bonnet had asked whether Mussolini could not obtain 'a symbolic withdrawal of German forces from Poland'.¹

On 3 September came Hitler's final and inevitable refusal in a letter which Mackensen delivered to Mussolini at 9.40 a.m. on 4 September. This reply of Hitler's has been quoted a great many times. It exulted in the German successes in Poland. But it also states:

'I further believe that although our paths are now diverging, Destiny will bind us to one another. If National-Socialist Germany were destroyed by the Western democracies, Fascist Italy would also face a difficult future. Personally I have always been convinced of the indivisible future of our two régimes and I know that you, Duce, feel the same thing.'²

Hitler's letter lashed Mussolini into bellicosity and enthusiasm for the Axis, and, if Mackensen may be trusted, the Duce would not hear of '*getrennte Wege*'. Britain's demand for the complete withdrawal of the German Army was outrageous, he said; by insisting upon this she had forced war upon Hitler.³ 'So France will be the aggressor', Ribbentrop had declared triumphantly

¹ For all this see L. B. Namier, op. cit., and the sources used by him.

² 'Ich glaube aber weiter, dass — auch wenn wir jetzt getrennte Wege marschieren — das Schicksal uns doch aneinander binden wird. Sollte das national-sozialistische Deutschland von den westlichen Demokraten zerstört werden, wurde auch das faschistische Italien einer schweren Zukunft entgegengehen. Ich war mir persönlich dieser Verbundenheit der Zukunft unserer beiden Regime stets bewusst, und ich weiss, dass Sie, Duce, genau so denken.'

³ Mackensen to Ribbentrop (Most Secret), 4 Sept. 1939.

to Coulondre when he came to declare war, to which the French Ambassador replied that history would be the judge.¹

When at last the British, and then the French, declaration of war had reached the Führer on 3 September 1939, that 'crowning mercy' day, what was the significance of the Axis and what the relations between Hitler and Mussolini? Had they a common future, as Hitler said?

It was thought in strongly anti-munichois circles in London and Paris² that Führer and Duce were playing each other's game all the time, that Mussolini in fact proposed an international conference in order to gain time for Hitler in Poland. There is no evidence hitherto that this was the case. It was a far stranger situation. According to the extreme version quoted by Gisevius, Hitler had said on 22 August that this time if any mediator intervened 'diesen Schweinehund wurde er persönlich die Treppe hinunterwerfen und wenn er ihn vor den Augen der Photographen in den Bauch treten musste'.³ This mediator had already in 1938 been 'his friend Mussolini', the one being whom he was willing to recognize as Superman number two and upon whom he counted as against royal and other influences in Italy. (Certainly the Duce always offered him mediation on extraordinarily favourable conditions.) It was part of Hitler's madness that his hero and his devil should have come to be the same person. For there is no doubt that Hitler's mental condition in the summer of 1939 was one of what in simple language is termed madness. There is no reason to question Dahlerus's account of him just after his Reichstag speech on 1 September, when he screamed that he would fight for one year, for two years, for ten years, and with this 'brandished his fist and bent down so that it nearly touched the floor'.⁴ But with his madness went a crystal-clear lucidity over military detail and other practical facts, and an unshakeable determination to strive after the realization of his—and a bastardized Nietzsche's—dreams.

It has often been argued that Hitler did not really want Italy to march in 1939—this is another aspect of the connivance

¹ Coulondre to Bonnet, 3 Sept. 1939.

² See *Carnets secrets de Jean Zay*

³ Gisevius, op. cit., vol. II, p. 122. Translation = 'he personally would throw this swine downstairs even if he had to kick him in the stomach in front of the photographers'.

⁴ Dahlerus, op. cit. Hitler, incidentally, had peculiarly long arms.

theme. No doubt there were Reichswehr hesitations as to the desirability of Italy as an active ally, but by now the Reichswehr in the persons of Keitel and Jodl had become so subservient to the Fuhrer that individual doubts of this kind did not count. It is clear from the records of the German Navy that they had counted on Italy; the Navy was Germany's weakest spot and Italy's strongest, and Raeder was in particular need of Italian submarines in the fight he planned against Britain; he also wanted the Italian Navy to tie down British ships in the Mediterranean.¹ As for Hitler himself there seem no grounds to question that he had set his heart upon the all-round co-operation of Italy if he were not to be allowed to destroy Poland without 'interference'. The Italian Alliance was the thing that had matured out of his 'boyish thought', his original scheme of things. The British had remained elusive and impenetrable, and up to now he must have felt something similar about the Japanese; neither of them, in his eyes, had produced supermen worthy of his friendship. He toyed with the idea of promoting Stalin to the super-class, but he always knew that his pact with Russia in 1939 meant, exactly like his pact with Poland in 1934, nothing but the postponement of a conflict which he basically desired. Thus his friend Mussolini was his only friend, and he had wished the friendship to have been demonstrated to the world in September 1939 with more than the mere pageantry of September 1937; after all, on 22 August, ten days after Ciano's visit, he had still seemed sure of Mussolini's unqualified *Bündnistreue*. He consoled himself now with the conviction that it would not be long before he induced Mussolini to march by his side: and it must have been evident to others that if he were soon to be successful in the West his conviction was completely justified.

¹ See views expressed by Raeder 3 Sept. 1939 and 1 Nov. 1939 in *Fuhrer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1939.

The Axis Shaken

AT 9 a.m. on 3 September 1939, since Ribbentrop preferred to make himself scarce, Sir Nevile Henderson was obliged to read the British ultimatum preparatory to a state of war between Great Britain and Germany to interpreter Paul Schmidt; the latter took it to the Reichskanzlei where, according to his evidence at Nuremberg on 28 March 1946, 'I found Hitler in his office in conference with the Foreign Minister. . . . When I had completed my translation, there was silence at first. . . . For a while Hitler sat in his chair deep in thought and stared rather worriedly into space. Then he broke the silence with . . . "What are we going to do now?" ' This is how the 'phony' war began.

In the relations between Hitler and Mussolini the next few months were characterized above all by Hitler's newly found friendship with Stalin. This fortified Mussolini's desire to mediate, a desire which remained strong so long as the Duce was convinced that he was militarily too weak to take part in the war himself. But it was also better to mediate than to be manoeuvred into collaboration with those very Bolsheviks against whom he had made such costly efforts in Spain. In the 'Cavallero Memorandum' the Duce had spoken of the importance of the fifth-column work there still was to do (the Germans had already done theirs very thoroughly), and he had believed that, if the West allied with Russia, the alliance would prove a boomerang from the point of view of internal morale. Now the boomerang looked like homing in his own direction, and there were, though he did not seem to know it, a number of Communist cells in Italy intact and ready for 1943.

In the 'Cavallero Memorandum', also, Mussolini had spoken of a rapid occupation of the Danubian Basin and the Balkans, and it was clear that Rumanian petrol was uppermost in his mind. In the middle of September the Russians marched into the east of Poland which soon brought them to the East-European centre of Lwow and to the frontiers of Hungary; the Balkans vibrated with the shock. Ciano professed to be

concerned above all for the Polish Catholics thus callously delivered into Bolshevik hands; Fascist Italy could never associate herself with such a thing. But more important was the fact that the new Rome could not ultimately compete with the new Moscow in the Balkan peninsula; she trembled for her newly won influence there and for the validity of Berlin's polite assurances which were to have guaranteed it. At that time the Russians were expected hourly in Bessarabia. The *Popolo d'Italia* pronounced that it was more absurd than ever for France and Britain to continue the war, since if it was necessary to fight Germany it was also necessary to fight Russia. Needless to say, the Italians were kept completely in the dark as to German-Russian plans—Ciano complained that the Germans always wrapped themselves in mystery when they were preparing some devastating blow¹—and Ribbentrop could not find the time to see Attolico before he left again for Moscow on 27 September to sign the Fourth Partition of Poland.

On his return on 30 September he managed to telephone to Ciano a good deal more politely than he had for a long time and to propose an immediate meeting; he and Hitler always longed to explain themselves copiously *after* they had taken a decisive step. With surprising docility Ciano left for Berlin at 6 p.m. the same evening. Brave fly to walk into that parlour! There were some three hours of 'conversation', nearly all Hitlerian monologue, at the Neue Kanzlei on 1 October. Ciano had noted on 1 September that the Duce was calm now that his decision had been made. On 1 October he found the Fuhrer positively serene after the frenzies of August; Hitler, if a little tired in appearance, was not only tranquil but beguiling, and though the Salzburg-Berchtesgaden conversations seven weeks before had put an end to any pro-German sympathy in Ciano, it is clear that he softened in the radiance of the Fuhrer's charm. Twice in his Minute of this fresh meeting of his with Hitler and Ribbentrop he referred to the extreme cordiality of Hitler, who several times stressed his particular friendship for the person of the Duce, and at one point referred to Italy's most helpful action. 'Tell him all the same that I am convinced that Italy's absence from the battlefield and a German defeat would mean the end of Italy's great imperial aspirations in the Mediter-

¹ Ciano Diary, 26 Sept. 1939.

anean.' Further, Hitler 'several times emphasized his appreciation of Italy's collaboration, not however concealing a slight feeling of grievance that we had not chosen to fight at Germany's side immediately'. When Hitler spoke of the end of Italy's Mediterranean ambitions, 'he seemed to me', Ciano commented, with a relapse into *naïveté*, 'to be inviting Italy to join him in the war, but I must add that this was done with extreme delicacy and without exerting the slightest pressure'. Both Hitler, and more particularly Ribbentrop, while playing this card of the peril lurking behind a German defeat, were full of 'mathematical certainty' of the invincibility of Germany. The German Army, Hitler said, was chafing to fight the French whom it regarded as beaten in advance. 'I shall make my Reichstag speech and that will be my last attempt [at peace with the West], but I tell you that if Italy were disposed to march with me at once I would not even make this speech, but would at once have recourse to force, in the certainty that Italy and Germany together can smash France and England in no time and settle their accounts with those two countries once and for all.' Tell the Duce, Hitler went on, that he need not be afraid to be without A.A. batteries for the enemy is too greatly scared of our reprisals to dare to bomb us. Though Ciano wavered before so much seduction, the Duce, when he read Ciano's report, was too jealous, as it seems, to respond to these enchantments.¹

As for the political situation, Germany had now, Ciano was told, fixed zones of influence with Russia just as she had previously fixed them with Italy. Hitler repeated that he considered that Italy should become the absolute master of the Mediterranean with 'interessi egemonici in tutti i Paesi della penisola balcanica a contatto diretto col Mediterraneo e con l'Adriatico'. With regard to the future of Poland, in which the Italians expressed interest, Hitler indicated that eight to ten million Poles would probably be allowed to live in a state of subjection to Germany about equivalent to the condition of the Czechs. Ciano asked whether the future Poland was to be a 'sovereign state'; he received no clear answer, but it was clear that it was not. He noticed that, whereas in August Hitler had spoken of twenty million Poles, these were now reduced to a mere four-

¹ Ibid., 3 Oct. 1939.

teen to fifteen millions. Hitler was, he said, studying various population transfers and would probably find space in former Polish territory for 'the Germans of the Dolomites', as it pleased him to call the South Tyrolese.¹

Ciano and Attolico had already been at work upon the grouping of the neutral Powers in a League over which Italy was to preside; the league was ostensibly to have economic aims. The Italians seemed to wish simply to make use of Italy's non-belligerency in order to increase her influence. At Berlin on 1 October Hitler expressed his satisfaction over the project because Franco-British propaganda was gaining ground among the neutrals and he appealed to Italy to counteract this.¹ Before Ciano left Ribbentrop expressed a desire for a meeting of the two Chiefs at the Brenner at the next practicable opportunity. The sudden violence of Ribbentrop's enthusiasm for Communist Russia Ciano could only describe as sinister and bewildering. This helped him, perhaps, to recover his equilibrium on returning to Rome.

Meanwhile, Mussolini was in a chaotic state of mind. Every time a foreign newspaper suggested that Italy was repeating her behaviour in the last World War, he nearly threw all caution to the wind to join Hitler after all. He was deeply envious of the German successes in Poland in September, and for this reason he discounted Hitler's mathematical certainty and accepted Italian military intelligence to the effect that France and Britain were strong and tenacious. He was flattered by Hitler's Danzig speech (19 September) when the Fuhrer declared that the war was due to the British refusal of Mussolini's offer of mediation.

In spite of the information his intelligence people supplied, the Duce persuaded himself to share Hitler's professed belief that the West could be induced to make peace once Poland was liquidated. Hitler expressed this view to Raeder on 7 September, though on 23 September he seemed a good deal less certain.² On 6 October he called a special session of the Reichstag and announced before it that Germany's *Lebensraum*, now recognized, must be secured and her former colonies restored, and provided that these conditions were accepted 'the great nations must come together and hammer out and guarantee

¹ Ciano Minute, 1 Oct. 1939.

² *Fuhrer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1939.

a comprehensive agreement which will give to all a feeling of security and quiet and peace'. Mussolini was so foolish as to think his opportunity had come, but Ciano noted that only two voices had been raised in Britain in favour of negotiation with Hitler; they were the voices of two very old men called David Lloyd George and George Bernard Shaw.

Hitler's peace offers were never made very seriously, and in October 1939 the Fuhrer was probably as glad as the Duce was sorry that no *Schwernehund*—this time either—would be able to mediate. His statements to Raeder in September could be interpreted equally well as aimed at dividing France from Great Britain, one of his major objectives which was crowned with only too great success. The Reichstag speech was made primarily as a sop to German opinion. Every witness of the Berliners' reaction to the outbreak of war has confirmed the dismay of the German capital. In spite of gaudy triumphs in Poland, in Germany it was an autumn of remarkable gloom.¹ An Italian diplomat in Berlin wrote in his diary on 23 November, 'I believe that in future years, and above all if Germany should win this war, no one will be able to realize the appalling demoralization which prevailed in the Reich in these months.'² In his Minute on the conversations of 1 October Ciano began by saying that his arrival was interpreted as another Italian effort to procure peace and, coinciding with the suspension of the blackout and of the ban on dancing which followed the end of hostilities in Poland, was greeted with extraordinary enthusiasm. Analyses of German *Stimmung* were always overweighted by evidence from Berlin, whose population was the most sober in Germany; nevertheless, it seems to have been true that the country as a whole was filled with forebodings of ill. In 1914, people whispered, we began with triumphs too, and where did we end in 1918? Hitler's Reichstag speech on 6 October was intended to prove to his public that there was no other course possible but the one he pursued. The alleged attempt on his life at Munich a month later seems to have done nothing to make the Fuhrer's war more popular, and was in itself treated with scepticism; according to Gisevius, who claims to have seen the

¹ See Hassell, op. cit., among many other accounts

² Simoni, op. cit. Simoni's real name was Lanza—he was Italian First Secretary in Berlin.

police reports, it was the work of a genuinely Communist workman, but it was characteristic that the public attributed it either to the Gestapo or to malcontent S.A. people.¹

An important element in the gloom of Germany was the feeling of being alone against the world again; this mingled with a sense of guilt over the appalling behaviour of the S.S. in Poland, news of which was very soon whispered around. In varying degrees people felt, 'We deserve to be alone.' (Thus the optimistic assumptions of British propagandists were perhaps more justified at this time than in any later period of the war.) The feeling of aloneness caused bitter resentment against Italy; it was in Germany more than in Allied or neutral countries that people spoke of Italy's treachery 'again'. Attolico, not very wisely perhaps, gave an insistent Duce a long account of this state of things as early as 10 September, and German bitterness against Italy probably increased when from the middle of October it became certain that the war would continue. It is not without significance that at the beginning of the war Göring, who liked to interpret the national mood, had told Magistrati that Italy's neutrality really suited Germany better than Italian participation. At the end of October, however, Göring appears to have twitted Teucci, the Italian Air Attaché in Berlin, with the Ribbentrop thesis that Italy's 'ratting' on 25 August had caused the Polish Treaty to be signed on the same day. On 2 November Ribbentrop himself made this reproach to Attolico. On 8 November, therefore, Ciano sent a strong refutation to Attolico, pointing out, among other things, that on the night of 31 August the British authorities cut off telephonic and telegraphic communications with Italy as much as with Germany. No one better than Ribbentrop, wrote Ciano, knew Italy's reasons, which were all clearly recorded though the relevant documents had not been published. On 12 November Magistrati called on Goring and soon took up the argument, suggesting that the 'Cavallero Memorandum' had surely made Italy's position only too clear. Goring replied with his customary smartness that Germany had not known what to make of it, since a month or so before the Italians were talking of fighting France alone.² When he felt tired of the long argument which

¹ Gisevius, *op. cit.*

² Smoni, *op. cit.*—entry on 13 Nov. 1939, and see also Chapter IX, p. 137, above

followed, Göring remarked that it was all ancient history now. At present, he said, 10 per cent. of the Germans are entirely sceptical towards Italy, 10 per cent. are doubtful, and the remaining 80 per cent. are quite content with Italy's behaviour, convinced that it is in accordance with an understanding between the Duce and the Führer; 40, 40, and 20 per cent. would have been nearer to the truth, but Göring liked to be affable. Since the Steel Pact he had been sulking over Italy and the Order which Ribbentrop had figuratively snatched from him, but for the moment he allowed Magistrati to mollify him.¹ A week or so later at a public banquet at Dresden, at which the Italian consul was present, the Gauleiter of Saxony, Mutschmann, proclaimed aloud that Germany should beware rather of treacherous friends than of her enemies. This was important because Mutschmann was an old S.S. stalwart, the type of Party man who had hitherto backed the Führer's Italophile policy against the natural prejudices of the Germans. Mackensen tried to explain the speech away by saying the Gauleiter was probably drunk, to which Ciano might well have rejoined *in vino veritas*.

It was the question of the South Tyrol which particularly and increasingly exacerbated feelings between Germany and Italy during the autumn of 1939. The South Tyrolese seemed to become more and more Nazi, and, when it came to the opting in December, the Germans who were concerned deliberately worked to bring about a demonstrative pro-German plebiscite—at this stage there seems to have been no restraining influence from on high. People like Ciano and Attolico said: '*Tant mieux*, let us be rid of them all.' But the pro-German South Tyrolese were not obliged to leave before the end of three years, and in any case the Nazi talk now was that if they left they would soon be back, since Germany would certainly annex the South Tyrol at the end of the war.² Hitler's declarations to the contrary had, not illogically, ceased to carry any weight. Ciano seems to have been more often exasperated over this matter than any other, and it is difficult not to sympathize with him. After all, Hitler on

¹ Three months later, however, he returned to the charge with the same arguments; this time he referred to Italy's economic weakness as the explanation of what he condemned as Italy's equivocal behaviour. Ciano wasted more words in a letter to Attolico on 24 Feb. 1940 (N.I.-1358) insisting again that the reasons for Italy's non-belligerency had been purely military.

² Simoni, *op. cit.*, 12 Dec. 1939.

12 August had justified war against Poland on the grounds that the evacuation of the South Tyrol had strained his prestige to its utmost limit, and yet a month later the Germans suggested the postponement of the exodus until the end of the war.¹ On 11 October Ciano told Mackensen that the Italians could not excuse the delays, 'all the less since—under Russian pressure—the Germans had expelled eighty thousand men from the Baltic States in a few hours'.² Over the South Tyrol at least Mussolini and Italian public opinion were at one, and Ciano lamented the lack of Franco-British propaganda on this subject about which its effects might, he thought, have been really inflammatory.

The climax was reached with the Pfitzner revelation just before Christmas. Professor Pfitzner had been a professor of history at the German University in Prague, although he was young, for a number of years, and as such he had been recognized as one of the leading Sudeten German 'intellectuals'; he was in fact everything that this designation could imply. When the Germans seized Prague they made him its vice-mayor. In the middle of December he delivered one of his customary addresses before what he presumed to be a loyal German audience, and he proclaimed that Greater Germany would require, not a mere South Tyrol and Trieste,³ but the whole valley of the Po. Ciano's evidence for the incident, coming via Muti,⁴ might have caused one to doubt, but everything combined to justify that young hero in this case. Pfitzner, like other Sudeten German professors, had always talked in this manner, and the seizure of Bohemia and the destruction of Poland had naturally fired his imagination. Attolico seems to have got hold of independent confirmation of the statement in question, and the anxiety of Mackensen suggested that, however much he denied it, it was true.

Just as in other days Ciano had been concerned to discover enthusiasm for the Axis in Germany or Italy, since Salzburg he wanted to find depression in the Reich and anti-German feeling in Italy. But all other witnesses in this case bear him out. Except

¹ Ciano Diary, 12 Sept. 1939

² Ibid., 11 Oct. 1939.

³ Songs about getting back Trieste were current in Vienna, as the Italians knew.

⁴ A young and foolish Fascist who succeeded Starace as Secretary of the Fascist Party.

for a minority of the Fascist *gerarchi* such as Farinacci and Alfieri, the Italians were anti-German from top to bottom, and it is significant that Interlandi's anti-Semitic paper *Il Tevere*¹ was called the 'Rhinegold' in Rome. In some cases Italians were anti-German only because they feared that Germany would drag them into war, in others out of profound objection to National-Socialism, but in most cases out of simple humanity: the ordinary people in Italy were quick to know that Hitler's Germany was an engine of cruelty, though they could not at first have conceived to how great an extent. They hated going to Germany to work, but it was from many of those who had to go that stories of horrible brutality, in some cases experienced at first hand, trickled back to Italy.

It was a remarkable thing that though Gayda announced the death of Poland as early as Hitler could have wished, recognition was never withdrawn by the Palazzo Chigi from the Polish Embassy in Rome. On 15 November Simoni noted that the Italian Embassy in Berlin was becoming a sort of Ministry for the territories occupied by the Germans. . . . 'Above all the poor Poles give us a great deal of work, but I believe that no bureaucratic efforts were ever made with so much goodwill and sincere warmth of feeling. From Rome we are ordered to grant as many entry permits as possible with the greatest liberality to Poles and Jews.' At one moment the Italian officials in Berlin thought they might be going too far, but, on inquiring from Rome, they were told to go straight ahead. On 18 November Ciano noted that the troops on the French frontier were fraternizing, while everything was inflaming Italian hatred of the Germans whose Military Attaché, Rintelen²—to take a single example—had been addressing Italian officers as if he were inspecting them. On 12 December Simoni noted an instance that had come to the notice of his Embassy: at the moment of the outbreak of war five officers of the Fascist militia were on a visit to a German police unit. On 1 September they were put into S.S. uniform and forced to serve on the Siegfried Line. The affair had, however, as Simoni wrote,

'a positive aspect in so far as these five will return to their country completely *orientati* about the Germans and they will certainly not be

¹ Ciano Diary, 13 Sept. 1939. See above, p. 111.

² Not to be confused with the Styrian Rintelen, see Chapter II.

good propagandists for the Axis. . . . They are, among other things, terrified by the mentality and behaviour of the S.S. whom, however, they only saw at work in a purely German area.'

In the Fascist Party, as in keenly Catholic circles in Italy, Hitler's pacts with Russia had done most to make him unpopular, and when, on 30 November, Russia attacked Finland, Italian indignation became extreme. Since anti-Russian demonstrations were allowed there were a great many of them, but Ciano believed that the participators would have been better pleased to demonstrate against Germany.

Ciano was compelled to observe that Mussolini himself was as often exasperated by the Allied blockade. Nevertheless, after a promising intrigue against Ciano, a number of his friends were promoted when the Duce reshaped his Cabinet at the end of October. The rumours of an immediate German attack in the West riled Mussolini, for he was terrified of its success. In November, if Ciano is to be believed, the Duce instructed the Italian consul in Prague to advise the Czechs to call themselves Communists in order to make things difficult between Moscow and Berlin. On 4 December Ciano wrote in his Diary:

'I have shown the Duce a report from an Italian—Grand' Uff. Volpato—the only foreigner to have been in Posen so far. He describes, with a simplicity which increases the horror of the facts, exactly what the Germans are doing: atrocities without name and without reason. The Duce himself was indignant: he advised me to convey the information in this report round the necessary corners to the French and American press. The world must know.'

At this moment Ley, after an interview in Venice with his opposite number, Cianetti, rushed to Rome to express the Führer's thoughts to the Duce. From the amount of comprehension he was charged to convey to Italy from Hitler and 'all authoritative German circles',¹ there must have been real anxiety in Berlin about Italy's insubordination. At naval conferences on 10 November, and especially on 22 November, Hitler was thinking in terms of Italy's soon joining him, but on 23 and 25 November he emphasized that only 'the Duce and his Fascists' were in favour of this.² But of all the Nazi leaders

¹ Ciano Minute of his conversation with Ley, 5 Dec. 1939

² On 23 Nov. Hitler addressed his commanders-in-chief rather as he had on 23 May. On 25 Nov. there was a further naval conference.

Ley was the most disastrous envoy it was possible to send; his notorious drunkenness, which might be regarded as good fun in northern and Slavonic countries, was considered as merely disgusting among Latin peoples.

It was on 5 December that Ley was in Rome. He had obviously been instructed to put the Italians right about the Russo-Finnish war. So he explained laboriously how the Nordic countries, including Finland (alas for Rosenberg), had always shown an ideological aversion towards Italy and Germany—it was the Swede, Sandler, who had proposed sanctions against Italy. Russia, on the other hand, was a harmless giant who could easily be pushed back into Asia when the time came; until England was beaten the harmless giant must be humoured. Russian influence in countries like Bulgaria need not be feared because 'the Germans can easily tame Slavs everywhere'.¹ This being the case Ciano was unable to get any satisfaction from Ley with regard to the restoration of some kind of Polish national state, a theme to which the Fascist Government recurred until its fall; there was, in fact, no more frequent divergence between Fascists and Nazis than over this kind of theme. But it did become plain to the Italian Foreign Minister that Germany was preparing to attack Britain through an invasion of Holland. In fact Ley gave enough away for his visit to have been worth while from the Italian point of view; in so far as he answered the questions put to him it was obvious that he echoed Hitler mechanically, and this compensated for the growing taciturnity encountered in Berlin by Attolico, who, like Ciano himself, was by now darkly suspect to Ribbentrop. As the Fascist Grand Council had been convened for 7 December Ciano had written to Attolico on 24 November to ask the old question 'What does Germany intend now?', but Ley's visit on 5 December was in the nick of time. Ciano read to the Council all his documents relevant to the Axis and felt satisfied that Italian indiscretion would prevail and the knowledge be diffused over the country.

All through the autumn Mussolini, tormented by the humiliation imposed upon him as the un-dynamic dictator, and afflicted by ills² which accentuated his instability, had been

¹ Ciano Minute, 5 Dec. 1939.

² See Ciano Diary, especially 27 Dec. 1939.

seeking before everything self-justification. Already towards the end of October he had decided not only that that rarely assembled body, the Grand Council, should be convened but also that Ciano should vindicate his Duce's foreign policy before the Chamber of Corporations and the world. The speech for this purpose seems to have been written entirely by Ciano but approved by his father-in-law without alteration; its underlying theme was 'not we the traitors . . .'. At 9 a.m. on Saturday, 16 December, with Grandi presiding at Montecitorio and in the presence of the Duce, Ciano delivered his oration for the space of nearly two hours. The trappings were conventionally Fascist—Italy had but one heart, one faith, one will—that of her Duce—and the tone of the speech was before everything anti-Communist. He described the Axis as an integral part of anti-Komintern policy, originally operative in Spain, and then disclosed how Germany had made her pact with Russia on 23 August after informing Italy only on the night of the 21st. He recorded his meeting with Ribbentrop in Milan in the previous May and stated clearly that while Italy had estimated that the Axis could not face the risk of war until 1942, Germany had preferred to allow four to five years to complete the necessary military preparations. He read aloud the communiqué which he had proposed in vain at Salzburg, where he first learnt of Germany's decision to take military steps against Poland instead of attempting a political solution. He referred to the Duce's peace efforts on 31 August and insisted that until 1 September only Germany knew that Italy was not to fight.

Though the Allies were reproached with a number of things and Britain blamed for killing last-minute hopes of mediation, the speech was a piece of audacity towards Hitler. It was hailed in Italy as a denunciation of the Steel Pact and the 'funeral march of the Axis', and for a time Ciano persuaded himself that he had cut the bonds that bound Mussolini to Hitler. On 19 December the Italian Press received instructions in future to report all warlike operations impartially.¹ The Italians breathed again; they also felt great satisfaction over the exchange of visits between the Pope and the King before and after Christmas; the Pope, particularly, was regarded as an anti-Nazi stalwart, and that the Vatican and Quirinal should

¹ Simoni, op. cit.

ostentatiously draw together at this moment was felt to be damaging to Hitler.

The climax was reached not on 16 December but early in the New Year, 1940, when Mussolini brought himself to the point of writing a long personal letter to Hitler. This began by stating that Ciano's speech 'from the first to the last word' expressed nothing but the Duce's own views: he then referred to Ciano as one of the most convinced champions of Italo-German friendship. Mussolini went on to say that the German-Russian *entente* had damaged Germany and Italy in Spain to the Western Allies' advantage. Though, as he pointed out, Ciano's speech had not mentioned Finland, the Duce described the strong sympathy felt in Italy for *questa piccola valorosa nazione*.

While trying to deny the existence of sympathies for Britain in Italy Mussolini complained to Hitler that British propaganda (he admitted that the B.B.C. was listened to by the Italians) was making successful play of Germany's pact with Communism and of the treatment of the Poles; therefore he urged the creation of a Polish national state under the aegis of Germany. He was, he said, profoundly convinced that Britain and France could never bring Hitler's Germany helped by Italy to capitulate, but might it not cost too much to beat the Allies to their knees?

'Is it worth while, now that you have secured your eastern frontiers and created the greater Reich with ninety million inhabitants, to risk everything—including the régime—and to sacrifice the flower of Germany's youth in order to hasten the falling of an over-ripe fruit which should in any case fall to us, the representatives of the new forces of Europe? (The great democracies bear within themselves the seeds of their inevitable decay.)'¹

Politically, Mussolini continued, he understood that 'since Ribbentrop's forecast that Britain and France would not intervene was mistaken, you avoided a second front' by making terms with Russia. 'But I who was born a revolutionary and have never changed my revolutionary mentality must tell you that you

¹ = 'Vale la pena — ora che voi avete realizzato la sicurezza dei vostri confini orientali e creato il grande Reich di 90 milioni abitanti — di rischiare tutto — compreso il regime — e di sacrificare il fiore delle generazioni tedesche per anticipare la caduta di un frutto che dovrà fatalmente cadere e dovrà essere raccolto da noi che rappresentiamo le forze nuove d'Europa? (Le grandi democrazie portano in se stesse le ragioni della loro fatale decadenza)'

cannot permanently sacrifice the principles of *your* Revolution to the tactical exigencies of a certain political moment. . . . The solution of your *Lebensraum* problem is in Russia alone. . . .'

This astonishing manifestation had been brought to maturity by the multiplication of the signs of a German offensive to be launched against the West around the date of 20 January. The letter had certain weaknesses such as its equivocal reference to the Balkan block idea which Mussolini now disowned. The manuscript of this letter shows the alterations made by the Duce in his original text; they illuminate the workings of his mind but do not reveal radical changes.¹ The letter went off to Berlin on 5 January 1940, and was delivered into Hitler's hands by Attolico on the afternoon of 8 January. This was the zenith of the liberation of Mussolini's spirit from that of Hitler; in this fashion he could say his say uninterrupted by the endless monologues of the Fuhrer. But the effort to assert himself proved to be too great for Mussolini; he succumbed very shortly afterwards to what was perhaps an inevitable reaction, rather as if he had tried to force himself to take a cold bath, then, shivering, had turned on the hot tap further and further.

¹ The original draft of the last sentence quoted above ran as follows: 'But I, who was born and shall die a revolutionary, must tell you that you cannot permanently sacrifice the principles of *our* Revolution to the tactical exigencies of a certain moment.'

The Mission of Sumner Welles

IN spite of the Duce's unsteady performance as Pollux to his own Castor the Fuhrer had confidence in his power over Mussolini. Apart from his thin-skinned vanity and not unjustified sense of common interest with Hitler, Mussolini was kept in a state of irritation by the British blockade which reminded him incessantly that the Mediterranean was not yet an Italian lake. The German coal upon which Italy so much depended originally came by sea, via Rotterdam. On 27 November 1939 Britain declared German exports as well as imports to be contraband, though it was not until 1 March 1940 that British ships actually stopped German coal bound for Italy. Hitler knew very well that the Allies' blockade would do a good deal to bring Mussolini into the war on his side. On 22 November at a Fuhrer Conference on Naval Affairs it was stated that 'Italy will be asked for submarines once more as soon as her attitude is clarified. It seems to be crystallizing by degrees, as witnessed by the note to Britain concerning the molesting of Italian ships.' Ciano noted as early as 27 September that Mussolini was in favour of acceding to all German requests for naval assistance, but he claimed that he and Admiral Cavagnari had been able to sabotage the whole idea. This was not quite true, and there was a certain exchange of intelligence all the time. The Germans had marvellously arbitrary ways of impressing Italians into their ranks, as witness the affair of the five militia officers. At a Naval Conference on 8 December, Hitler advised 'somewhat delaying the embarkation of Italian officers aboard submarines, but he [Hitler] has no fundamental objections'.¹

Three days after this Ley arrived back in Berlin from Italy. According to the information received by the Italian Embassy² he went straight from the Anhalterbahnhof to a two hours' interview with Hitler in the morning and was with him again in the afternoon. Ley complained of an icy impression in Italy to

¹ *Fuhrer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1939.

² Simoni, 11 Dec. 1939.

start with, though things had improved after he had seen Mussolini. The Leader of the *Arbeitsfront* was not among Hitler's more influential colleagues, but he was the first German Minister to have visited Italy since the outbreak of war. A few days later came Ciano's speech. It was almost entirely suppressed in the German papers, but the official world soon came to know what it had contained. German reactions to it were slow but strong,¹ and Himmler arranged to go to Italy at once to see his agents on the spot, the opting then in progress in the South Tyrol giving him an excellent excuse.

The Germans began to be afraid that it might really be 1915 again, that is, that the Italians would join in on the other side. It has been seen that Raeder had wanted Italy as his ally all along. General Marras, the new Italian Military Attaché in Berlin, now picked up the impression from Reichswehr staff officers that they 'would rather see us in the war on their side, even with all our weaknesses—by now well known to them—than have us, as they fear, as enemies'.² Attolico heard from Hewel, a liaison official between the German Foreign Office and the Nazi Party, that Ribbentrop was absolutely enraged: the Foreign Minister considered that Ciano's speech had been positively damaging to the interest of the Reich. The statement, he affirmed, that Italy had required three years' time from May reduced *ad absurdum* her 'potential' help to Germany, while the fact that Germany had named an even longer period might suggest to the enemy that the Reich also was unprepared and in fact only bluffing.³ It would not be fantastic to suppose that Ribbentrop was already contemplating a terrible revenge against Ciano.

Hitler at this time was in fine fettle, quite undaunted. Though the attack on the Low Countries had to be put off several times,⁴ he was licking his lips over the prospect. On 20 December he paid his traditional Christmas call on his old friends the Bruckmanns, and found time to stay an hour and three-quarters; he seemed well, confident, and totally unrepentant when the destruction of Warsaw was mentioned. He signed the Bruck-

¹ The Mutschmann and Pfitzner incidents, though they attracted attention at much the same time, had occurred independently of Ciano's speech.

² Simoni, 24 Dec. 1939. Marras had been Military Attaché in Berlin before Roatta too.

³ Idem, 28 Dec. 1939.

⁴ The order for this attack was originally issued on 9 Oct. 1939.

manns' visitors' book and appended to his signature 'Im Jahre des Kampfes um die Errichtung des grossen, deutsch-germanischen Reichs'.¹ He was full of plans for titanic reconstruction at this time.

At 3 p.m. on 8 January 1940 Attolico was led into the presence to deliver the Duce's letter; the inevitable Ribbentrop was in attendance. Hitler read the letter 'almost with avidity', stopping to agree over a sentence which stressed the necessity for Germany to maintain peace in the Balkans—in August, it may be remembered, Hitler did his best to incite Italy to attack Yugoslavia but his friendship with Russia had reversed this programme too. After reading and re-reading the Duce's words, the Führer said to Ribbentrop: 'I must write a letter in reply.' Then after some rumination he asked Attolico whether there was really so much sympathy in Italy for Finland, to which Attolico naturally replied that there was. This offended against the geo-political Nietzschean thesis that only the Great Powers should count since only they were strong, and Attolico was treated to the assertion that small states have no right to exist except in so far as they serve the interests of the great. With this the Ambassador was dismissed; Hitler said he would answer Mussolini in due course.

It was the old story. Just when the choicest dishes were about to be served Hitler found Mussolini asking him to rise and leave the dining-table. The Duce had ended his letter by expressing his wish to be an economic and military, but also a diplomatic, reserve for Germany 'nel caso che voi voleste addivenire a una soluzione politico-diplomatica'.² It seems that soon after Attolico had left him the Führer sent for Göring, and with Ribbentrop the three of them angrily discussed the Duce's letter for more than five hours. Hitler then withdrew into an Olympian reserve, sending out his captains to face the latest peace offensive. Meanwhile the senior staff of the Wilhelmstrasse read Mussolini's letter with secret satisfaction and whispered their approval to one another.

Ribbentrop saw Attolico on 10 January, and Goring saw

¹ Hassell, *op. cit.*, p. 111. = 'In the year of the battle for the setting-up of the great German-Nordic Empire' (*deutsch-germanisch* can only be approximately translated).

² = 'in the case of your wishing to arrive at a negotiated solution'.

Attolico on the 13th and Magistrati on the 15th. The Nazi chiefs were intransigent. Their argument was: 'Of course *we* don't want war but England forces us to fight because she is determined upon our annihilation.' Ribbentrop tried to be diplomatic over Russia, curbing the enthusiasm he had expressed to Ciano in October; now he assured Attolico that Germany had only one ally, Italy, and would never come to an alliance with Russia. Thus January dragged on and Attolico waited in vain for Hitler's answer to Mussolini. There is relatively little direct evidence of the Fuhrer's state of mind at this time except the following: at his conference with Raeder and the others on 26 January it was noted that 'the Fuhrer believes that Italy will enter the war only in the event of great German successes and preferably only against France; he sees no great advantage for Germany in Italy's participation in view of the fact that Germany would probably then be burdened with the obligation to make more deliveries to Italy'.¹ What a text-book example of sour grapes! Many other Germans had said this before now, but never Hitler. For the moment the Fuhrer was content to wait. He instinctively knew that, left in suspense, Mussolini would relapse into flamboyant bellicosity and dependence therefore upon Germany. It was this indeed which Ciano witnessed and Attolico sensed during February. 'The delay of the Fuhrer's answer to the Duce's letter exasperates him,' Simoni noted of Attolico on 8 February; 'he does not know how to explain it, and fears more and more that this silence may precede some evil surprise.' On the 19th he wrote, 'Attolico feels that he is in process of losing his battle in which the position, and perhaps the fate, of our country is at stake.' His failing health seemed to sharpen Attolico's perception.

Hitler knew that the British Navy was to stop the transport of German coal from Germany to Italy as from 1 March, and soon after that he intended to have seductive deeds of his own, not merely words, to offer the Duce—it was on 1 March that he decided upon the plan for the action against Norway. Meanwhile he sent the inevitable Philip of Hesse to Rome to propose, rather vaguely, a personal meeting of the Chiefs at the frontier. Mussolini seemed delighted and told the hideous Prince that he hoped to fight at Hitler's side as soon as Italy could thereby help

¹ *Fuhrer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1940.

Germany and not burden her—this interview was on 8 February. At about the same time Mussolini refused to sell arms and munitions to the British, and, with this, put a stop to expanding Italo-British commerce, since the British had made the sale of arms a condition for the resumption of commercial negotiations. Until now non-belligerency had made possible something of a trade-boom in Italy, since orders had been given to drop autarchic principles for the moment and to buy up raw materials and accumulate foreign exchange. The refusal to Britain was the beginning of the economic end. The Duce followed it up by forcing his own representatives to make most unwilling concessions to Clodius in the Italo-German commercial agreement which was concluded on 24 February; even copper, of which Italy was in great need and which was now to be confiscated from private houses and from the churches, was promised to Germany.

Suddenly all eyes were focused on Sumner Welles, and even Attolico's hopes flickered brightly before they died. President Roosevelt's representative was to make an exploratory visit to Europe to see whether there was still a possibility of the re-establishment of peace. More precisely his journey was intended to counteract Germany's pressure upon Italy to join in the war. 'Only in Italy', Sumner Welles wrote later, 'was it remotely conceivable that the policy of this [the American] Government might have some concrete effect. If by some means the United States could prevent Italy from actually taking part in the war against France and Great Britain, if Hitler could not obtain the active participation of his southern partner in an attack upon France, the outcome of the war might be less certain than it then seemed.'¹ So Sumner Welles came to Europe, as it were to fortify Ciano against Hitler and Ribbentrop, and it is not surprising that Berlin reacted frigidly. But for the American envoy to have had any chance of success he should have arrived in Europe two months earlier.

Sumner Welles's admirable account of his visits to the four chief European capitals is available to the English-speaking world.¹ Here it is relevant to pick out one or two of his impressions. He arrived in Rome on 25 February and left for Berlin

¹ Sumner Welles, *The Time for Decision* (Harpers, 1944), Chapter 3, 'My Mission to Europe 1940'.

on 29 February. He found Ciano just as we still find him in his diary—indeed, Sumner Welles's testimony is the best confirmation of its authenticity.¹ The difference between the attitudes of Ciano and of Mussolini was patent; the two only coincided in condemning the Western Allies' idea of restoring the independence of Austria and Czechoslovakia. Ciano² was alarmed by Mussolini's coldness towards his American visitor (whom he received on 26 February), but Welles himself was more taken aback by the Duce's appearance. 'The man I saw before me seemed fifteen years older than his actual age of fifty-six. He was ponderous and static rather than vital. He moved with an elephantine motion; every step appeared an effort. He was heavy for his height, and his face in repose fell in rolls of flesh.' Since Sumner Welles shows no tendency whatever towards over-statement his description confirms all that Ciano's Diary indicates about the state of Mussolini's health in the winter 1939-40.

Towards the end of his interview with the Duce, Sumner Welles plunged straight into the theme—so oddly related to the motive of his own journey—of Mussolini's letter to Hitler. 'Do you consider it possible at this moment', he asked, 'for any successful negotiations to be undertaken between Germany and the Allies for a lasting peace?' 'Yes,' came the answer, 'but I am equally sure that if a "real" war breaks out, with its attendant slaughter and devastation, there will be no possibility for a long time to come of any peace negotiation.' It should be added that Mussolini spoke to Sumner Welles with great bitterness of Britain, and with great insistence upon the satisfaction of Italy's claims.

Early on 1 March Sumner Welles arrived in Berlin and was received by Ribbentrop at noon. Never can even this man have behaved more intolerably. He who carried on so many of his political conversations in English suddenly found himself unable to understand a single English word. While Mussolini had kept his eyes shut for 'a considerable part of the time', Ribbentrop 'sat with his arms extended on the sides of his chair and his eyes continuously closed' and held forth for well over two hours. It

¹ Quite apart from Welles's preface to the Diary.

² Ciano acted as interpreter. His Minute has a differently arranged account of this conversation.

was all the usual rigmarole about Germany's innocence, covered this time with American icing, for he declared that the Reich only asked for her own Monroe doctrine in Central Europe: the analogy was as false as the whole of Ribbentrop's peroration.

On 3 March Welles saw Hitler, who seemed in 'excellent physical condition', and, as was always the case, expressed much the same as Ribbentrop, but with flexibility and grace. The *leitmotiv* continued to be 'England wishes to destroy us utterly, therefore we have no choice but to strike at her as hard as we can'. 'I believe', said the Fuhrer, 'that German might is such as to make the triumph of Germany inevitable but, if not, we will all go down together, whether that be for better or for worse.' And then, the only moment of raucous stridency for the inevitable play-acting of the paranoid, 'I did not want this war. It has been forced upon me against my will. It is a waste of my time. My life should have been spent in constructing not in destroying.' It should here be noted that while Mussolini only once referred to the Axis by inference when he said that Italy could not be ranked among the neutrals on account of her special relationship with Germany, neither Hitler nor Ribbentrop mentioned Italy to Sumner Welles. In his speech at Munich on 24 February, Hitler had made much with 'To-day Italy is our friend' when he made his routine list of Germany's advantages as compared with the last World War.

Ciano misinterpreted the American's reaction to his talk with Mussolini: Sumner Welles left Rome with the old François-Poncet illusion, dearer still to Mussolini himself, that the Duce and the Duce alone might be able to restrain the Fuhrer. But in Berlin Welles easily grasped the asymmetry of the Axis and the hopelessness of the situation. He made the usual foreign statesman's visit to Karinhall and saw Hess and Schacht and Weizsäcker; the State Secretary behaved like the cowardly buffoon that he was, and finally ventured upon the assertion that 'here [i.e. in the German Foreign Office] the relations between Germany and Italy have *narrowed* greatly'.

In the long run Sumner Welles's visit probably changed nothing, but it profoundly agitated Hitler and Ribbentrop; powerful competitive influence was being exerted in Rome to reinforce those deplorable Mussolinian tendencies towards peace-making against which Hitler had to contend. He knew

that the Allies were exceedingly vulnerable in the immediate future and believed Sumner Welles was simply trying to gain time for them, thus defrauding him of the full glory of the offensive he had planned. When he sent for Schacht to school him for his interview with Sumner Welles, it is interesting that Hitler admitted that from now on time might work against Germany—'Who knows', he added, 'where Stalin or Mussolini will stand in a year's time?'¹ So early as 28 February Madame Tabouis—was this through her Russian sources or merely a good guess?—had prophesied an imminent Ribbentrop journey to Rome, and on the 29th the Italian Embassy in Berlin received an irritable letter from Ciano asking why Hitler still did not answer Mussolini. Quite suddenly on Friday, 8 March, Mackensen informed Ciano that Ribbentrop would arrive in Rome on the Sunday, bearer of the long-delayed reply; after two months it was now possible to concoct a long letter dated 6 March with, as Hitler might have said, lightning speed. If American diplomacy unwillingly precipitated this letter it helped to re-harness Mussolini to Hitler's chariot.

Hitler's letter, like Mark Antony's funeral oration, was primitive enough, but it was such as most surely to whet Mussolini's appetite, to whip him into an ecstasy of combative zeal. The Fuhrer began with the usual vindication of the German attack upon Poland: Italy, he said, would not have endured five per cent. of the martyrdom supported by Germany at Poland's hands, and he had been compelled to act above all for motives of prestige at home. There followed a gush of enthusiasm for *Italy*, his first but his eternal friend, for the sake of its people, its system, but above all its Chief.

'I fully understood your decision', wrote Hitler, 'and have appreciated your support. . . . We can nevertheless have no doubt about one point: the outcome of this war will also decide the future of Italy. If this future is considered in your country in terms of merely perpetuating the existence of a European state of modest pretensions, then I am wrong. But if this future is considered in terms of a guarantee of the existence of the Italian people from a historical, geopolitical, and moral point of view, or according to the rights of your people, those who are fighting Germany to-day will

¹ Hassell, *op. cit.*, p. 136. Hassell saw Schacht on 8 Mar. Sumner Welles could not mention Schacht in his book, as it came out in 1944 when Schacht was in prison and in danger of his life.

be your enemies too. I know you think the same. I, too, believe that the destinies of our two States, of our two Peoples, of our two revolutions, and of our two régimes are indissolubly linked.¹

Ribbentrop left Berlin on 9 March with Gaus, Clodius, all their secretaries, and thirty-five other people, including barbers, a doctor, a masseur, a gymnastic teacher, and a 'student';¹ the size of the 'delegation' was not unusual but it is worth noting the absurdity of it in time of war. On Sunday, 10 March, Ciano and a crowd, which the *Federale* found difficult enough to assemble,² greeted the Nazi Minister very coolly at the station at Rome. There followed a long, long interview with Mussolini during which, as Ciano said, 'Ribbentrop diluiscie in molte parole'³ the points of Hitler's letter after a very poor explanation of its delay. In addition to the common destiny of Italy and Germany, another main theme was that Germany (who of course desired peace) was on the eve of a necessary and breath-taking triumph of which the United States evidently wished to cheat her by loose talk about restoring peace. Ribbentrop dilated considerably over the 'enormous responsibility' of America in bringing the war about, producing in evidence documents found by the Germans in the Polish Foreign Office. The Jewish world-plutocracy was at the root of it, of course, to which Mussolini made the interesting rejoinder that it was a matter of the three hundred who rule the world and to whom Rathenau referred long ago.⁴

In his letter Hitler had also vindicated his friendship with Russia along similar lines. Formerly, he claimed, Russia had aimed at the destruction of the non-Jewish peoples, but now, since Litvinoff had been *écarté*, one could work unexceptionably with the nationalistic Russia of Stalin. Ribbentrop, needless to say, let himself go in expanding this point—on his second visit to Russia the members of the Politburo had seemed like old comrades. He also used the occasion to state that the Nazi Party had approved without reserve of the pact with Russia to which Mussolini in his New Year letter had objected because, *inter alia*, it must certainly have distressed many good Nazis.

¹ Simoni, 8 Mar. 1940.

² Ciano Diary, 10 Mar. 1940.

³ = 'Ribbentrop expands in many words'.

⁴ 'Three hundred men, all acquainted with each other, control the economic destiny of the Continent', wrote Rathenau, the Jew, in the *Neue Freie Presse* (Vienna) in 1909.

The Reich Foreign Minister also found all kinds of ingenious arguments to justify his own behaviour in the past: now he claimed that he had always known that there would be war between Britain and Germany—indeed, he had reposed his one hope to the contrary in the person of Edward VIII.¹

When Hitler was drafting his letter the coal-ships had been stopped and Italy was *en pleine crise de charbon*. He therefore assured Mussolini that he was instructing his people to make Italy independent of coal from the West.² Anyway he believed in principle that men like the Fuhrer and the Duce always find a way of putting an end by economic as well as by military means to anything of the nature of 'these democracies' terroristic blockade'. This was like an echo of the foolish remarks to which Mussolini had treated Ciano ever since the coal situation had become threatening, though to Ribbentrop he said 'No canons without coal'. On 9 March, however, Italy came to terms for the moment with 'these democracies' over the blockade and on the 10th Ribbentrop consequently redoubled Germany's offers, explaining that Hitler was convinced that Britain wished to strangle Italy commercially. It was astonishing with what rapidity Clodius now became able to supply not only twelve million tons of German coal per annum, but also all the necessary coal-trucks for their transport by land. This completed the process begun in 1935; from now until Germany's collapse, all Italy's imported coal came from the greater German Reich. It was one aspect of the break with the West already. From this time onwards the Swiss watched coal-trucks streaming, as it seemed, interminably from Basle to Chiasso. As the war years passed strange things came to be hidden under the coal, men of all nationalities pursued by the Gestapo, wondering whether they would be suffocated with coal-dust before they enjoyed the exquisite luxury of reaching neutral Swiss territory.

On 11 March the Duce received Ribbentrop for the second time—it was now his turn to talk. He began by a reference to the visit which Ribbentrop had made earlier that same day to the Pope whose pacific machinations were as distasteful to

¹ All this is recorded in the German Minute of 10 Mar. 1940, published in translation in *L'Europa verso la catastrofe*. See above, Chapter VI, p. 85.

² At the end of his letter Hitler reverted to the coal question which, he suggested, was particularly infirming for Mussolini.

Hitler as any others. Mussolini went on to refer to some documents claiming to reveal the intrigues of Otto of Habsburg, documents which the Duce had actually handed to his visitor the day before. This trivial attempt to curry favour with the Nazis only deserves mention in view of the past history of the Axis. More immediately relevant was the Duce's fresh request that the telegram Hitler addressed to him on 1 September should be published in Germany—it never had nor would be.¹ Mussolini then underlined his recent 'No' to the 'arbitrary' British demand to buy arms and munitions from him, and accepted notice given by the Germans that they were preparing to send submarines to the Mediterranean. With regard to the major question of Italy's military participation in the war, the Duce stated that it would undoubtedly occur—though he did not yet know exactly when—as a war 'parallel' with that waged by Germany; it was essential for Italy to free herself from her imprisonment in the Mediterranean. Mussolini insisted that all along Italy had been a perfectly ally to Germany, supplying her, for example, with large quantities of essential vitamin-C foods. The second Ribbentrop interview ended with the understanding that Hitler and Mussolini should meet at the Brenner after 19 March.

There was an odd little pendant to this visit of Ribbentrop to Italy. On 13 March the Italian Embassy in Berlin received a telegram to say that a German school was to be opened in Trieste.² This, as far as the available evidence goes, was an unsolicited gift such as Mussolini loved to bestow upon Hitler; the persecution of the Jews had probably been the same thing upon a vaster scale. The Italians who knew of these superfluous gestures of generosity found them particularly exasperating.

To Ciano Mussolini seemed less pleased with Germany at this moment than might have been expected and he kept saying either that he did not believe in the pre-announced German offensive in the West or that he wished to see Hitler in order to continue to dissuade him from it. Ribbentrop's report in Berlin cannot have allayed his master's fears, for on 13 March the Reich Foreign Minister telephoned to ask for the Hitler-Mussolini meeting to take place, not after the 19th, but on the Monday morning, 18 March.

¹ See above, Chapter X, p. 170. Ciano had complained about this in his letter to Attolico on 8 Nov., see above, Chapter XI, p. 180.

² Simoni, *op. cit.*

Sumner Welles arrived back in Rome, after visiting Paris and London, on 16 March, and immediately saw Ciano and then the Duce. His second and friendlier interview with Mussolini on 16 March is a little difficult to reconstruct, since his account and Ciano's Minute do not coincide; it seems reasonable to give more weight to Sumner Welles. At all events it may be affirmed that the latter stated that the Western Allies would be ready to negotiate if there were a serious possibility that Hitler would keep his word, but without this there was no basis for any attempt at making peace. Mussolini played up as best he could to the implication that all eyes were fixed on him. He said that he believed the German offensive to be very near and that Europe could not stand a real war. But Germany must be guaranteed her *Lebensraum*; in addition, all Italy's claims and the just claims of Hungary must be considered. According to Sumner Welles he said that a 'just political peace' was the indispensable *first point*: according to Ciano he announced that the Four Powers who were assembled at Munich were the only possible guarantors of such a peace and that *his* Four-Power Pact idea should be revived. The Duce asked to be able to communicate Sumner Welles's impressions of London and Paris to Hitler, but when Welles telephoned to Washington for permission Roosevelt refused. As the American rose to leave, Mussolini said to him, 'You may wish to remember that, while the German-Italian Pact exists, *I* nevertheless retain complete liberty of action.'¹ According to Ciano 'A conclusione del colloquio il Duce conferma la sua solidarietà politica con la Germania'.²

On the next day, Sunday, 17 March, at 1.30 p.m. Mussolini and Ciano set out for the Brenner. It was snowing there, as it so often is. The Italians arrived first on the Monday morning and Mussolini waited for Hitler with a feeling of 'anxious pleasure': 'of late he has reacted more and more to the fascination of the Fuhrer: the causes of this are the military successes, the only successes which Mussolini really appreciates and desires'.³

Hitler arrived still in good health and temper, as Sumner Welles had found him a fortnight earlier; the signs of fatigue which Ciano noticed in October had left him. It was the first

¹ Sumner Welles, *op. cit.*

² Ciano Minute, 16 Mar. 1940.

³ Ciano Diary, 18 Mar. 1940.

time he had seen the Duce since Munich. Hitler joined Mussolini in his train on the Italian side of the frontier. Needless to say he talked and talked; Mussolini listened 'con simpatia e deferenza', and was able to say little. Apart from the endless repetitions and a great deal of military reminiscence and prognostication, the Fuhrer made full use of his Mark Antony technique. *If* Italy had taken up a strong position in August and had thus induced Britain and France to keep out of the war, that would of course have been opportune, he said. But if they could not have been prevented then it was no doubt better for Italy to have kept clear of the conflict.

'He had not', Hitler said, 'come to ask for anything with regard to Italy's attitude, but *simply* to explain the situation and to convey his own expectations with regard to the future development of the war. Then the Duce could . . . make his own decisions. Undoubtedly . . . the defeat of Germany would mean the end of the Italian Empire. . . . He [the Fuhrer] is a realist and would *never* in any way desire the Duce to do anything which conflicted with the interests of the Italian people, for he was not like the English who expected other nations to snatch the chestnuts out of the fire for them.'

It was true, Hitler confessed, that in *Mein Kampf* he had said that Germany should ally with England. Yet since England had been determined to fight Germany he had decided for Russia. 'This decision matured in him after much thought and will never be changed . . . the Fuhrer is determined always to preserve friendly relations with that country.' This was an odd and inconsequent and perhaps daredevil change from the instruction he had obviously given to Ley in December, and a flouting of the Duce's reproofs in his January letter. It was rather as if Hitler were saying, 'So little can you resist me that I shall make you happily eat your own words.'

When the Duce had a chance to speak he first of all agreed with everything Hitler had said—his habit of agreeing with his companion of the moment, whatever this involved, was growing upon him.¹ He then stated that Italy's entry into the war at Germany's side was inevitable, it was simply a matter of choosing the right time. He made one perfectly sensible reserve, all the stranger since he often shared Hitler's pose of 'We heroes

¹ Cf. C. Senise, *Quando ero Capo della Polizia* (Ruffolo, Rome, 1946).

are above mere economics': he specifically stated that Italy's finances could not stand a long war.

Finally, Mussolini referred to his talks with Sumner Welles.¹ It is not quite clear from the Minute whether, as Ciano had feared in anticipation, he quoted Sumner Welles's remarks about the willingness of Britain and France to make peace as the evidence, but in connexion with the American visitor he spoke of poor morale in the Allied countries. As Sumner Welles had been to Berlin before London and Paris, and in any case would have been far more cautious in Berlin than in Rome, the implication was of the greatest interest to Hitler and may even have clinched his decision to strike soon; he made it clear, however, that owing to meteorological considerations the German offensive would not follow immediately.

Sumner Welles had waited in Rome to see Ciano who, on his return on 19 March, was able to pass on this piece of information, and to state that no change in Italy's position had been decided upon. The two agreed that Italy should remain in contact with the United States, each bearing in mind the possibility of some joint step in the direction of peace; Ciano says that they even spoke of the possibility of a Mussolini-Roosevelt meeting in the Azores. Ciano made the rash prophecy that Italy would never enter the war while he was Foreign Minister. Altogether, the extraordinary way in which he advertised his difference of view from that of his chief can only be explained by his belief at that time that Germany would be beaten and that he could then persuade the Allies to accept him as the Duce's successor.

While Sumner Welles was waiting for Ciano's return from the Brenner, he saw as many other Italians as possible, 'both those in official positions and those who played some part in the business and intellectual life of the country. Without a single exception they not only expressed their bitter opposition to Italy's involvement in the war but pled almost hysterically that the President of the United States exercise his influence to prevent that from happening.'² (To his cousin Blasco d'Ajeta, an

¹ On this occasion it had suited Hitler 'loyally' to send Mussolini the records of the German conversations with Sumner Welles; Rome was normally very correct towards Berlin over all such things.

² Sumner Welles, *op. cit.*

important official at the Palazzo Chigi, he himself seems to have spoken with the greatest pessimism of the outlook for Germany.)

The veritable panic in Italy over the prospect of being drawn into the war expressed itself in another way. Not only had Sumner Welles been hailed for the olive-branches he was thought to be bearing with him, but the Italian public so much longed to do so that it succeeded in interpreting the Brenner meeting as part of the peace action which it hoped Sumner Welles had initiated: Rome itself was described as 'festive' on 18 March. Simoni found exactly the same thing in Berlin: Mussolini, people said, had certainly persuaded Ribbentrop of the necessity of a compromise peace. Even people in high official positions made this guess, for they still regarded Mussolini as faintly like Hitler's good angel, able to restrain him at least occasionally.¹ The news that Hitler had left for the Brenner inflated these hopes. As for the idea of Italy's joining in the war, the normal Berlin reaction was to say 'Mussolini is not such a fool'.²

Ironically enough all the journeys of Sumner Welles and Ribbentrop and the two dictators were to bring not peace but a sword; it has been seen that if Roosevelt's envoy achieved anything it may have been to make even more certain the German offensive which was to sweep France off her feet and to justify Ribbentrop's boast, when he got to Rome on 10 March, that in a few months' time there would be no British left on the Continent but prisoners of war. Ciano himself was too close to the Duce, saw him too constantly, and heard him change his mind too often, to be clear as to the way in which the situation was developing. He was now so anxious to keep out of the war that he exaggerated the value of a little respite and interpreted the passing ill humour of Mussolini as of permanent significance. How eagerly he recorded on 19 March that Mussolini was angry because, having meant to say so much at the Brenner, he had scarcely been allowed to speak! 'Il che non è nelle sue abitudini di dittatore, anzi di decano dei dittatori.'³ This was perfectly exact but it did not count.

¹ See Hassell's indication about Weizsäcker and Nostitz; also Hassell on the 'man in the street' in Germany, p. 138.

² Simoni, 18 Mar. 1940.

³ Ciano Diary, 19 Mar. 1940. = 'To which he is not accustomed as a dictator, or rather as *doyen* of the dictators.'

In his almost feverish desire to keep out of this war Ciano, one feels, was beginning to lose his young Fascist ardour for waging war at all. Not so the Duce. It was splendid if one could be fêted as the saviour of peace, as in 1938, in order, however, to prepare for a safer and more magnificent war later on. While the Italians as a whole—apart from convinced anti-Fascists like those who had fought for the Republic in Spain and wished Italy to fight against Hitler from the beginning—desired above all to keep out of the war, over one thing Mussolini did not vacillate: all along he intended to come in on Germany's side at what seemed to him to be the right moment. This is clear from Ciano's Diary and from every other indication. The idea of neutrality repelled him. When his diplomats urged upon him that Germany's behaviour had freed him from the Steel Pact obligations he ignored them, for he did not wish to be freed.¹ And while he kept the Brenner well fortified, he would never have led Italy into the war against Germany for many reasons, among them that since his visit to Germany in 1937 he would have been afraid to do so.

What it is remarkable to find at this point in the history of the Axis is that, in the maturing of Mussolini's state of mind towards rapid intervention, Ribbentrop's visit on 10 and 11 March seems to have had more influence upon him than any other single event before Germany's military triumphs in May, and a more decisive influence than these. That this was the case was felt by the—in this case hypersensitive—Italian Embassy in Berlin; it is recorded in Simoni's Diary, which is sometimes unreliable with regard to extraneous detail, but which faithfully conveys the Embassy atmosphere and reflects the state of mind of Attolico. The same thing was conveyed to Weizsäcker² by Ribbentrop and his retinue upon their triumphant return from Rome. The most impressive witness, however, is Sumner Welles who wrote that on 16 March:

'I found Mussolini looking far better physically than he had when I had seen him two weeks before. He did not seem to be laboring

¹ His remark to Sumner Welles quoted above was most unusual even for the vacillating Mussolini; it was obviously a convenient thing to say to Roosevelt's representative.

² See Hassell, p. 139. Donosti, *op. cit.*, also confirms the importance of Ribbentrop's visit to Rome in March 1940.

XIII

Mussolini declares War

THE period of Italy's intervention in the war in the summer of Germany's triumph might, one would have thought, have been the one period of the smooth working of the Axis. But there was little but irritation and sabotage on both sides except between the Leaders themselves, and even Mussolini was seldom content. From now on Fuhrer and Duce were to meet more frequently.

A change intended to oil the machinery was brought about in the spring of 1940. For months Philip of Hesse had been urging in Rome that Attolico should be recalled, and it seems certain that when Ribbentrop came to Rome in March, and again a week later when Hitler and Mussolini met at the Brenner, the Germans pressed insistently for this;¹ they went so far as to ask for Farinacci or Alfieri,² or Ciano's *chef de cabinet*, Anfuso,³ in Attolico's place. Attolico, who had started life as an ardent anti-Fascist and had then changed rather suddenly,⁴ was not the enemy to the Axis depicted by some of his friends. But he was intelligent and competent. His parting words (in English) to a Wilhelmstrasse friend, presumably Kordt himself, are reported as follows: 'Everybody wants me to say Italy is strong. I think it more honest and personally stronger to say she is weak. Don't you let Italy enter the war too soon—otherwise you will be sorry about it.'⁵ It was not until the end of April that the change was officially announced, and it was the middle of May before Alfieri, the Duce's choice out of the three, was established as the new Italian Ambassador in Berlin. The importance of the change was considerable, for it is not too much to say that Alfieri was fatuous and futile and positively servile in his behaviour to the Nazi chiefs. He tried to stage a ludicrously pompous entry into Berlin and was annoyed to find

¹ In 1937 Mussolini, too, had asked for the removal of Hassell.

² Hitherto Minister of 'Popular Culture'. He was succeeded by Pavolini. Like Attolico, Alfieri could speak no German.

³ Anfuso succeeded Alfieri in Berlin in 1943 as the Neo-Fascist representative.

⁴ F. S. Nitti, *Meditazioni dell' Esilio* (Naples, Edizioni Scientifiche Italiane, 1947).

⁵ Kordt, *op. cit.*

that the wives of his Embassy staff had no uniforms to put on for the occasion. The Germans were willing to put up with nonsense of this kind from Göring but not from a foreigner; as for Alfieri's Embassy colleagues, they despised and deplored him from the start.

It should also be noted that Magistrati, whose wife, Ciano's sister Maria, had once upon a time had a lot to do with the decisive Italo-German *rapprochement*,¹ had been transferred from Berlin in February 1940 to become Minister in Sofia; the Germans made it clear that they were glad to see the last of Ciano's brother-in-law and they specifically vetoed his succession to Attolico. The most notoriously and energetically anti-Nazi figure at the Italian Embassy in Berlin was the Press Attaché, Antinori; he was a cousin of Baroness Braun von Stumm² who had forbidden him to come to her house. It was miraculous that he should have survived so long, and the arrival of Alfieri sealed his doom, though it was not until the Italian declaration of war that the Nazis insisted upon his immediate recall. And although Ciano's behaviour was sometimes vulgar and servile, it is fair to remember that all these people were transferred to good positions (Attolico became Ambassador to the Holy See,³ 'from the devil to holy water' as he said), just as Ciano made efforts on behalf of Schuschnigg in 1938 and the British Ambassador in Belgium in 1940,⁴ efforts which were not likely to improve his stock in Germany.

The whole situation was swiftly reconditioned by the Nazi triumphs in Scandinavia in April and then in May in the Low Countries and France; it was against this tempestuous and terrific background that the drama developed. Towards the end of May Simoni made an analysis of German opinion with regard to Italy's intervention; other witnesses bear him out. The typical Party view shared by a large number of officers was now angrily opposed to Italy's participation in the war. Germany had won without Italy's help, but in this way Italy would lay claims to gains which she had done nothing to deserve. More politically experienced people, among them diplomats and business men, were, according to Simoni, aware that the

¹ See Chapter III, p. 48, above; she died in Oct. 1939.

² See Chapter III, p. 48, above.

³ Attolico died in 1942.

⁴ Simoni, 10 June 1940

war was by no means over and felt that Italy's intervention was a trump to be played later at a time when the German population might have been discouraged. Others, and he thought the most intelligent, were strongly in favour of immediate Italian intervention, since later developments might cool Fascist ardour. It was not generally realized in Germany how ill prepared Italy still was, Italian bluff being clever and fairly successful.

In spite of Hitler's reckless promises and commands for deliveries to Italy, it was habitual during the winter of 1939-40 for all the essential military supplies earmarked for Italy to be requisitioned at the last moment for the Reichswehr. It is possible that Göring was partly responsible for this. It has been recorded that his attitude towards Italy had been unfriendly and reproachful since the signature of the Steel Pact; his mentality was so grotesquely childish that it is not as fantastic as it sounds to attribute his spleen to that Collar of the Annunziata which had gone to Ribbentrop. After the meeting of Hitler and Mussolini on 18 March Goring appeared to facilitate certain deliveries to Italy, and in the end, much against the King of Italy's will, the first birthday of the Italo-German Military Alliance brought Goring his reward. The Italians complained that they observed the Clodius agreements while the Germans still kept much that was promised to Italy for themselves.¹ Certainly the improvement in Italy's equipment during her non-belligerency period seems to have been slight.

There is no doubt that in the Fascist Party and in all jingo and *exalté* Italian circles Hitler's dazzling military successes, and the helplessness of the French and British in the face of them, created a keen desire to plunge blindly into war; it cannot be said that the Germans became more popular in Italy, but the German alliance certainly did. Until the spring of 1940 scarcely any Fascist leader, except Farinacci and Alfieri, was pro-German; now the Mutis and Riccis² and the Buffarini-Guidis³ were all enthusiasm at least for intervention. There was much talk of the dismissal of Ciano. On 10 May his wife, the fiery Edda, the daughter to whom Mussolini was said to listen, went

¹ Simoni, 21 Apr. 1940.

² Renato Ricci had been at the head of the Fascist Youth Organizations since 1925 and became Minister of Corporations in Nov. 1939.

³ Buffarini-Guidi became Under-Secretary for the Interior in Feb. 1943: he was a friend of the Petacci family.



PARTING OF THE DICTATORS AT THE BRENNER, 5 OCTOBER 1940

to the Palazzo Venezia to insist to her father that the country longed for war and would be dishonoured if it remained neutral. Grandi, who had returned from London, as the Duce complained, in far too anglicized a condition, held out against the seductions of the time until about 20 May; then he, too, decided that one must adapt oneself to the new period.¹

There was another element in the situation. For many years many Germans have felt an unshakable affection for England, like that of an admiring youth for an elder and more successful brother who seems indifferent to him. In spite of all Goebbels' efforts, the last war, so long as it lasted, did little to weaken this love. A similar type of Italian felt an almost possessive attachment to France, perhaps more like that of a despised elder brother. He felt that however much Mussolini pretended about Rome, Paris was the true capital of the civilized, which meant more particularly the Latin, world. The collapse of France before what these Italians had always regarded as the savage German hordes was like the collapse, all over again, of the Roman Empire. As each day in May 1940 passed, intervention became a more dastardly thing. Even chauvinist Italians often had some of these feelings towards France, while Britain was something farther away from them. As for the politically conscious anti-Fascists, they had the one consolation that Italy was so ill prepared for war that even in alliance with Germany the Fascist régime was risking its survival. The 'stab in the back' was certainly no worse morally than Germany's far more ruthless destruction of all her small-nation victims, Czechs, Norwegians, Dutch, Belgians—there were more Poles but they were equally helpless—and yet how much more guilty the Italians felt and how strongly they made the world feel their sense of guilt!

An interesting side-light was thrown on Italian opinion in the spring of 1940 by the popularity of the *Osservatore Romano*, which pursued a strongly anti-interventionist policy and in which on 10 April Professor Gonella clearly censured the German invasion of Denmark and Norway. The circulation of the one Italian newspaper which was able to condemn German policy and action increased sensationally. Mussolini naturally objected, but the Pope at first refused to give way, and when the *Osservatore* published the Papal condemnation of the German invasion

¹ Ciano Diary, 20 May 1940.

of Holland and Belgium its circulation beat all records. Thereupon the Fascist Party was mobilized and those who distributed or bought the *Osservatore* were often beaten up very nastily in the next few days, so that Pius XII decided to give way, and after 16 May no political news was published in the organ of the Vatican; as a result its circulation melted away.¹

For Ciano the Germans continued to be the most exasperating allies. Hitler and Ribbentrop had a not unjustified fear of Italian indiscretions; certainly if in defiance of the consultation clause in the Steel Pact they had treated Italy to *faits accomplis* before the outbreak of war, they were not likely to change now. At the beginning of April 1940 the Germans focused attention upon Rumania and suggested to the Hungarians that the Russians were eyeing Bessarabia more actively and that they, the Germans, might need to march across Hungary to occupy the rest of Rumania. Teleki sent a messenger to consult with Rome about this. The news, not unexpected, was nevertheless particularly agitating for Italy from every point of view. Since the Russian pact the Germans had vetoed the slightest modification of the Balkan *status quo*, though it had always been agreed before that Italy should take what she wanted from Yugoslavia² and it had long been evident that she hoped to win the race to Ploesti. Indeed the Italian Embassy in Berlin was tired of inquiries from Rome as to Germany's intentions towards Rumania.

At 2 a.m. on 9 April a message arrived at Ciano's house from Mackensen asking to see Mussolini at 7 a.m. This was to inform him of a German occupation, not of Rumania, but of Denmark and Norway—'the usual letter in the usual style to announce a *coup* which has already taken place'.³ Friction between allies is a commonplace, yet similar behaviour between, say, London and Paris is inconceivable. Göring told Renzetti⁴ at the end of April that the Duce would be given at least a

¹ See C. Cianferra, *The Vatican and the War* (Dutton, 1945). Mr. Cianferra was well informed about Vatican policy.

² Cf., for instance, the Hitler-Ciano talks in the middle of Aug. 1939; Hitler's incitement of Italy against Yugoslavia at that time confirms the suspicion that the Germans were by no means so sure of Russia then as they tried to make the Italians believe.

³ Ciano Diary, 9 Apr. 1940.

⁴ Simoni, 30 Apr. 1940. On this occasion Göring seems to have gone back to Hitler's idea of 23 May 1939, that the Italians should attack the Maginot Line.

fortnight's warning before the German offensive in the West. But on 10 May Mackensen was even more exasperating than the time before, for Ciano was actually his guest to dinner on the 9th. When the Italian left the Mackensens half an hour after midnight his host murmured to him that he might have to disturb him during the night with a message he was expecting from Berlin. Surely enough at 4 a.m. he telephoned to the unfortunate Ciano to say he had just received orders to see the Duce at 5 a.m. precisely, and he then turned up with a bundle of documents which, as Ciano remarked, certainly did not arrive by telephone; they were said to have been in the custody of a courier who had been forbidden to leave his hotel before the appointed time.

During the winter Mussolini had really wished to stop the war, for one thing because his military advisers regarded the 1942 date as almost too soon for Italy to be prepared. As the winter turned into spring Mussolini several times anticipated the intervention date and from the middle of April it had become 1940 itself, but after the harvest was in—three months' breathing-space, Ciano noted on 20 April. From the moment of his invasion of Scandinavia, Hitler suddenly found an astonishing amount of time to write to Mussolini long, theatrical accounts of the heroic exploits of the Germans in Norway with references to the absurd writhings of those ludicrous pygmies, the British and the French. There was a lengthy outburst on 9 April, another on the 10th, and yet two more on 18 April and on 3 May respectively. Each letter suggests some overgrown, rather macabre schoolboy playing with new toys and indeed reminds one forcibly of Marshal Göring playing with his electric trains. There were rumours at the time, and they were current in the Italian Embassy in Berlin, that these letters of Hitler were intended to cool Mussolini's ardour: this was specifically stated about Hitler's letter of 18 April which was brought to Rome by the Prince of Hesse in a special aeroplane in the very best Axis tradition. But it was quite untrue that there was anything restraining about Hitler's letters. On the contrary they were cleverly composed so as to whet Mussolini's appetites and whip him into a frenzy of desire to join in the game. Hitler's letter from hero to hero on 10 April ended with 'He who, like you and me, dares greatly, will always be alone. All the stronger, especially

in these hours, is the thought and the mark of friendship.'

It was after 10 May and the Pope's condemnation of Germany's action that Mussolini felt more aggressive in his isolation and spoke to Ciano of liquidating Papacy and Monarchy together, for the dynasty was making plain its dislike of coming into the war on Germany's side. Hitler's letter which Mackensen was constrained to deliver at 5 a.m. on 10 May had announced that Hitler had crossed his Rubicon (the Führer, too, used the phrase),¹ and after this Hitler poured out exultation in three more long letters, dated 13, 18, and 25 May, to the Duce; nearly every time he thanked Mussolini, as he had after the Anschluss, for his comprehension, and nearly every time the gratified Duce thanked him for finding time to write. On 18 May Hitler announced a breach more than 100 km. long in the Maginot Line; to this Mussolini replied on the following day that 'the Italians', a phrase he used when speaking of himself,² were convinced that their days of non-belligerency would very soon be ended. The times were changed indeed: on 20 May Simoni noted that 'all visas to Polish citizens for entry into Italy—granted generously hitherto—are suspended'. Roosevelt's messages, in which he tried to deter Mussolini, served no purpose but to be passed for inspection to Berlin.

Badoglio³ declares that on 26 May Mussolini very solemnly informed him and Balbo together that he had dispatched a letter to Hitler the day before announcing that Italy would be ready to join in the war any day from 5 June onwards. According to his own account Badoglio protested vehemently, declaring this was national suicide. There is, unfortunately, no confirmation of Badoglio's assertions. What is certain is that Mussolini convened his chiefs of staff to the Palazzo Venezia at 11 a.m. on 29 May and referred incidentally to having read Hitler's letter of the 25th to Badoglio on 28 May. Badoglio, Cavagnari, Pricolo, and Graziani were present. On 31 March, that is between the various conversations in March and the German offensive, Mussolini had drawn up a memorandum to the effect that Italy must sooner or later intervene on Germany's side, but the time indicated for doing so had been the spring of 1941. After the easy conquest of Norway and the subjection

¹ Cf. Sumner Welles on Mussolini, quoted in Chapter XII above.

² Ciano often did the same.

³ *op. cit.*

of Denmark, he said, he had decided upon the beginning of September 1940, but following more recent events still, 'I consider any day good for our entry into the war from 5 June onwards. . . . If we delay a fortnight or a month we shall not improve our position while we shall give Germany the impression of arriving after all the work is done and when the risks are at a minimum, apart from the consideration that it is not our habit to strike at a man who is falling. . . .'¹ The Duce confirmed his military directives as defined on 31 March: to remain on the defensive on land except possibly in the direction of Yugoslavia,² but a vigorous aero-naval war was to be initiated on all the frontiers. The immediate outcome of the meeting on 29 May was the creation of the Italian High Command under Mussolini as Commander-in-Chief, in spite of Victor Emmanuel's unwillingness to make way for the Duce. No protest of any kind is recorded from Badoglio or the others with regard to the decisions taken,³ and the King, who might have made a daring bid for popularity—one which might well have saved the dynasty—merely sulked: at this fateful moment Mussolini did not convene the Fascist Grand Council. It was not mere rhetoric to say that one Italian alone forced Italy into the war in June 1940.

Thus on 30 May the Duce was able to answer Hitler's letter of 25 May with the offer to come in on his side within a week's time; he offered to the Fuhrer to choose the actual day so that they could correlate their military plans. At midday the Italian Embassy in Berlin was warned to prepare for a code message of 'extraordinary importance', and the Embassy staff was filled with gloomy foreboding.⁴ At 5.30 p.m. the message began to come through, at 6.30 the deciphering was complete, but not till midnight was it possible even to arrange for its delivery by Alfieri to the Fuhrer. For this purpose the new Italian Ambassador was flown early the next morning to Hitler's headquarters at Godesberg. Simoni, who accompanied Alfieri, was struck by the contrast between the Berlin atmosphere and that which exuded from Hitler's headquarters. 'All the enthusiasm of

¹ *Hitler e Mussolini: Lettere e Documenti* (Rizzoli, 1946), Document 24.

² There was talk, also, of an immediate Italian offensive in the direction of Djibuti.

³ In the official *verbale* of the meeting, see *Hitler e Mussolini*, pp. 43-7; but of course the record of any protest made may have been deliberately omitted.

⁴ Simoni, 30 May 1940.

Germany', he wrote, 'seems to be concentrated in these thirty or forty people who live in the intimate proximity of the Fuhrer and see nothing beyond their hopes and projects.'¹

Hitler's response, dated 31 May, was delivered by Mackensen to Mussolini on 1 June.² It was a reply of perfect gratification. For obvious reasons the Fuhrer welcomed the appointment of the Duce as Commander-in-Chief and approved the suggestion he had made of a declaration from him to reassure the Balkan countries that Italy's intervention would not disturb their neutrality. Hitler adds that the complete defeat of France will assure the geographical and political domination of the Mediterranean to Italy. As for the day, Hitler asks for a delay of at most three days on account of a plan he had made for destroying the French Air Force which may make fresh dispositions in view of the new threat from Italy. As between 6, 7, and 8 June, Hitler asks for either the 6th or the 8th as the 7th is a Friday, 'a day which is perhaps regarded by many as not suitable for a fortunate beginning (this belief exists among the Germans)'; he is, however, most willing for Mussolini to stick to 5 June if he prefers, and in any event Hitler will guard the secret jealously. His letter includes a modestly expressed query as to whether Mussolini would like to see him.

Thereupon the Duce decided upon 11 June. Mackensen brought him a message on 2 June that Hitler would after all have preferred an immediate Italian declaration of war. It is quite untrue, although it was believed at the time and has been repeated ever since, that Hitler offered any opposition to Mussolini's concrete proposals for his entry into war. The Fuhrer was only a little evasive about the Italian troops Mussolini offered to the German Army in evidence of Italo-German comradeship, but he made a return offer of German mountain-troops.³

The Italian declaration of war was made on Monday, 10 June, and hostilities began on 11 June. As Ciano said, the news surprised no one and 'did not arouse excessive enthusiasm'.⁴ The position of France was so much more tragic by now that Italy's action had become much uglier. The Duce spoke from the

¹ Ibid, 31 May 1940.

² Simoni suggests that it was delayed until 2 June, but Ciano's Diary seems to refute this.

³ See Hitler to Mussolini, 9 June 1940.

⁴ Ciano Diary, 10 June 1940.

balcony but without his usual conviction.¹ In Berlin there was a special edition of the papers to announce that Germany had an ally, but no one bought it.² Within a week France had capitulated. Poor Mussolini! He had really had scarcely a moment's satisfaction over his war, except perhaps the anticipation of it which followed Ribbentrop's visit in March and flowered in the memorandum of 31 March. After that he was in a perpetual state of anxiety lest he should arrive too late, but when at last he had brought Italy to the point of war he was caught in the 'outbreak of peace', as Ciano called it. It was decided that Fuhrer and Duce should meet at Munich on 19 June to discuss the armistice terms to be imposed upon France; on the journey on 18 June Mussolini was uneasy and could not conceal his disappointment from Ciano. It was Hitler who had won the war and would not only have everything to say but would have an incontestable right to say everything this time; in their few days of fighting the performance of the Italian troops had been anything but brilliant; evidently both conviction and equipment were lacking.

At Munich Mussolini and Ciano found Hitler and Ribbentrop miraculously peace-loving and magnanimous³—as usual Ribbentrop's remarks to Ciano were little more than an echo of the Fuhrer's to the Duce; to both Italians Hitler seemed like a successful gambler who is anxious to withdraw from the game with all his gains intact. Thus Mussolini, ironically enough, showed himself more acquisitive. The Italians claimed Nice, Corsica, French Somaliland, and Tunisia with its frontiers 'rectified' at Algeria's expense. They also claimed Malta for Italy, Gibraltar for Spain, and the demilitarization of all British bases in the Mediterranean, while they expressed the desire to acquire an Atlantic outlet in Morocco and to replace Britain in relation to Egypt and the Sudan. The Germans spoke of adding the Belgian Congo and at least a part of Morocco to their pre-1914 Empire. France was to be punished for her 'aggression' and her frontiers determined once for all; the South Tyrolèse would now be sent to Alsace. But primarily Hitler and Ribbentrop were concerned to force Britain to make

¹ Cianferra (op cit) was one of the witnesses.

² Simoni, 10 June 1940.

³ See Ciano Diary and Minute of 19 June. Mussolini had refused to meet Hitler again before Italy had gone to war.

peace—Ribbentrop told Ciano feelers were operating through Swedish channels. In order to induce the British to negotiate it was necessary to intensify the isolation of Britain and precisely this required at least a show of magnanimity towards France to prevent the French Government from leaving France for North Africa and above all to prevent the French fleet from going over to Britain. It was for this reason that armistice terms were agreed to according to which both Germany and Italy promised France to make no use of her fleet in the war, though Italy had originally wished to claim it. At Munich Mussolini intended to occupy the left bank of the Rhône, Corsica, Tunisia, and Djibuti, but on 22 June, after seeing the terms of the Franco-German armistice signed on 21 June, he decided to impose nothing but the demilitarization of a fifty-kilometre strip along the French side of the frontiers. The Franco-Italian armistice was signed on 25 June.

Hitler was immensely affable about all this, expressing his appreciation of all that Mussolini had done. Against the Duce's will he insisted upon two separate armistices, for he would not be cheated of the signature at Compiègne where the humiliation of the French must be an unadulteratedly German action,¹ but he sent a message to Mussolini on 22 June saying: 'Whatever you may decide [about the areas Italian troops are to occupy] France has been informed that the armistice will come into force only if you arrive at the same result.'² It suited him admirably that his troops in France should reach the Spanish frontier on 27 June to menace Africa across Franco's Spain,³ and it suited him admirably to have Italy at war with Great Britain in order at this moment to threaten the vital communications of the British Empire in a way which, without the Italian Navy, he could never have done.

The armistice negotiations intensified the difficulties between the Axis partners over France. Before everything Mussolini hoped to inherit the French Empire and he had stampeded Italy into the war in order not to miss the chance of doing so.

¹ See Shirer, *A Berlin Diary* (Hamish Hamilton, 1941). DeWitt C. Poole, op. cit., wrote: 'At Compiègne . . . Hitler emerged triumphant not only over Germany's hereditary foe but hardly less so over his own generals.'

² Hitler to Mussolini, 22 June 1940

³ See Lord Templewood's *Ambassador on Special Mission* (Collins, 1946).

Hitler, as far as one can judge, for all his big phrases about Italy and the Mediterranean, cared very little about the fulfilment of the Duce's aspirations. He intended to beat Britain and destroy Russia; he was only not quite sure which task to undertake first. It has been seen that he spoke peaceful language to Mussolini at Munich on 19 June; this meant that he was contemplating peace with Britain in order to march against the U.S.S.R.,¹ a war in which Italy had no conceivable interest to become involved. In order to induce the British to negotiate it was desirable to have shown oneself not ungenerous to France and to have enrolled France on the side of the Axis to face Britain with a solidly pro-Axis Continent; this could be attempted by cheating Italy, who had made herself ridiculous by declaring war so late, of the naval and imperial gains upon which she had been led to count. The day before the dictators met at Munich in June, a certain General de Gaulle had raised the banner of a free France on the British soil he had successfully reached. In the end he became the central figure in all Europe's resistance to tyranny. Hitler had quite enough intuition to scent the danger. If France and Europe should respond to de Gaulle, Britain was much more likely to fight; worse still, the war might be a long war, and the longer it lasted the less likely was Germany to remain victorious.

Thus over France the interests of Hitler and of Mussolini appeared to be diametrically opposed. On 5 July the Duce grumbled to Ciano that France was edging her way into the Axis camp—'he is afraid that this may lead to our being defrauded of our booty'. Two days later, on Sunday, 7 July, Ciano arrived in Berlin again and tried to urge the Italian view over this upon Hitler, who was very accommodating and said that of course France must be made to pay dearly for her faults. The Italian Foreign Minister produced larger and more specific demands than those made by Mussolini three weeks earlier at Munich. They included Italian domination of the Middle East and the Italian occupation of Aden, Perim, and Socotra. Tunisia (plus important Algerian mines) was requested only as an Italian Protectorate. The Fuhrer agreed in principle with regard to the Mediterranean and the Red Sea,² but as he did not intend to make a formal peace with France the discussion

¹ Jodl bore witness to this.

² Ciano Minute, 7 July 1940.

remained conveniently academic. Ciano spent about two hours with Hitler that Sunday morning. Afterwards came a marvellous lunch. 'A profusion of flowers and wines. The most famous French cellars must have contributed a great deal, *a grande gioia dei grossi ufficiali delle S.S.* . . .'¹

Both Hitler and Ribbentrop were far less sanguine than they had been on 19 June about ending the war, but they seemed mysterious and uncertain, waiting, they said, for the plans for the invasion of Britain to be worked out. For the moment the idea of attacking Russia had been abandoned.² It was propagandistically necessary, however, to make another public peace gesture towards London; in spite of all the victories it was still particularly important from the point of view of German morale. On 19 July Ciano was in Berlin once more for this performance, a savage speech—for all the grief for future sacrifices he expressed—from the Führer before the Reichstag, upon which occasion Hitler promoted all his victorious generals to be Field-M Marshals and Goring a *Reichsmarschall*. Shirer thought Hitler in brilliant form that day. 'Count Ciano', he added, 'who was rushed up from Rome to put the seal of Axis authority on Hitler's "offer" of peace to Britain, was the clown of the evening. . . . Without the slightest pretext he would hop to his heels and expand in a salute. Could not help noticing how high-strung Ciano is. He kept working his *jaws*. And he was not chewing gum.'³ Ciano's countryman, Simoni, who had met him for the first time this July, wrote of him (on 10 July): 'He seems intelligent but frivolous, capricious, without character and spoilt by a circle of weak courtiers who surround him and flatter him and satisfy his every whim with repulsive subservience. . . .' On 20 July, when it was clear from their Press that the British had no intention of giving way, Hitler received Ciano once again. It would be war to the death with Britain; Hitler would suggest another meeting with Mussolini at the Brenner as soon as military plans had matured. There was no talk now of when the war would be over. It might, indeed, last for some time. Mussolini had tormented himself because he thought he had joined in the *Blitzkrieg* too late: in reality he had entered the Six Years War a great deal too soon.

¹ Simoni, *op. cit.*, 7 July 1940, = 'to the complete satisfaction of those great S.S. officers. . . .'
² Ciano Minute, 7 July 1940.
³ Shirer, *op. cit.*

The Attack upon Greece

STALIN, like Mussolini or indeed like any of the rest of us, had not expected France to have such feet of clay, but he drew the consequences with promptitude. The day the Germans entered Paris, the Russians occupied the only important towns in Lithuania, the capital Kaunas, and Vilna, which had been recently re-acquired when Poland collapsed, after nineteen years' argument about it. By 21 July Esthonia and Latvia had been swallowed up by Russia too. On 27 June, the day the Germans reached the frontiers of Spain, the U.S.S.R. presented an ultimatum to Rumania demanding in decently polite terms the cession of Bessarabia and a northern portion of the Bukovina. Thus the frontiers of Tsarist Russia were to be very nearly restored.

Although it had been agreed between Berlin and Moscow that the Russian zone included the Baltic States¹ and Rumania east of the Pruth, the Soviet ultimatum to Bucharest was like an incendiary bomb dropped into Balkan politics. Mussolini, it has been seen, was watching the Rumanian oil-fields nervously, hoping to reach them before Hitler and determined to invade Yugoslavia if a Balkan landslide were imminent. The Fuhrer himself did some lip-biting, and there are indications, so early as this June of 1940, of his first project for turning on the U.S.S.R. Though Rumania was not mentioned between them on 7 July, Ciano noted that Hitler's attitude towards the U.S.S.R. had changed. In fact, at this stage, just when the Italians were celebrating their entry into the war by trying to arrange a superficial rapprochement with Russia, Hitler reversed his policy once again. From this time on the German forces on the eastern frontiers were steadily augmented.

At all events the Rumanian question had become critical. Rumania was a Versailles Successor State and her 1919 frontiers

¹ That is to say Esthonia and Latvia, but not Lithuania, until the signature of the Secret Supplementary Protocol of 28 September 1939, when Germany accepted the province of Lublin and most of that of Warsaw, in exchange for Lithuania.

had been drawn a little generously. With Poland she had accepted a British guarantee in 1939 and was for this reason, too, in bad odour with the Axis; she was advised both in Berlin and Rome to yield obediently to the Russian demands which were inevitably followed by those of Bulgaria and Hungary. The Dobruja frontier with Bulgaria was relatively simple to redraw, but the infinitely complicated question of Transylvania had poisoned the relations between Rumania and Hungary since the days when Maniu led the Rumanian opposition in the Hungarian Parliament before 1914.

For years now Mussolini had been the foremost champion of Magyar revisionism which claimed the whole of Transylvania, in spite of a considerably larger and more rapidly increasing Rumanian than Magyar population there, for Hungary. Hitler, on the other hand, had until November 1938 preferred Rumania, partly because the German minorities there were better treated than the Magyar minorities or the Germans in Hungary, and because the Transylvanian Saxons were definitely opposed to revision in Hungary's favour; but Hitler also felt sympathy for Rumania on account of Codreanu. Zelea Codreanu was the leader of the Rumanian Fascists or Iron Guard, and although he had founded his movement independently of National Socialism in Germany, he had early established contact with it. Further, he was said to be blessed with German blood on his mother's side, and if the Iron Guard had a merciless programme with regard to the minorities in Rumania, Germans included, Hitler seems, nevertheless, to have felt a vague parentalism towards Codreanu. King Carol of Rumania, who displayed the same kind of courage in the face of Nazi Germany as Prince Starhemberg, was the one lesser European ruler who followed up a visit to Berchtesgaden—in November 1938—with an act of defiance to Hitler. Codreanu was already under arrest, but the King was scarcely back from his journey (which had taken him to London and Brussels beforehand) when the Iron Guard leader was shot by his guards 'while trying to escape'. Hitler knew that formula too well to hesitate as to its meaning; he for one was certain that the King had ordered the 'liquidation' of Codreanu. It is interesting to find in Ciano's Diary¹ that in August 1939 the Fuhrer spoke to Ciano with great bitterness

¹ 17 Sept. 1939

of this incident—it was one of the things Hitler would never forget. Thus from November 1938 until the abdication of Carol, although Hitler obviously disliked Hungary and its aristocratic flavour with all his Austrian *petit-bourgeois* heart, Fuhrer and Duce concurred in frowning upon Rumania; though it had veered right away from Titulescu and even lip-service to democracy it was a relic of the Little Entente, and whereas Stoyadinović had been a false friend to Czechoslovakia in its hour of need, King Carol had done what he could to be loyal to Prague.

Few words need be wasted upon Rumanian policy at the moment of the Russian ultimatum, for it consisted of nothing but a few unheard cries for help. Since the outbreak of war the Hungarians had tried to play everything on the Italian card, and there is no doubt that Teleki,¹ as Prime Minister, was profoundly aware of the dangers of National Socialism, especially for Hungary. The Magyars were thankful that Italy kept out of the war during the winter of 1939–40, and they appeared to be seriously considering the elevation of a prince of the House of Savoy to the throne of St. Stephen, left vacant since the débâcle of the last of the Habsburgs in 1918. At one point when Germany was demanding to march across Hungary,² the Magyar leaders had nursed the illusion that Italy might back them—should they resist—with something of the vigour of July 1934.

With the Russians marching into Bessarabia at the end of June 1940, the Hungarians could scarcely contain their Transylvanian appetites a moment longer. Hitler complained of their impatience to Ciano at the interview in Berlin on 7 July and summoned them to a tripartite confabulation at Munich three days later; there the Magyar leaders were given permission to attack Rumania at their own risk, but both Germany and Italy made it clear that their hands were too full for them to become in any way involved. From Munich the Italian and Hungarian parties were motored to Salzburg where their trains were waiting: witnesses agree that the demonstrations at Salzburg were fervid—‘the Austrians’, observed Simoni, ‘always take the lead in manifestations of Nazi enthusiasm’.³

On 15 July Hitler wrote an exceedingly unpleasant letter to

¹ Himself a Transylvanian.

² Ciano Diary, 9 Sept. 1939.

³ Simoni, 10 July 1940.

King Carol around whom disaster was piling up as it had around President Beneš two years before. Like some scolding school prefect Hitler told him that he had better give up trying to be clever; instead he should act according to principle, even if he found that difficult, and abandon the attempt to play off Bulgaria against Hungary. The Fuhrer expressed solidarity with the Duce and declared that Rumania must make up her mind to lose territory. He added the extraordinary statement that Germany was indifferent to Rumania's fate (owing to her recognition of Russia's claims) and was prepared, if necessary, to do without Rumanian oil. Mussolini immediately expressed his acquiescence to Mackensen and repeated it in a letter to Hitler dated 17 July in which he also gratefully acknowledged a recent gift from the Fuhrer of two armoured railway carriages.¹ It is clear that the Fuhrer's assertion of indifference was made for Russian consumption. The situation had become so acute that Hitler had begun to fear that Russia might move still farther west the moment he himself was fully engaged in the invasion of Britain. He abandoned the idea of attacking Russia for the moment, but he was all the more determined to settle his accounts with her as soon as the British were beaten.² Until then he was more intent than ever upon preventing any kind of explosion in the 'Danubian-Balkan sector'. Once again he insisted on this in his conversation with Ciano on 20 July—it was the task of the Axis Powers to induce moderation and caution in both Rumania and Hungary; he approved of Bulgaria's claims, but wished to avoid any part in the negotiations, which should be directly engaged between the parties concerned.

The representatives of Rumania were sent for now, to the chagrin of Budapest; it was clear that they would try to buy Axis patronage and protection. They went first to Salzburg on 23 July to be scolded, then to Rome on 27 July; according to Ciano, Mussolini had received the German minutes of their meeting in time to repeat what Hitler had said. But all these admonitions from the Supermen did not bear fruit; when the

¹ During Mussolini's journey back from Munich on 19 June his train had been attacked by enemy aircraft. Hitler decided this precious life must be better protected in future.

² On 29 July at the Berghof—see DeWitt C. Poole, *op. cit.*—Hitler spoke to his generals of attacking Russia, but there is then no further talk of doing so until the end of the year.

Hungarians and Rumanians met on their own at Turnu Severin in the middle of August they could still not agree. At last on 26 August Ribbentrop lost patience and summoned everyone to Vienna for another Vienna award. On his way, *pour ainsi dire*, Ciano was invited to lunch with the Fuhrer at Berchtesgaden on 28 August. With regard to the question under consideration Hitler expressed irritation against the incontinent behaviour of the Magyars, and on the following day Prince Eugene's palace of the Belvedere was once again desecrated by the political puerility of Ribbentrop and Ciano. Without any serious study of the problem they drew their pens across Transylvania in utter disregard for its historical frontiers, with no more constructive conception than the German formula that Hungary should be given two-thirds of her claim. When Manoilescu, the Rumanian Foreign Minister, saw the new frontier on the map, he performed what may have been the only honest action of his life—he fainted. Rumania seemed to be disintegrating completely and a few days later King Carol abdicated in favour of his son. With the elimination of Carol the Germans breathed again, Simoni noted.¹ The good Nazi-Fascist General Antonescu now became Rumanian Prime Minister and dictator; he got on well with Hitler who frequently praised his 'fanatical nationalism', and while his power lasted—until August 1944—he lined Rumania up as an obedient Axis satellite. The Hungarians, on the other hand, maintained a show of independence until March 1944.

Over few questions did the Nazis treat the Fascists worse than over that of Yugoslavia. When Germany was devouring Czechoslovakia one year or Poland the next, she had always made rough gestures towards Yugoslavia, another of the heterogeneous 'creations of Versailles'. In August 1939 morsels of Yugoslavia had almost been pressed into Mussolini's watering mouth. From the time of the German-Soviet Pact, however, every German-Italian talk was loaded with elaborate explanations to the effect that, of course, the Yugoslav problem should be solved in an Italian sense, only not yet. On 7 July 1940 it was agreed that Yugoslavia had no claim to exist as a member of the Axis New Order, but Hitler insisted that Italy was on no account to move against her, not only because Russia might come to her

¹ 6 Sept. 1940.

help, but also because a common Anglo-Russian interest might be created. Ribbentrop missed no opportunity of telling the Italians how much the Yugoslavs hated them.¹

On 17 August 1940 Ribbentrop sent for Alfieri to rap him over the knuckles. Once again he repeated the monotonous refrain of 'Hands off Yugoslavia', complaining that he had had information from his Military Attaché in Rome that the Italian General Staff were working out an anti-Yugoslav plan without German 'permission'. Ribbentrop also specifically objected to the improvement in Italo-Russian relations which Mussolini had initiated in the spirit of Axis solidarity or in other words in subservience to Hitler. An understanding with Italy, the German Foreign Minister now declared, might impel Russia in the direction of the Straits and this in its turn might serve Britain. Thirdly, Ribbentrop stated that an Italian move against Greece would be most unwelcome. 'È un alto là completo su tutta la linea', is the entry in Ciano's Diary.²

When Mussolini declared war against Britain and France from the notorious balcony of the Palazzo Venezia, by pre-arrangement with Hitler he added: 'I solemnly declare that Italy does not intend to draw the peoples who live along her land or sea frontiers into war. Let Switzerland, Yugoslavia, Greece, Turkey, Egypt take note of these words of mine. It depends upon these countries and upon them alone whether they remain at peace or not.' In October, when he ordered the generals to attack Greece, Mussolini asserted that he had been thinking out this plan since before June. The truth is that Ciano and his friend Jacomoni, the Governor of Albania, were inordinately pleased with themselves over their easy descent upon that country which had brought Italian troops to the frontiers of Greece, and they often thought that it would be exhilarating to play another round of this game which might lead to the subjugation or partition of Greece itself—indeed their attitude was not entirely unlike that of Ribbentrop towards Poland in 1939. But there is no trace of any planning of such action before August 1940, and no trace at all of serious planning.³

¹ Simoni, 25 July 1940.

² Approximately = 'This is a halt called all along the line' (but the Italian is more expressive of abruptness).

³ It is interesting that Stalin asked Ribbentrop about Italy's intentions towards Greece in August 1939, see *Nazi-Soviet Relations*, p. 73.



While Greek popular sentiment was pro-British and anti-Italian, it should not be forgotten that the Metaxas régime aspired to totalitarianism and Metaxas himself was an enthusiastic Germanophile. The naval war was bound to create friction between Italy and Greece, more particularly on account of the Dodecanese, islands of strategic importance in the eastern Mediterranean owned by Italy but inhabited by Greeks. Into the bargain the Military Governor of Rhodes was the old Fascist Quadrumvir, De Vecchi, whose *bête noire* was Greece,¹ so that he blamed 'Greek treachery' for all his own failures. It is true that this is the account given of De Vecchi by the last pre-war Italian Minister in Athens whom De Vecchi accused of being no more than the servant of Greece. The Minister in question was Emanuele Grazzi, a brother of Umberto Grazzi who was Italian Chargé d'Affaires in Vienna when Dollfuss was murdered.² Though he belongs to the large company of Italian diplomats who have protested almost too much against the policy of the régime they served while it lasted, it is certain that he did what he could to send accurate dispatches from Athens to Rome. He reported that the Greek Government was extremely correct because it was particularly anxious to avoid a conflict with Italy, but he also made clear that the Greeks would resist Italian aggression with all their might. Ciano, however, did not want to receive information of such accuracy, and if he read it at all he ignored it, and, further, kept Grazzi completely in the dark as to Fascist intentions.

The fact was that at the beginning of August 1940 Mussolini was plunged once again into a fever of anxiety lest, as Ciano said, peace might break out, finding him with nothing but Menton in hand. Not only was Hitler not proceeding against Britain in spite of the extraordinary confidence of his Nazi entourage, not only was the German excuse that the weather was too bad wearing thin, but the Italians had again heard disconcerting rumours that Anglo-German negotiations were in process via Sweden. If the Germans did make peace with the British, it seemed likely that Italy's African claims against France would simply be forgotten, so that the Duce began to

¹ See E. Grazzi, *Il Principio della Fine* (Faro, 1946).

² See Chapter II above.

speak of action against Yugoslavia or Greece in September.¹ Ciano preferred aggression against Greece, and by the middle of August everything—except the Italian armed forces—was ready; a nice Greek-Albanian frontier incident had been concocted and Greece was to pay for it with Ciamuria and Corfu. Metaxas, however, appealed to Berlin, and this led to the scolding which Ribbentrop administered to Alfieri on 17 August. The Italians gave way obediently in a prompt telegram from Ciano, though Mussolini could not refrain from complaining a great deal against Greece and Yugoslavia in a letter delivered to Hitler on 27 August; in it he declared that both these countries had already mobilized almost completely.²

Every sign indicates that Hitler's anxiety about Russia was growing. This was one reason for the summons to Vienna for a settlement to be dictated to Hungary and Rumania. After seeing Hitler on 28 August, Ciano sent a telegram to Mussolini from Vienna the next day, one paragraph of which ran as follows:

'I should particularly emphasize that both from Hitler's as from Ribbentrop's statements a marked distrust is revealed of Russia, which they say is ready to exploit possible complications to the uttermost, and to advance with the complicity of Bulgaria and Yugoslavia "as far as the Straits, the Aegean, and even the Adriatic".'

The reference to the Adriatic was inserted expressly to alarm the Italians, for it does not appear in papers for German consumption only.

The second Belvedere Award was, however, a provocation rather than a sop to Russia, since the new frontiers were guaranteed by the two Axis Powers, and the Russians inquired curtly against whom this guarantee might be considered necessary.³ It rapidly became clear that Antonescu's Rumania was to be an Axis preserve. Genuine resistance (which sometimes took pro-British forms) to the establishment of the new Rumanian frontiers was harshly suppressed and Codreanu's successor,

¹ See Ciano Diary, 6 Aug. 1940, where Ciano adds that he does not think Hitler 'will allow' any disturbance of the Balkan *status quo*.

² Mussolini began to write this letter on 23 Aug. There are several drafts of it extant but the variations are inessential.

³ Simoni on 25 July 1940 reports Ribbentrop as saying a guarantee could not be given because it would lead to trouble with Russia.

Horia Sima, became Deputy Premier, though it was not until October that Antonescu himself publicly appeared in a green Iron Guard shirt. More interesting still, on 11 September 'several hundred S.S. men in uniform were reported to have arrived at Galatz, to help in the repatriation of the Germans from Bessarabia',¹ and German experts of all kinds now poured into Rumania; it was explained that the Reichswehr officers had kindly responded to an appeal from General Antonescu to reorganize the Army.

On 13 September Ribbentrop telephoned to Ciano, and, as usual, invited himself to Rome; this time he gave the Palazzo Chigi nearly a week's notice, but he seems to have divulged nothing more by telephone than that he wished to discuss Russia and America. He arrived on 19 September, and must have brought a letter from the Fuhrer to the Duce dated 17 September which was the day the invasion of Britain was 'postponed indefinitely'.² The letter, as usual, contained a mass of military detail, this time about the security of Germany's frontiers, especially those to the east. This was particularly necessary, Hitler wrote, because of the uncertainty of the Rumanian situation and the need to be prepared for every kind of eventuality and intrigue. For the first time he admitted to Mussolini the impossibility of winning the war that autumn and referred to the unfortunate fact that 'we are not the rulers of the seas'. Finally, Hitler concluded, Japan remained the best ally of the Axis in the East as a bastion against the United States.

Ribbentrop proceeded to explain to Mussolini and Ciano that the continued resistance of Britain could only be explained by her hope of American and Russian intervention, and in order to shatter this hope he drew out of his hat a familiar rabbit of his, a military alliance with Japan. "This was to 'paralyse' America by strengthening the isolationists against Roosevelt before the Presidential Election, and he expressed confidence that it would paralyse Russia at the same time."³ So off Ciano had to go to Berlin once more to take his part in the realization of Ribbentrop's belated dream, the German-Italian-Japanese Tripartite Pact signed at the Neue Reichskanzlei on 27 September 1940.

¹ *Bulletin of International Affairs*, vol. xvii, No 19, 21 Sept. 1940, p. 1257.

² *Fuhrer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1940.

³ Ciano Minute, 19 Sept. 1940.

The text of the most important article (III) of the new pact ran as follows: 'Germany, Italy, and Japan undertake to assist one another with all political, economic, and military means if one of the high contracting parties should be attacked by a Power not at present involved in the European war or in the Sino-Japanese conflict.' Article V added that 'the aforesaid terms do not in any way affect the political status which exists at present between each of the three contracting parties and Soviet Russia', in other words they were aimed against the United States.

On 27 September Shirer noted in Berlin:

'The bally-hoo to-day has already been terrific, pushing all other news completely off the front page. The German people are told that the Pact is of world-shaking importance and will shortly bring final "world peace". The ceremony of signing . . . was carried through with typical Axis talent for the theatrical. In the first place the surprise of the event itself. Then the showy setting. When Ribbentrop, Ciano, and Japanese Ambassador M. Kurusu, a bewildered little man, entered the gala hall of the Chancellery, Klieg lights blazed away as the scene was recorded for history. Brightly coloured uniforms all over the place. The entire staffs of the Italian and Japanese embassies present. (The Russian Ambassador was invited, but replied he would be out of town this noon.) The three men sit themselves at a gilded table. Ribbentrop rises and motions one of his slaves, Dr. Schmidt, to read the text of the Pact. Then they sign while the cameras grind away. Then comes the climactic moment, or so the Nazis think. Three loud knocks on the giant door are heard. There is a tense hush in the great hall. The Japanese hold their breath. The door swings slowly open and in strides Hitler. Ribbentrop bobs up and formally notifies him that the pact has been signed. The Great Khan nods approvingly but does not deign to speak. Hitler majestically takes a seat in the middle of the table, while the two Foreign Ministers and the Japanese Ambassador scramble for chairs. When they have got adjusted, they pop up, one after another and deliver prepared addresses which the radio broadcasts round the world.'¹

Simoni gives a similar account; he notices that during these addresses Hitler's eyes strayed two or three times to Ciano's crooked little legs.²

~~When Hitler~~ When Hitler received Ciano this time he told him that the in-

¹ Shirer, *op. cit.*

² Simoni, 27 Sept. 1940.

vasion of Britain had been given up¹ and he spoke in terms of the inevitable continuation of the war; he asked to meet Mussolini at the Brenner on 4 October to discuss Spain. Ciano noted of Hitler and Ribbentrop this time that 'con noi sono di una gentilezza impeccabile',² for they felt in greater need of their allies. The atmosphere in Berlin was gloomy, not only because the end was no longer even said to be in sight, but also because the public was feeling the first strain—before becoming more hardened—of the R.A.F. raids which were robbing the capital of a great deal of sleep. Shirer gives an excellent account of the bloodthirsty enthusiasm of the nurses to whom Hitler made his *Winterhilfe* speech on 4 September, but the enthusiasm was patently hysterical. Just about this time a squadron of Italian planes, after much insistence from the Germans after all, had at last arrived on the coast of Belgium to help raid Britain, but Simoni noted that the Berliners only thought it depressing to have to call in Italian help.³ The Tripartite Pact had not dissipated their pessimism: when he paid a brief visit to Milan and Rome at about this time he felt the Italian mood to be rather callous than gloomy for the people did not care about Mussolini's war.

If Ciano is to be believed Hitler actually agreed with him on 7 July that 'England may occupy the Ionian Islands to transform them into anti-Italian bases, and he declared himself definitely in favour of action on our part to forestall an English move of the kind'.⁴ Over two months later, when Ribbentrop reached Rome on 19 September⁵ radiant with the certain solution he brought with him of the problem of quick victory, he seems, according to Ciano's Minute of the conversation, to have been scarcely less indiscreet. As exclusively Italian interests were concerned in Greece and Yugoslavia, he said, it was for Italy alone to choose how these questions should be settled. The chief effort was to be made against Britain, 'but he confirms that Yugoslavia and Greece are two zones of Italian interest

¹ *Niente sbarco* was what Ciano noted. See Diary, 27-8 Sept 1940.

² Ibid.

³ Simoni, 28 Aug. 1940 and 1 Oct. 1940.

⁴ Ciano Minute, 7 July 1940. In the Minute of a German naval conference held on 4 Nov. 1940, it is stated: 'On no occasion was authorization for such an independent action given to the Duce by the Fuhrer.' *Fuhrer Conferences*, 1940, p. 112.

⁵ The Italians had started a clandestine Greek wireless station the day before.

in which Italy can adopt whatever policy she chooses with Germany's full support'.¹ Germany only reserved the district around Maribor for herself, an area which had been part of Styria (not even of Slovenia) in old Austria; the reference to Maribor made Germany's acquiescence seem concrete. To all this the Duce had replied that Greece was for Italy what Norway had been for Germany prior to April, and it was therefore essential for Italy to proceed with the liquidation of the Hellenic State. In spite of his scene with Alfieri on 17 August, it does not appear that Ribbentrop objected nor yet that the subject was mentioned when Hitler and Mussolini met at the Brenner on 4 October. In the next few days, especially on 7 and 8 October, so many German troops arrived in Rumania, which had not been mentioned either, that it had to be admitted that the Germans had occupied that country and its oil-fields—solely by invitation. This time it is particularly easy to understand Mussolini's indignation. He tried to be invited, too, and a few Italian Air Force officers arrived in Bucharest on 14 October. It was apparently the occupation of Rumania which determined the Duce to try to 'spring' the invasion of Greece upon Hitler; he had already given unmistakable evidence of his intention to make the attempt before the autumn should be gone.

If Hitler had absolutely no grounds for complaint in the matter of Mussolini's attack upon Greece, it was stage-managed with a servile imitation of German brutality-cum-falsity at the expense of the Greeks. The Duce held a meeting with Ciano, Jacomoni, and his military chiefs at the Palazzo Venezia on 15 October when the action was decided and Ciano promised to provide a provocative incident which would require the punishment of the Greeks. Ciano also guaranteed that only a thin top layer of Greek plutocrats was Anglophile, the people as a whole being completely indifferent, and it was hastily presumed that most of the Greek generals had been bought. The Greeks had in fact prepared to be attacked in August, but later they believed, as Ribbentrop had assured Athens,² that Berlin would hold back the Italians. A gala performance of *Madame Butterfly* to inaugurate the new opera-house at Athens

¹ Ciano Minute, 19 Sept. 1940.

² Simoni, 24 Aug 1940. 'Ribbentrop . . . ha dato, senza consultarci, ampie assicurazioni a questo Ministro Ellenico. . . .'

was fixed for 25 October to mark at least a cultural Italo-Greek *rapprochement*, and the Greek Government invited Puccini's only son and his wife as official guests. The Puccinis arrived in Athens by train on 24 October, having been urged by the Italian Minister, Pavolini, not to cancel their journey. About a week before this the journalist, Curzio Malaparte,¹ arrived on behalf of the *Corriere della Sera*; he informed the Italian Minister that he had brought him the following message from Ciano: 'Tell Grazzi that he can write what he likes but I shall make war on Greece just the same.' While Grazzi was giving a big reception on 26 October by way of returning the hospitality offered to the Puccinis, the Italian ultimatum to Greece was being deciphered by his staff: when his guests went home at 5 in the morning of 27 October it was ready for the Minister to read. He was to wake up Metaxas, who was over seventy and had had a stroke, in the middle of the following night to give him three hours' notice of the Italian invasion timed for 6 a.m. on 28 October. The unhappy Grazzi, sitting in Metaxas's parlour at the fateful moment, could not help noticing that it was furnished with just about the same suburban taste as that of Mussolini's wife at the Villa Torlonia.

Late on 19 October Mussolini, having made his dispositions on 15 October, wrote a long letter to Hitler from Rocca delle Caminate. It was largely concerned with the equally burning question of France, but it then passed on to the subject of Greece. 'With regard to Greece I have decided to put an end to the delays and to strike very soon', since Greece remains one of Britain's continental bases, just like Turkey, Portugal, and Switzerland. With the Germans in Rumania, writes Mussolini, the Turks will probably not move, and Italy will synchronize a move against Greece with a further push towards Egypt. On the following day, Sunday, 20 October, Bismarck, who was Counsellor at the German Embassy, told Ciano in Rome that Hitler would be in occupied France towards the end of the week in order to meet Franco and the leaders of Vichy France. On Tuesday the 22nd, the day on which Hitler met Laval, the Duce returned to Rome and showed his draft letter to Ciano; there is no evidence that he altered it as the result of Bismarck's message. It arrived in Berlin marked *urgentissima* by special

¹ Author of *Technique of a Coup d'État* quoted in Chapter I above.

messenger on Thursday, 24 October.¹ The gist of this letter was conveyed to Hitler, by the German Foreign Office, at Yvoire on his return from Montoire late the same evening. Ribbentrop immediately telephoned from France to Rome to suggest that Hitler should return to Berlin via northern Italy in order to report to the Duce on Pétain and Franco. In Munich the Fuhrer found an invitation from Mussolini to his favourite city, Florence. It had always been presumed that the Duce timed his letter to miss Hitler in Berlin,² but there is no proof of this, for Hitler had left Berlin sooner than Bismarck had indicated—indeed he had already left when Bismarck saw Ciano.³ When the Fuhrer arrived in Florence on Monday, 28 October, the Duce had only managed to surprise him in that the attack upon Grèce had begun without Hitler's knowledge of the chosen date. But the Fuhrer had had a good three days' official notice that the invasion was about to take place, and when he reached Florence he knew that it had. 'Si attacca in Albania e si parla a Firenze' was the entry in Ciano's Diary.

¹ Simoni, 24 Oct. 1940.

² I cannot agree with the note by Professor Klibansky on the Italian invasion of Greece in *Mussolini's Memoirs* (Contact, 1949).

³ See E Kordt, *op. cit.* As a senior Wilhelmstrasse official he was in a position to be accurately informed about facts like these, Donost, *op. cit.*, provides some confirmation. Kordt says that Hitler left Berlin by special train at 5 a.m. on 20 October and that Anfuso had already told Bismarck that Greece would be attacked.

The Axis and Franco

WHEN Hitler came to Florence on 28 October 1940 he had come to give Mussolini his directives for the prosecution of the Mediterranean war. The conquest of France and the intervention of Italy had transformed the war into something extra-European; the Führer thought in terms of continents now, and Africa had become his key to everything, whether in strategy or economics.¹ He thought that he had frightened the United States and diverted the U.S.S.R., and he had decided to seize Gibraltar and Suez without further delay by sending German detachments, in the 'corset' role they had played to the Austro-Hungarian armies in the previous war, to brace up the Spaniards and Italians.

It has been seen that the question of France brought German and Italian interests, both with regard to an ultimate settlement and particularly with regard to the prosecution of the war, into sharp conflict. There was not only the matter of the French fleet, but also that of metropolitan France and the French Empire in Africa. Hitler wished to have France on his side, a matter of no importance to Mussolini who persistently asserted that Vichy was in league with de Gaulle.² In order to have France on his side apparently by her own choice, Hitler tolerated the Vichy Government in the unoccupied zone; he hoped that the French colonies, if they were not attacked by the Axis forces, would continue to pay allegiance to Vichy and thus indirectly to himself; for this reason he opposed Mussolini's plans to take over the French North African ports. Should the French colonies rebel, he regarded it as essential, as he had written to Mussolini on 17 September, to control Spain as the bridge to Africa.

Guderian³ apparently thought that Hitler should have

¹ Cf. Hitler's and Ribbentrop's remarks to Molotov about Africa on 12-13 Nov. 1940 in *Nazi-Soviet Relations*, pp. 221, 231.

² See Mussolini to Hitler, 19 Oct. 1940, quoted below and elsewhere. Also Hitler's interview with Molotov, 13 Nov. 1940, where he enumerates France as an Axis Power (*Nazi-Soviet Relations*)

³ See DeWitt C. Poole, *op. cit.*

crashed straight on in best steam-roller fashion right across France and her possessions. Certainly his attempt to be more subtle cost him much anxiety. At a conference with Raeder and Keitel¹ on 6 September it was admitted that

'In the French possessions in Equatorial Africa there is an open break with Pétain's Government and a swing over to General de Gaulle. There is danger that unrest and revolt might spread to the French West African colonies. The economic situation in the colonies, particularly as regards foodstuffs, is used by Britain as a means of exerting pressure. An agreement between the colonies and Britain, and revolt against France, would jeopardize our own chances of controlling the African area; the danger exists that strategically important West African ports might be used for British convoy activities and that we might lose a most valuable source of supplies for Europe. . . .'

The appeasement of France was to be combined with the exclusion of Britain from the Mediterranean, and it had been hoped that Italian East-Mediterranean ambitions might be satisfied by attacking Egypt and Suez. But Graziani's advance into Egypt, which began in the middle of September, had come to a standstill by the middle of October, and the Italian menace to Suez was not serious. As for Gibraltar, it had been taken for granted by Hitler and Mussolini, from the day the Germans arrived on the Spanish frontier, that Spain would follow Italy's example and declare war on Britain. She had made enough lofty declarations of solidarity with the Axis to warrant at least this. But Franco drove harder bargains than Mussolini, or possibly, as Lord Templewood suggests,² he learnt from the Duce's mistakes. On 8 August³ the German Ambassador noted that the Caudillo asked for Gibraltar, French Morocco, a part of Algeria, and the extension of some of Spain's existing colonies; he also required substantial economic assistance and he refused to move without having received it. When Suñer came to Berlin in September it all seemed—as Ribbentrop told the Duce on 19 September—to be arranged, but Germany could

¹ *Führer Naval Conferences*, 1940, p. 95.

² Lord Templewood, *Ambassador on Special Mission* (Collins, 1946).

³ See Secret Memorandum by Stohrer on 'Conditions for Spain's entry into the war' (published in *The Spanish Government and the Axis* (U.S. Department of State, 1946) as No. 1 Spain had occupied the Tangier International Zone on 14 June.

not arm herself, Italy, and Spain; as it was the Italians were left without long-promised supplies, some of which were, however, sent east to satisfy the Russians.¹ No British decision was wiser than the one made to put up with numberless affronts in Madrid in order to keep Spain economically dependent upon Britain rather than Germany.

The day before the signature of the Tripartite Pact, Hitler had a long discussion with Raeder alone. It was laid down by the Admiral that Gibraltar must be taken and that this required that the Canāry Islands be secured in advance. It was also laid down that

'The Suez Canal must be taken. It is doubtful whether the Italians can accomplish this alone; support by German troops will be needed. An advance from Suez through Palestine and Syria as far as Turkey is necessary. If we reach that point Turkey will be in our power. . . .

'The question of North-West Africa is also of decisive importance. All indications are that Britain, with the help of De Gaulle France, and possibly also of the U.S.A., wants to make this region a centre of resistance and to set up air bases for attack against Italy. Britain will try to prevent us from gaining a foothold in the African colonies.

'In this way Italy would be defeated.

'Therefore action must be taken against Dakar. . . .²

' . . . In general, it appears important to co-operate with France in order to protect North-West Africa—after certain concessions have been made to Germany and Italy. The occupation of France makes it possible to compel her to maintain and defend the frontiers advantageous to us.'

Hitler was in general agreement.

'Upon completion of the alliance with Japan he will immediately confer with the Duce, and possibly also with Franco. He will have to decide whether co-operation with France or Spain is more profitable; probably with France since Spain demands a great deal more (French Morocco) but offers little.'³

This conclusion of the Fuhrer's was the result of the German interviews with the Spanish Minister of the Interior, Suñer,

¹ Simoni, 2 Sept. 1940.

² Raeder constantly insists upon the importance of Dakar.

³ *Fuhrer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1940, p. 106.

who had been visiting Berlin, and of a letter from Franco dated 22 September. Hitler's talk with Ciano in Berlin on 28 September was very largely concerned with the question of Spain, and one cannot help admiring Spanish technique if it had reduced the Führer to the ruefulness indicated in Schmidt's official Minute—it makes one feel that Franco was worth ten Mussolinis. The Spaniards, Hitler said to Ciano, ask for 400,000 to 700,000 tons of grain, the furnishing of all the fuel they will require, the military equipment they lack, and the troops and weapons necessary for the capture of Gibraltar; they also ask (see above) for Morocco and smaller gains. In return they promise their friendship. There is no trace of amusement on Hitler's face for he never was amused. It is not that he himself has forgotten how to be false for he talks to Ciano as if Germany had made greater sacrifices than Italy for Franco. The impression one receives is that he was really nonplussed, for he even remarked to Ciano that the Spaniards with their talk of high ideals made him feel like a Jew who was willing to exploit the most sacred human heritage. Ciano must have had very mixed feelings, the more since he knew that Italy needed a lot of the supplies for which Spain was asking.

A week later Hitler and Mussolini met at the Brenner. Hitler was still obsessed by his Franco-Spanish problem and in a state of consternation over the voracity of Spain. As for Morocco, if France were to forfeit that, then Hitler intended to make good the failure of William II rather than hand over the whole of it to Spain; after all he was planning for the return of the pre-1914 colonies to Germany which, as we have seen, was to become, among other things, a great African power. Above all, he said to Mussolini, he feared that it might become known if Morocco were promised to Spain and that this would have two dangerous results, one that the British would occupy the Canaries and the second that all French North Africa would join de Gaulle. Mussolini suggested that it would be necessary to offer Spain something in order to combat enemy pressure, but she might be left to hope for Morocco when it came to the final peace. In his letter from Rocca delle Caminate on 19 October he changed his position, saying that he would now prefer Spain not to declare war for the present, so as to give her more time to prepare; perhaps he had other reasons of his own. At the same

time he wrote rebelliously about France 'who thought, because she had not fought, that she had not been beaten'. Vichy, he went so far as to declare (not without some reason), is in touch with London via Lisbon. One could not and should not think of collaboration with the French who must soon be reduced to be a nation of 34 to 35 millions.

Hitler was as impervious as ever to any dissent from his own view; his policy towards France undoubtedly impeded the smooth internal working of the Axis itself and contributed to the failure of Axis policy towards Spain. It has been suggested that Hitler was affected by some particular tenderness towards France, quite apart from the strategic importance of her Empire. His old feeling for Britain was illustrated by at least two references so late as this to the possibility of a German-British compromise.¹ It may be that the French had really won him by their extraordinary submission at this time. 'Their hope is that France may become Germany's favourite province', Bullitt wrote to Washington on 1 July.² Perhaps Hitler felt that this was the beginning of the comprehension he sought not only from Mussolini and the Germans, if his dream of Nietzschean caste-imperialism was to be fulfilled. By October 1940 the whole French-Spanish complex had become so important to the Führer that he made the unprecedented gesture of going to visit both Pétain and Franco instead of ordering them to mount to the Berghof—hitherto he had never left his headquarters of the moment for anyone less than the Duce. Thanks to his astonishing journey to Montoire and Hendaye he failed to forestall Italy's disastrous attack upon Greece.

Hitler met Laval at Montoire on his way through to Hendaye on 22 October, and Pétain at the same place on his way back on 24 October. He told Mussolini on 28 October that while Laval was a corrupt democratic politician who was only pro-Axis in order to save himself, Pétain had made an excellent impression on him.³ Among mere mortals and apart from supermen, Antonescu and Pétain both succeeded in gaining the approbation of the Führer—in Berlin Hitler was afterwards said

¹ The first was to Franco on 23 Oct. and the second at Florence on 28 Oct. 1940. See Ciano Minute of this date.

² See W. L. Langer, *Our Vichy Gamble* (Knopf, 1947).

³ Ciano Minute, 28 Oct. 1940.

to have spoken of Pétain as 'a more spiritual Hindenburg'.¹ But the current version of what occurred at Montoire on 24 October, that 'Hitler had assured Pétain and Laval that the French colonial Empire would be kept intact',² is misleading. It is difficult to recall any other week in Hitler's life in which he behaved with so much sense and honesty. He said to the French approximately: 'If you contribute to the defeat of Britain, then Germany, Italy, and Spain will satisfy themselves at British rather than at French expense.' To Mussolini on 28 October he 'twice solemnly declared that he would sign no peace treaty with France if all Italy's requirements were not previously satisfied, requirements to be regarded as extremely modest and certainly less than the French had expected',³ and it seems certain that he really emphasized his solidarity with Italy to the French. The Procès-verbal drawn up by Schmidt on 24 October contains the following clause numbered (4):

'The Führer declared to the head of the French State that after the defeat of England and the retrocession of the German colonies, there will be an opportunity . . . for a re-partition of colonial possessions in Africa. . . . This concerns above all the four powers: Germany, Italy, France, and Spain. To the extent that this new order will involve necessary territorial modifications in the existing French colonial domain, the Axis powers will undertake to see that . . . France obtains territorial compensations and that, in the final accounting, she retains in Africa a colonial domain essentially equivalent to what she possesses to-day.'

Pétain is said to have commented to a friend, 'It will take six months to discuss this programme and six more to forget it.'⁴ To both Franco and Mussolini, if not positively to Pétain, Hitler said that of course if the war with Britain ended in compromise, France would have to pay everyone's bill.

The historic meeting of the Führer and Caudillo on 23 October was, from the German point of view, nothing short of a fiasco. Hitler made his usual survey of the general situation, with the main emphasis placed upon the question of the French. 'The great problem that was to be solved at the moment

¹ Simoni, 3 Nov. 1940.

² This was Goring's statement later, quoted by DeWitt C. Poole, *op. cit.*

³ Ciano Minute of 28 Oct. 1940.

⁴ *Le Procès du Maréchal Pétain* (Éditions Albin Michel, Paris, 1945), vol. ii, p. 876.

'The meeting at Florence was primarily for the purpose of removing certain objections raised by the Duce, who believed that Germany is allowing the French too much freedom and that the Italian requirements are thus receiving no consideration

'The Fuhrer is, in principle, pursuing the definite policy of keeping France weak in order to eliminate any threat to the Axis Powers. There is no doubt that France will be forced to meet the territorial demands of Germany and Italy.'¹

In spite of this the Florence meeting was clouded by Hitler's flat contradiction of Mussolini's letter of 19 October, for he declared that he had convinced himself at Montoire that the fight between Vichy and de Gaulle was genuine and that Spain must be brought into the war at once. The secret protocol of Hendaye, which had cost so much struggle on 23 October, and which Mussolini approved at Florence on the 28th, involved nothing but a Spanish adherence to the Tripartite Pact. Even this was softened down, thanks to the Italians, when it came to be signed at Vienna in November; it was, in fact, nothing but a sterile face-saving device.

The month of November only darkened the Axis outlook. The Italian war against Greece made it possible for the British to improve their Mediterranean position by the occupation of Crète, Lemnos, and other islands. And it proved so great a fiasco that the psychological atmosphere of Europe changed noticeably; even in Madrid there was open satisfaction over the misfortunes of the 'macheronis'.² When Molotov came to Berlin in the middle of the month he seems to have made an early display of the obstructive ability which became notorious in later years, and all Ribbentrop's attempts to induce Russia to commit herself to an agreement with the Tripartite Powers—he offered her the Black Sea and the freedom of the Straits³—fell flat. With the Balkans in a ferment, the Russians were not going to be bought off; on the contrary, they were developing their political foothold in Bulgaria and inducing King Boris to resist Hitler's offers. The adhesion of Hungarians, Rumanians, Slovaks, and in secret of the Spaniards, to the Tripartite Pact at

¹ *Fuhrer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 4 Nov. 1940.

² Templewood, *op. cit.*

³ He announced that he intended to do so when Ciano visited him at Schonhof a week earlier—see Ciano Minute, 4 Nov. 1940, but spoke in hostile fashion of Russia on 18 Nov.—see Ciano letter to Mussolini, 18 Nov. 1940, see also Chapter XVI, p. 246.

Vienna on 20 November was a flimsy consolation for the attitude of the U.S.S.R.

Ciano was back in Austria for the ceremony. He stayed at Salzburg and on 18 November had a talk with Ribbentrop and also with Suñer, who criticized German policy towards France in a Mussolinian vein. Both on 18 and 20 November Ciano saw Hitler, who was in the process of composing a letter of reproof to Mussolini for all that had gone wrong; on the 18th Ciano himself sent a letter to the Duce to prepare him, as it were, for what was to come from the Führer. Hitler's letter expounded the psychological and military effects of the Greek campaign; he was particularly concerned that it should have given the R.A.F. bases within easy reach of the Rumanian oil-fields on the one hand and of southern Italy and Albania on the other—'it is the [air] attack upon the Italian cities which will be decisive', he wrote, and no effective counter-action could be attempted before March 1941. As political remedies Hitler proposed that Spain should intervene immediately,¹ that the German troops in Rumania should be reinforced, and that Yugoslavia should be coaxed into collaboration with the Axis. As regards military action the Führer urged Mussolini to reach at least Mersa Matruh so that the British could be driven from Alexandria and Suez through Axis air action, after which an all-round offensive could be launched in the spring. As part of his plan he requested the Duce to withdraw his Air Force (*not* his submarines) from the Channel.² Using his perennial climatic argument, he intended, he said, to send a Luftwaffe force to the Mediterranean instead—he would require it to be sent home by the beginning of May.³

In conversation with Ciano it appears that Hitler excited himself most over the matter of the seduction of Yugoslavia to be effected through the offer of Salonica; when Ciano expressed his belief that Mussolini would agree, the atmosphere cleared and Hitler became friendly. Why, in that case the Greek affair would become one of the great Axis successes, he declared.⁴ When they parted in Vienna on 20 November, Hitler gave

¹ This meant January, with a simultaneous Axis attack upon Gibraltar.

² Thirteen Italian planes were shot down over Harwich on 11 Nov., but very little else was ever heard of the Fascist Air Force in the north.

³ Hitler to Mussolini, 20 Nov. 1940.

⁴ Ciano to Mussolini, 20 Nov. 1940.

Ciano the letter for the Duce, and added: 'From this city of Vienna I sent Mussolini a telegram to tell him that I would never forget his help on the day of the Anschluss. I repeat it to-day and I stand by his side with all my might.' 'There were big tears in his eyes', Ciano added in his Diary. 'What a strange man!'

Mussolini did not seem crestfallen and answered Hitler immediately. It was all the fault of the weather, of the Albanians who had deserted, and of the Bulgarians who had helped the Greeks. He agreed that a Yugoslav alliance should be sought, but made the childish condition that Yugoslav troops should not come into action until the Italians had dealt Greece 'a first blow'.¹ On 6 December Marshal Milch arrived to arrange about the loan of a detachment of the Luftwaffe to Italy and with another letter from Hitler dated 5 December announcing that he had begun his approaches to Belgrade. It is interesting, however, to find that the longest paragraph in the Fuhrer's letter was still devoted to Spain and France; Hitler was exasperated with the Spanish delay and uneasy that Pétain should have sent Weygand to French North Africa; he even admitted to feeling less sure about the enmity between Vichy and de Gaulle.

By now Mussolini had replaced Badoglio as Chief of Staff by Cavallero, but his Balkan fortunes had not mended, and on 9 December the British counter-attacked with success in North Africa. It seems from the entry in Ciano's Diary and from subsequent developments that Mussolini really panicked on 4 December, but it is a little difficult to be certain of the upshot as one or two of Mussolini's letters to Hitler at this time seem to have disappeared. At all events on 5 December the Italian Embassy in Berlin suddenly learnt that the Ambassador, who had been away for a long time, would return that day. He had been dispatched from Italy by special aeroplane, but owing to bad weather over the Alps he did not arrive in Berlin until 7 December—in this way his journey crossed with that of Milch. At 5 p.m. on 7 December the incredibly incompetent Alfieri saw Ribbentrop and begged for some kind of German threat against Greece via Rumania or Bulgaria on the one hand, and an unspecified amount of help in the shape of arms and raw

¹ Mussolini to Hitler, 22 Nov. 1940.

materials on the other. Hitler saw Alfieri on 8 December and asked for an early meeting with Mussolini. The Duce refused to face him. On 18 December a letter from Ciano to Alfieri, dated 17 December, rather in the vein of the famous letter of 25 August 1939, arrived in Berlin; Ciano pointed out, however, that Italy was asking for a good deal less than in 1939, while Germany to-day controlled not only the Great German Reich but the resources of virtually all Europe. A list of raw materials was appended to this dispatch, some items being urgently required within a month. At the same time Italy asked for an extra 100,000 tons of coal monthly.¹ Hitler saw Alfieri again on 19 December and said, approximately, 'Yes, I will come to your help but I will not send you raw materials without knowing how they will be used; you will send thousands more of your workmen to Germany and I will deliver finished products to you according to the advice of my economic experts who will visit Italy to see what to give you and on what conditions.' This interview was a landmark in the history of the Axis, for it was an important stepping-stone on the way to a German occupation of Italy. Hitherto the Italians had had endless vexations because the Germans did not send what they had promised, often diverting from the Axis ally supplies with which they preferred to buy off the potential enemy, Russia. From now on German economic experts and all the Gestapo and military agents who chose to dress up in 'economic expert' clothes took up key positions in Italy, and the Italians were no longer masters in their own house. Simoni indulged in a Latin extravagance when he groaned that Italy was fast becoming another Rumania,² but he was not altogether wrong. He noticed that Germans often asked one now whether Mussolini's position was still secure.³ The arrival of a Luftwaffe detachment in Sicily, the Italian 'centre of gravity',⁴ soon laid the foundations of a military occupation.

On 31 December 1940 Hitler wrote Mussolini a long letter from the Obersalzberg to wish him a happier New Year. It was remarkable rather for its moderation than for anything else:

¹ See Ciano to Alfieri, 17 Dec. 1940.

² Simoni, 12 Dec. 1940.

³ Idem, 17 Dec. 1940.

⁴ As Mussolini had said to Ribbentrop on 6 Nov. 1937: see Chapter VI.

the fortunes of war, said the Fuhrer, are bound to ebb and flow. He dealt with Russia, the Balkans, and North Africa, but he was still as if obsessed with the questions of Spain and France. Franco, he writes grimly, impressed by recent events, has refused to intervene, and we must give up the idea of crossing the Spanish frontier on 10 January. It is interesting that though Hitler was to write the Caudillo a very strong letter on 6 February 1941, in which he told him fairly roughly to stop his idle excuses, and in which he offered him the delivery of a million tons of grain at the moment he declared war on Britain, on New Year's Eve he already seems to have felt that the Spanish refusal was final. 'I fear', he wrote in his pontifical way, 'that Franco is making the greatest mistake of his life.' The chief practical result of Mussolini's visit to the Berghof on 19 to 20 January 1941 was that he agreed to meet Franco himself in order to overcome his reluctance. The upshot of the Duce-Caudillo meeting at Bordighera on 12 February was, however, little more than that both parties agreed in deploring the illusions the Fuhrer had nursed about their traditional and incurable enemy, France. Though the Italians were unpopular in Spain, Franco undoubtedly preferred Italian patronage to that of Hitler, while Mussolini had really regarded Spain as his, not an Axis, affair ever since the secret agreement he had signed with Franco in November 1936:¹ at Bordighera the Duce showed more sympathy for the Spanish view than ardour for an Axis capture of Gibraltar.² A fortnight later the Caudillo addressed a letter to Hitler which the latter described to Ciano in March as a practical denunciation of the secret protocol of Hendaye which had been ratified at Vienna.³

On 14 December Pétain had replaced Laval by Flandin. Hitler still believed in Pétain, he wrote, but one could not be sure and Weygand's intentions were undoubtedly hostile. Here he was not sufficiently generous to admit that he was adopting Mussolini's view. As a matter of fact four days before the eviction of Laval—presumably the Germans were pre-informed—Hitler had signed Directive No. 19, Operation Attila, for the

¹ See above p. 70, p. 83 n. 2.

² See Italian Minute of Bordighera meeting, 12 Feb. 1941, and see also Hitler to Mussolini, 5 Feb. 1941, and Mussolini to Hitler, 22 Feb. 1941.

³ Franco's letter was dated 26 Feb. 1941. Hitler's remark is quoted in the Minute of Ciano's meeting with the Fuhrer at Vienna on 25 Mar. 1941.

swift occupation, at a given moment, of Vichy France. This Directive ended with the words: 'The Italians must not have any knowledge of the preparations made or action contemplated. (Signed) Adolf Hitler.' One day later, on 11 December 1940, Operation Felix, aimed at the capture of Gibraltar, was postponed indefinitely.

At the end of 1940 Italian disasters had wrecked Hitler's plans while he himself was propounding the very things that he had scornfully denied when they were put to him by Mussolini two months earlier, that it was useless to wait for Spain and that the Axis should not trust Vichy. Beneath the surface of Hitler's faith in the fraternity of supermen and the fascination of his success for Mussolini, Italo-German discord was chronic.¹ It was due to the fundamental divergence between the national character and interests of Italy and Germany; over it was spread the brittle crust of Nazi-Fascist theories and of individual whims and vices.

Operations Marita and Barbarossa

THE climax in Hitler's career was always to have been a Germanic crusade against the peoples of Russia whose soil should then nourish the German master-race. But the Führer's vision of his Russian war had been one with a subjugated Europe and a humbled Britain in his rear. Thanks not only to the British but also to the vanity of Mussolini, the obstinacy of Franco, and the intrepidity of de Gaulle, he decided to fling his armies against Russia as an *entr'acte* between the scenes portraying the destruction of the British Isles. He was also impelled to take this suicidal plunge by the chronic inadequacy of the raw-material situation, which had clouded his relations with both Rome and Madrid. And in considering the drama of 1941 it should be emphasized that both Sofia and Belgrade were, psychologically at any rate, outposts of Russia. Hitler had good reason to fear that if he involved himself in perilous operations in the English Channel or the Mediterranean, Russia might well be able, since Mussolini had set the Balkans in motion, to induce a political transformation in both Bulgaria and Yugoslavia; should Russia succeed in unseating the more or less pro-Axis rulers of these countries, the profoundly pro-Russian sentiment of their peoples would certainly make itself felt, and all kinds of Pan-Slav and contagious social-revolutionary emotions be unchained. Balkan economic resources, to which Hitler, the Austrian, attached a half-morbid importance, would then be jeopardized too.

When on 4 November 1940 Ciano went shooting with Ribbentrop on one of the latter's many estates—on this occasion it was at Schönhof in the Sudetenland—it has been seen that the German Foreign Minister spoke of offering Russia a declaration in the sense of the recognition of the Black Sea as a Russian lake together with the freedom of the Straits which were not, however, to be held by Russia. At about this time Ribbentrop also spoke more than once, in the best traditional manner of the enemies of England, of turning Russia's gaze towards India. It was obvious to Ciano when he saw Hitler and Ribbentrop on

18 November that their attitude towards Russia had changed, and this was confirmed by Hitler's letters of 20 November and of 31 December to Mussolini. The change has usually been interpreted as the result of Molotov's visit to Berlin and of that of King Boris to the Berghof on 17 November,¹ but it is interesting to find in Hitler's Secret Directive No. 18, dated 12 November, orders 'in the event of its becoming necessary, to occupy that part of the Greek mainland in the North of the Aegean operating from Bulgaria . . .', and for the attack upon Russia. This directive is dated the day of Molotov's arrival in Berlin and was drawn up before the talks with him; under the heading *Russia* it states: 'A political conference will be held in the near future to clarify the Russian attitude. At the same time, whatever result the conference has, preparations are to be made for the Eastern campaign.'² It was in this spirit that Hitler received Molotov on the evening of 12 November and again on 13 November, when he told the Russian Minister that German troops would remain in Finland so long as he needed Finnish nickel. Later Hitler was 'visibly irritated by Molotov's insistence' upon a clearer definition of the twin questions of Bulgaria and the Straits. On the evening of the 13th, in the German Foreign Minister's air-raid shelter, Molotov, far from accession to the Tripartite Pact, conveyed to Ribbentrop the startling suggestion that Russia desired egress from the Baltic, that sacred sea.³

We know that the Italians, thanks to the disaster of their war in Greece, were at their wits' end in December, and it was not unnatural that they should make a fresh effort to improve their relations with Russia, partly in order to ease Balkan tension and largely in order to try to reduce their political and economic dependence upon Germany. There was a time when Mussolini had expressed his disapprobation of German-Soviet friendship in no uncertain tone, but in June 1940⁴ he had agreed

¹ The Molotov and Boris visits to Germany overlapped.

² *Führer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1941, p. 3. The so-called 'definitive' order for the preparation of the Russian campaign was passed to the German General Staff on 18 Dec. 1940 (Directive No. 21).

³ This account is based on the German sources used by DeWitt C. Poole in *Light on Nazi Foreign Policy*, quoted above, and on the documents in *Nazi-Soviet Relations*, pp. 217-54.

⁴ In Mar. 1940 Hitler had urged the Italians to arrive at a *détente* with Russia; it took them three months to follow this up.

that a tentative Italian advance to Russia should be made. It had led to no result. Now, as Ciano confidentially informed Alfieri on 16 December, Molotov dined at the Italian Embassy in Moscow on 13 December; on 28 December Ciano wired to Rosso to go ahead with the conversations, and this was done on 30 December. It was natural enough that Ciano wished to take action independently of Berlin, but it was clumsy to do this if he dared not risk carrying it to a conclusion without asking German permission. With the New Year he decided that Ribbentrop must be informed, and this was done by Alfieri on 6 January. Ribbentrop was an excessively vindictive character, and, as Simoni noted, he was just back from his father's funeral which had not improved his temper. After all his boasts in 1939 about Russo-German friendship he could not bear Ciano to compete in any way, still less since Molotov had been so provoking in Berlin. Although a German-Russian commercial treaty was rather ostentatiously signed on 10 January¹ and was regarded as satisfactory cover for the Barbarossa plan against Russia, Ribbentrop went off to the Berghof with Keitel and Mackensen² and brought back a veto on the Italian-Russian negotiations just before the Duce himself was expected at Berchtesgaden. After being suspended in mid-air without instructions for a fortnight, Rosso had to explain all his soundings away. Apart from the disagreeable character of Ribbentrop's behaviour to his ally, the effect upon Molotov must have more than cancelled out the German-Russian trade treaty. When Ribbentrop and Ciano met on 19 January at the Berghof, the former made a very lame statement prefaced by strong emphasis on Russia as the most important problem of the day.³ The reasons given for his veto were that it could not be tolerated that the Soviet Government should question the actual Balkan *status quo* and seek a foothold on the Straits.⁴ In fact on 17 January the Russian Ambassador in Berlin had declared that

¹ With a Secret Protocol by which Russia agreed to pay 7½ million gold dollars for the last strip of Lithuania: see *Nazi-Soviet Relations*, pp. 267-8.

² See Simoni, 8 Jan. 1941.

³ See Ciano's Minute. This is, of course, the Italian account but there is no trace of resentment on Ciano's part.

⁴ In reply to Molotov's question to Rosso on 30 December whether Italy understood Russia's interest in the Straits, Ciano had replied that 'while Italy was particularly interested in the Balkans she did not claim to exercise a decisive influence there'. See Simoni, 5 Jan. 1941.

according to all reports the Germans were preparing to march from Rumania into Bulgaria, Greece, and on to the Straits, 'that the Soviet Government has stated repeatedly to the German Government that it considers the territory of Bulgaria and of the Straits as the security zone of the U.S.S.R. and that it cannot be indifferent to events which threaten the security interests of the U.S.S.R.'¹

The tension which surrounded Mussolini's visit to the Obersalzberg in January 1941 was great. It was three months since Fuhrer and Duce had met at Florence, three catastrophic months for Italy. Mussolini had been shirking the encounter, and on 18 January he left Rome in considerable trepidation.² In addition to all the obvious reasons for anxiety on the Italian side and the irritation felt over the veto on Rosso's conversations with Molotov, the prospect of more Italian workmen being sent to Germany inflamed the running sore. Most Italians hated the war, and of those who were sent to Germany some were Communist or Socialist—since the Fascist Party preferred to get its opponents out of the way—and many were down-and-out labourers from the south. The Italian workers in Germany were in fact frequently obstructive and were then punished brutally by the Nazi authorities; the Embassy and, of course, the Consulates had many dossiers full of incidents. Italian confidence in the Germans was scarcely increased by the evidence which became convincing before the end of 1940 that mentally deficient Germans were being systematically killed by gassing;³ this was largely 'experimental' with a view to 'liquidations' of the members of other races on a much larger scale.

On the German side there was not only extreme contempt and irritation over the Italian performance against Greece, but serious anxiety over the stability of the Fascist régime. On 9 January Alfieri saw Himmler, who was naïve and probably said exactly what the information he received from Gestapo agents in Italy led him to believe. Two dangers faced Italy, he declared, 'the action of the Catholic Church and the threat of a move against the Duce'. The Church, he said, affected Axis

¹ See *Nazi-Soviet Relations*, p. 268.

² Ciano Diary, 18 Jan 1941. See also Simoni, 5 Jan 1941, who says that at that point Mussolini only agreed to meet Hitler in secret and at some unknown destination, their respective trains to stop somewhere in open country.

³ See Simoni, 16 Jan. 1941.

policy in a deplorable way and was, of course, responsible for Franco's recalcitrance; while Mussolini was in constant danger from the enmity of the King.¹ After the Conferences (8 and 9 January) at the Berghof to which Ribbentrop had gone on 8 January Raeder reported that:

'The Führer is of the opinion that it is vital for the outcome of the war that Italy does not collapse, but remains a loyal member of the Axis. The Duce is emphatically pro-Axis. On the other hand, the military and political leaders are *not* pro-Axis and reliable to the same extent. Count Ciano has been sharply attacked by Fascist and military circles. However, the Führer does not believe that in the present situation Ciano would oppose Germany.

'The well-known Italian mentality makes it difficult for the Germans to influence the Italian leaders. The Führer is of the opinion that if the Italians are to be kept in line he must not go too far in matters of leadership. We should not make *demands*; too great demands may cause even Mussolini to change his attitude. Besides there is the danger that then the Italians in turn might make undesirable demands. (For example, the Italians may desire information about German operational plans. The Führer considers that caution is necessary, especially in this connexion. . . . There is great danger that the Royal Family is transmitting intelligence to Britain.)'

Only a fortnight earlier Hitler had said to his naval and military chiefs: 'There is a complete lack of leadership in Italy. The royal house is pro-British; it will have to be eliminated if it works against Mussolini.'²

When the Duce arrived at Berchtesgaden on Sunday the 19th, Ciano was astonished by the spontaneous warmth manifested between Mussolini and Hitler. On this difficult occasion Hitler seems again to have managed the Duce with skill and to have sent him back to Italy more fascinated than ever. It has already been recorded that to Mussolini was entrusted the task, as Ciano said, of bringing home the Spanish prodigal son. On Monday, 20 January, a military conference was held with the Führer, Ribbentrop, Keitel, Jodl, von Rintelen, von Puttkamer, Schmundt, and Paul Schmidt present for the Germans, and Mussolini, Ciano, Guzzoni, Marras (Military Attaché in Berlin), and Gandin for the Italians. Indications were made to the Italians of the programme drawn up by the Germans on

¹ Simoni, 9 Jan. 1941.

² *Führer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 27 Dec. 1940.

11 January for the purpose of coming to their aid in Libya and the Balkans; Sicily was already a Luftwaffe base since Hitler had ordered a German squadron to go to the rescue on 10 December in response to Alfieri's *cri de cœur* of 7 December. The Führer insisted at least twice that German help to Italy would not be like that of the British to the French, but would be effectual.

Hitler's declamation on this occasion,¹ apart from recriminations against France and the blackmail of Weygand and a reiteration of 'Attack upon the British Isles is our ultimate aim', consisted of an anti-Russian outburst. The Russians, Hitler said, had protested against Germany's troops in Rumania, for which they would be snubbed:² the German soldiers were there in preparation for the operation against Greece, to protect Bulgaria against Russia, and to implement the Axis guarantee of Rumania. The Führer complained also that he was suffering from Russian obstruction in the matter of Finland's nickel which was essential to Germany. He declared that Russia was a far greater menace than the United States, and was pinning down such large German forces on the eastern frontiers as to impose a serious drain of man-power away from the manufacture of armaments.

On 31 December Hitler had written to Mussolini that so long as Stalin was alive he did not fear hostile Russian action, but one must not forget that Pilsudski's successors had betrayed their Germanophile heritage. At the Berghof in conference with his own chiefs ten days later he announced that 'Stalin must be regarded as a cold-blooded blackmailer; he would, if expedient, repudiate any written treaty at any time'.³ Now on 20 January to the Italians, with the help of the half-crazy anti-Semitic formulae in which he devoutly believed, Hitler compromised between his various assertions. 'As long as Stalin lives', he repeated, 'there is probably no danger; he is intelligent and careful' (seventeen months before he had been accepted as a

¹ See German Minute: U.S. Document C. 134.

² On 21 January Ribbentrop (from Fuschl) ordered Weizsacker to tell the Russians that 'the German Army will march through Bulgarian territory should any military operations be carried out against Greece'. See *Nazi-Soviet Relations*, p. 271.

³ It is notoriously characteristic of Hitler's psychological type, which is particularly frequent in Germany, that in perfect 'sincerity' it accuses other people of what it persistently does itself. Blackmail seems to have been the Führer's favourite accusation in this period.

third superman). 'But', Hitler added, 'should he cease to be there, the Jews, who at present only occupy second or third rank positions, might move up again into the first rank.' Finally he asserted that Russia was no danger on land, but was to be feared because she could menace the Rumanian oil-fields. The clash which was at that moment occurring between Antonescu and certain Iron Guard leaders (a disturbance for which Hitler, of course, blamed Russia) made the Rumanian situation particularly delicate, but Hitler indicated on 20 January that Germany would maintain his cherished Antonescu. It was only known later that Horia Sima, who had opposed Antonescu, was spirited away to Germany to be saved up for future use. The subject of Rumania gave the Fuhrer an opportunity to dilate on the matter of revolutions among which, he explained, only the two perpetrated by Mussolini and himself had had 'an immediately constructive effect'.

So much for Russia for the moment. Apropos Stalin Hitler on 8 January had also said to his own chiefs:

'Britain's aim for some time to come will be to set Russian strength in motion against us. If the United States of America and Russia should enter the war against Germany, the situation would become very complicated. Hence any possibility for such a threat to develop must be eliminated at the very beginning. If the Russian threat were non-existent, we could wage war on Britain indefinitely. If Russia collapsed, Japan would be greatly relieved; this, in turn would mean increased danger to the U.S.A.'¹

(It is extraordinary to see how the remote scent of danger or conflict so intoxicated Hitler that he ran to meet it and to provoke his potential enemy.) But to the Italian ally he neither indulged in these vast cogitations nor hinted at the military directives which were already prepared. The Germans, wherever they went, still claimed with assurance that the war was already won, but Ciano was taken aback to hear Ribbentrop admit at this January meeting that it could scarcely be over before 1942.

The immediate objective at the beginning of 1941 must be to put the Axis ally on her feet. The news from both Italian fronts continued to be bad, and, though Mussolini had assured Hitler at Berchtesgaden that the régime was unshaken, on

¹ *Fuhrer Conferences on Naval Affairs, 1941, p. 13.*

5 February Hitler wrote to him to express anew his desire to 'overcome a situation which is bound in the long run to have unfortunate psychological effects not only upon the rest of the world but also for your own people'. In this letter Hitler proposed that Rommel with a small staff should join Graziani at once in Africa. Mussolini only answered on 22 February, after he had seen Franco at Bordighera. He confirmed the Caudillo's view that Spain was incapable of war at present. Angrily he wrote that the Italian people had not been shaken by the bad news from the fronts, and added that only the British could have been so stupid as to think that the Fascist régime was endangered.

The Germans had grave doubts as to the men and material they were sending to Libya¹—whether it was worth while, or simply pouring one's resources down the drain. They felt that they should at least insist upon the placing of the Italian forces under German command. At the Berghof meeting at the beginning of the year Raeder 'expressed the view that the Italian armed forces need to be strictly organized under German leadership'.² This was the beginning of a long Axis tussle in which the Italians lost the first round when the Duce, in the same letter of 22 February, accepted the Fuhrer's proposal to put the Italian armoured and motorized divisions under Rommel in order to assure unity of action. 'We shall win', Mussolini concluded, 'for many reasons, the first being that we are putting our men and means together to fight for our revolution.'

To rescue the Italian position in the Balkans Hitler had planned Operation Marita since November 1940: this meant to force Yugoslavia to adhere to the Tripartite Pact and to bring up German troops from Rumania across a helpless Bulgaria into Greece by about the end of March. From the time of Ciano's visit to Austria in November Ribbentrop had been working upon Belgrade, but just as King Boris could not completely flout the Russophile sentiments of the Bulgars, so Prince Paul and his Ministers insisted that the furthest length to which they could go with Germany was a non-aggression pact. There was much in Ribbentrop's spiteful insistence upon the obstacle created by anti-Italian feeling in Yugoslavia, which was strongest in Croatia on account of the Dalmatian claims of Italy. On the

¹ See Simoni, 30 Jan. 1941, 3 Feb. 1941.

² *Fuhrer Conferences on Naval Affairs* of 8-9 Jan. 1941, p. 8.

other hand, the Croat quarrel with the Serbs was based on a claim to be more civilized which was associated with an orientation towards Vienna¹ like that of ex-King Zog. This was a trump in the hand of Hitler, more particularly when it was a matter of his war with Russia, incipient here in the Balkans somewhere between Zagreb and Belgrade. But, though some Croat leaders were in German or Italian pay, Maček, the idol of the Croat peasantry, could never have been bought by the Axis. He was true to his Slav inheritance, and all these Slav peoples were dimly conscious of what they had to fear from Germany. Meanwhile, the Russians looked on in anger and apprehension, and perhaps with some contempt.

For during February Rome and Berlin, far from co-operating at Belgrade, behaved like a couple of jealous women in rivalry for a beau's favours. Mussolini oscillated between dangling the bait of Salonica before Yugoslavia in order to win her quickly enough to demoralize the Greeks, and protesting to Hitler that Salonica could only be allowed to a true friend of the Axis which Yugoslavia could never be.² The German game was played more quietly and more falsely. On 14 February the Yugoslav Premier and Foreign Minister were induced to make the inevitable pilgrimage to Berchtesgaden, and at one point, according to Hassell, Prince Paul himself slipped off secretly to see Hitler. While telling the Italians to lay off Yugoslavia because it was desirable to be extremely cautious and to gain time, Hitler and Ribbentrop themselves offered the Yugoslavs Salonica as well as a territorial guarantee obviously directed against Italy; at the same time they offered a guarantee that the German Army would not cross Yugoslavia's frontiers and that they (the Yugoslavs) would not be expected to co-operate against Greece. Hassell, who was in Belgrade for about a week in March, is probably reliable about these negotiations, since he was informed by Prince Paul and the German Minister both of whom he knew intimately; he observed that the Croats and Slovenes in the Cabinet favoured accepting the German offer for the sake of security against Italy.³

¹ Cf. Hitler's statement to his generals on 27 Mar. 1941: 'Serbs and Slovenes were never pro-German', the Croats being ostentatiously excepted. *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part ii, p. 221.

² Mussolini to Hitler, 22 Feb. 1941.

³ Hassell, *op. cit.*, p. 188 et seq. On the other hand, he speaks on 4 Apr. of Maček as asking for Italian mediation.

On 8 February Hitler induced both Rumania and Bulgaria to sign a pact with Germany against Greece,¹ and on 19 February, immediately after the Yugoslavs had been to Berchtesgaden, Hitler fixed the dates for the move across Bulgaria; on 28 February the first part of Operation Marita began to be executed so that on 1 March Bulgaria adhered to the Tripartite Pact as the German troops were crossing the Danube. The Germans moved very slowly towards Salonica, in order, as they confidentially informed the Italians,² to induce the Greeks to give in to them without fighting. Mussolini nearly lost his head again and he rushed off to Albania to order a fresh offensive so that Greece should at all costs surrender to Italy, not to Germany; the offensive proved to be a failure again. Meanwhile, fat little General Guzzoni³ had been telephoning to Marras to protest against the idea of the Germans peacefully entering Greece 'while our people are fighting and dying'.⁴

On 20 March Ribbentrop informed Alfieri that Yugoslavia had agreed to adhere to the Tripartite Pact. This statement was as false as the rest of his behaviour all through this affair. On 21 March, indeed, a Cabinet crisis in Belgrade made Yugoslav acquiescence less probable. Thereupon Berlin addressed an ultimatum to Yugoslavia, and a fresh Tripartite Pact ceremony was arranged to take place at the Belvedere Palace in Vienna on Tuesday, 25 March. Ciano who, like all the Fascist Ministers, had been on active service, now went back to his work as Foreign Minister and appeared in Vienna to sign once again on behalf of Italy.⁵ When the Yugoslav Prime Minister, Cvetković, had returned, on the night of 26 March, there was a revolution in Belgrade, an event as exciting and important as de Gaulle's defiance of brute force in the previous June. The Prince Regent disappeared in favour of young King Peter, and General Simović headed a new Government. The enraged Hitler immediately held a Council of War (27 March) and Operation Marita was speeded up with lightning speed while

¹ See captured documents 1746-PS (p. 257 below). ² Simoni, 3 Mar. 1941.

³ See Ciano Diary, 17 Jan. 1941.

⁴ Simoni, 9 Mar. 1941.

⁵ He saw Hitler who spoke openly of his four quarrels with Russia—Finland, Bulgaria, Rumania, the Straits—and added that he had more faith in the German troops on the Russian frontier than in the existing pacts—see Ciano Minute, 25 Mar. 1941. Kordt (op. cit.) says that Hitler complained that the official banquet on this occasion had seemed like a funeral party.

Yugoslav atrocities against helpless Germans suddenly poured from the German wireless. 'The Fuhrer is determined', we read in the Minute of this meeting, 'without waiting for possible declarations of loyalty from the new government, to make all preparations in order to destroy Yugoslavia militarily and as a national unit. No diplomatic enquiries will be made nor ultimatata presented. . . . The attack will start as soon as the means and troops suitable for it are ready.' Late in the day an excited message, emphasizing before everything the need for discretion, was sent from Hitler to Mussolini. Mackensen delivered it personally to the Duce (alone) at 2 a.m. on 28 March and reported back that Mussolini, 'who made the impression of the greatest fitness and calm', seemed well content and came out with the right phrases about Versailles and Sarajevo. Without loss of time the Duce drafted a reply adding to Hitler's enumeration of Hungary and Bulgaria as essential vassals in the new crisis the name of Pavelić 'che si trova a breve distanza da Roma'.¹

On Saturday, 5 April, the day before the Germans bombed Belgrade, Hitler informed Mussolini that the attack was about to begin. His message this time was chiefly concerned with proposing to the Duce that in this whole operation he should accept Hitler's strategic orders for all the Italian forces concerned. The Fuhrer tactfully suggested that these orders would be communicated to Mussolini personally in the form of 'recommendations' and 'wishes'. 'This only involves a personal understanding between the two of us and will not be known to the world.' After sententiously reiterating that 'La Jugoslavia è la più autentica creazione di Versaglia e merita il suo destino', the Duce on 6 April accepted the yoke against which his generals, had they known, would have protested bitterly. Mussolini's humiliation was increased by the sending of the same instructions at the same time to Horthy. Teleki had killed himself rather than be pushed into the rending of Yugoslavia immediately after Hungary had made a friendly agreement with her. But without Teleki there was no one strong enough to fight against the whirlwind, and the Magyar troops moved southwards when the German signal came.

The destruction of Yugoslavia during April 1941, and the surrender of Greece to the Germans without reference to the

¹ Mussolini to Hitler, 28 Mar. 1941; see also pp 271-2 below.

Italians on 23 April, opened a fresh phase in the history of the Axis. The partition and occupation of the Balkan peninsula was completed and the New Order thus established in Europe as it was to remain with virtually no change until 1944. It led to any number of fresh conflicts between Italy and Germany which came to a head in 1942 and 1943. But the conquest of Yugoslavia and Greece was also the immediate prelude to Hitler's attack upon Russia.

Gradually, during the first half of 1941, Hitler's utterances show that to his obsession with the iniquity of Franco was being added his obsession with the iniquity of Stalin. On every occasion of Axis contact during the winter of 1940-1, and indeed much later, Hitler lamented the lost opportunity of taking Gibraltar, lost thanks to the blind obstinacy of Spain. But as the months passed he worked up his own exasperation against Russia with more and more success. The evolution of his sentiments towards Stalin has been recorded, and it is interesting to see how all along he regards Operation Marita as the overture to Operation Barbarossa. On 27 March he made a statement to his military commanders that 'Yugoslavia was an uncertain factor in regard to the coming Marita action and even more in regard to the Barbarossa undertaking later on'.¹ In his letter to Mussolini on 5 April he gave as one of the reasons for an immediate attack upon Yugoslavia the pact of friendship which she was in the process of concluding with Russia, though the pact was bound to be as helpless a gesture as the British guarantees to Poland and Rumania had been. After asking Mussolini to submit to his orders he explained that he only wished to be certain of an early victory 'just because in view of the insecure state of affairs in the east, I shall naturally be glad to be able to free the German formations as soon as possible from their present task'.²

Part of the preparation of the attack upon Russia involved an implementation of the alliance with Japan, and Ribbentrop had therefore invited his friend Oshima to Fuschl on 23 February. In March the far from bellicose Japanese Foreign Minister, Matsuoka, made a journey round Europe beginning and ending in Moscow: he saw Ribbentrop on 27, 28, and 29 March and

¹ See *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part II, p. 221. Document 1746-PS (G.B. 120).

² Hitler to Mussolini, 5 Apr. 1941.

again on 4 April¹ and 5 April, the Saturday before the Stukas destroyed Belgrade. The Nazi Minister on each occasion did his utmost to incite the Japanese to attack Singapore and sent Matsuoka back to Moscow to sign a neutrality pact with Molotov on 13 April. This no doubt suited the Japanese, but since Hitler always placed an almost morbid emphasis upon 'the element of surprise', it suited him too; it combined with his own pretended renewal of 'Sea Lion' preparations with a view to lulling the suspicions of Russia.²

The month of May 1941 was a particularly difficult one for the Axis relationship. The war had been won so often and yet it seemed impossible, as Mussolini remarked,³ to transform it into victory and peace. Renewed commercial negotiations between Germany and Italy proved disastrous; Germany simply could not prepare Operation Barbarossa and a feint Sea Lion without drastically cutting down the coal and oil she sent to Italy. The rapid eviction of the British from Crete by the Germans spelt fresh humiliation for the Duce. The occupation and partition of Yugoslavia and Greece led to every kind of quarrel; developments in those countries will be examined later. The incorrigible defeatism of the Berliners, which Simoni regarded as incurable once the invasion of Britain had failed, was stimulated in the middle of the month by the flight of Hess to Scotland—Hess, the Deputy of the Fuhrer, who had been officially named with Goring as Hitler's possible successor. The event was never fully exploited by the British; it shook the Nazi régime as effectually as anything before the fall of Mussolini.⁴ On 13 May Ribbentrop rushed to Rome to explain away the flight of Hess; the Duce was delighted, after the hints about his own position, to observe how greatly this incident had alarmed the Nazis. On Saturday, 31 May, Hitler demanded to see Mussolini on the Sunday or Monday and they met at the Brenner on 2 June. According to Mussolini, who was annoyed at being summoned, as he said like a waiter Hitler ranted for

¹ With Hitler on 27 March and 4 April.

² See Hitler's military conference 3 Feb. 1941. *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part ii, p. 237. 'The strategic concentration for "Barbarossa" will be camouflaged as a feint for "Seelowe" and the subsidiary measure "Marita".' In June Goebbels went in for calculated indiscretions in the Press about the invasion of Britain.

³ See Ciano Diary, 2 June 1941.

⁴ See Goebbels Diary, 23 Sept. 1943.

hours about Hess and the sinking of the *Bismarck*, but nothing was seriously analysed or decided; Hitler wept, the Duce said, when he spoke of Hess.¹ The miscreant's place was taken by his assistant, Martin Bormann, who became the Führer's secretary. The change reinforced the Nazi régime, for Bormann was a determined, industrious, and ruthless fanatic.

Meanwhile, an ominous silence prevailed with regard to Russia, and when Ribbentrop and Hitler met their Italian colleagues they pooch-pooched Russia as a minor business which could settle nothing one way or the other. On 13 May Mussolini asked whether Germany excluded the possibility of collaboration with Russia, whereupon Ribbentrop was obviously taken aback; after some prevarication he announced that he did not think that Stalin would move against Germany, but if he did Russia would be destroyed in three months. The Führer had been made suspicious by Russian behaviour, but had, of course, only strengthened his forces on the Russian frontier after the Russians had concentrated theirs.² On 2 June Ribbentrop, in his parrot-like way,³ appears to have repeated these inspired remarks to Ciano.⁴ On the first occasion he replied to a question that the Russians were delivering their goods satisfactorily to Germany, on the second that it would be regrettable if war interrupted the flow of Russian goods. While the Italian Embassy in Berlin was confidentially informed by the *Auswärtiges Amt* that Russian deliveries were almost at a standstill,⁵ General Thomas stated that they continued satisfactorily until the two countries were at war.⁶

¹ Ciano Diary, 2 June 1941. Cf. Semmler's Diary (Westhouse, 1947), entry for 14 May 1941. Goebbels told Semmler, one of his subordinates, 'Hitler was in tears and looked ten years older.' It seems that the Franco-German protocols (with regard to Axis use of French North African ports) signed five or six days previously were not mentioned on 2 June, though on 13 May a good deal of time was devoted to France.

² Schmidt Minute of meeting on 13 May 1941, dated Fuschl, 14 May 1941.

³ See Ciano Diary, 13 May 1941, where he quotes Goring as calling Ribbentrop 'the first parrot in Germany'.

⁴ Ciano Minute, 2 June 1941, where Ribbentrop is recorded as saying 'The rumours of the imminence of operations against Russia are to be considered as unfounded or at least extremely premature. It is the Russians who have begun to concentrate their forces on the German frontier'.

⁵ Simoni, 15 May 1941.

⁶ General Thomas (chief of *Wirtschaftsrüstungsamt*), *Basic Facts for a History of German War and Armament Economy*, prepared 1944, see *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part II, p. 256.

The Hassell and Simoni Diaries give an illuminating account of the atmosphere in Berlin. Anyone with any perspicacity knew that the attack against Russia was being intensively prepared. People were fascinated in a morbid, very German way by the thought of Napoleon, another of Hitler's obsessions; von Etzdorf openly referred Simoni to the date of Napoleon's passage of the Niemen if he wished to know the date of Hitler's attack upon Russia.¹ Few seem to have been deceived by the Sea Lion feint, but the air was full of rumours about a surrender by Stalin, who was credited with the intention of following Hacha's example, so that the Russian steppes would have lain open for the realization of the dreams of *Mein Kampf* just as they were dreamt in the Landsberg prison so many years before.

The draft plans for Operation Barbarossa had been submitted to the Führer on 30 January 1941, ten days after the January Italo-German conversations, and much detailed planning work was gone through in the early days of February. The attack upon Russia was originally to have taken place in the middle of May, but the crushing of Yugoslavia delayed it for about five weeks; by the end of April, while Ribbentrop continued to pronounce denials, Hitler had decided upon the date of 22 June.² The most horrible thing about this latest and largest conspiracy was the deliberate preparation of the atrocities to be perpetrated in Russia. In a German memorandum of 2 May 1941,³ it was stated: '(1) The war can only be continued if all Armed Forces are fed by Russia in the third year of the war. (2) There is no doubt that as a result many millions of people will be starved to death if we take out of the country the things necessary for us.' Mr. Alderman said at the Nuremberg Trial (on 25 November 1945) that there was perhaps never a more sinister sentence written than the second of these. At the same time orders were being drawn up for the total disregard of the normal conventions of war—the Russian campaign was to be a S.S. massacre. Men like Hassell easily gathered this from their friends in key positions, and he was horrified at the supine

¹ Simoni, 1 June 1941.

² Report of Conference with Chief of *Landesverteidigung* section of *Wehrmacht Führungsstab*, 30 Apr. 1941. See *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part 11, p. 240. On 27 Mar. Hitler had told his commanders that 'Barbarossa' would have to be delayed *bis zu vier Wochen*—see 1746-PS

³ See *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part 1, p. 177.

acceptance of such directives by the Wehrmacht as a whole. All through the spring Hitler had felt anxiety as to the extremely independent attitude of Turkey for when it should come to war in the Balkans and Russia; on 18 June a German-Turkish non-aggression pact was suddenly announced and it seemed like the ghost of the German-Russian Pact of 1939. On 15 June, when the farce of Croatia's adherence to the Tripartite Pact was gone through at Venice, Ribbentrop had at last allowed that, thanks to nothing but the Russian concentrations of troops, a Russo-German crisis 'was almost certain'.¹ At last, in the night of 21-22 June, Hitler communicated to his comrade Mussolini that he had taken 'the most serious decision of his life'. His letter on this occasion concluded with the words:

'Since taking this decision I feel my spirit to be once more free. In spite of the sincerity of my efforts to achieve a final *détente*, it has often been very painful to me to march at Russia's side, for it always seemed to me that I was denying my past, my ideas, and my previous undertakings. I am happy now to have liberated myself from this torment.'²

¹ Ciano Minute 15 June 1941. In Dec. 1943, in the prison at Verona, Ciano's memory of this day played him false.

² Hitler to Mussolini, 21 June 1941.

XVII

The New Order

FROM the spring of 1941 until the autumn of 1942 there was a strange paradoxical stability in Europe. Victory seemed to have returned to the Axis, even to Italy. The Russian war brought endless German triumph and advance and further occupation of territory; Hitler was always on the verge of total success. When Japan attacked the United States the new battleground was still farther away, and there was a feeling in Europe that Japanese bellicosity and American resources might merely create another distant deadlock. If Ribbentrop at last dropped his formula of 'The war is already won', he now settled down, in his encounters with Ciano and his lesser vassals, to the slogan 'We cannot lose this war'; it was sometimes suggested by the Germans that a state of war might become permanent.

The Continent, except for the neutral corners which survived to the end, was now entirely subjected to the Axis. The German attack upon Russia was the signal for a fresh avalanche of propaganda about the joys of the New Order which the Axis Powers were creating. Every true European must join in the crusade against the Soviets to defend the civilization of the Continent; this heroic struggle would forge a new European Unity. Ciano was ill when Mussolini visited Hitler at his headquarters at the front at the end of August 1941, and the Italian record of the conversation was presumably made by the Duce himself. 'The Führer's exposition', he noted helplessly, 'was made with order and precision, making the impression of absolute calm and serenity. The Duce judged it opportune to leave the Führer to develop his propositions quite freely';¹ thus again he failed to stem the tide of Hitler's verbosity and only spoke at the second meeting that day. Again the Führer broke in, 'repeating what he had already expressed in the earlier conversation, that he was not fighting for the sake of destruction or prestige but rather . . . to create the basis necessary for the

¹ 'Colloquio del Duce col Führer, 25 Aug 1941 (1)', in *L'Europa verso la catastrofe*. Mussolini saw Hitler at Rastenburg and also visited Kluge and Runstedt at their respective H.Q.

construction of a new European order'.¹ In the letters which Fuhrer and Duce exchanged fairly frequently in this year, for Hitler to indulge in voluptuous accounts of the Russian campaign, there is a great deal of talk of the imminent triumph of 'our' or 'your' and 'my revolution', or sometimes 'the revolution of the Axis'. But what did all this mean? The more one studies the evidence the clearer it becomes that Mussolini by now had no conception in his mind beyond that contained in the only two descriptive adjectives one finds that he uses, 'nationalistic' and 'dynamic'; to the Fuhrer he did not rant against the *bourgeoisie*. Hitler, on the other hand, had always known what he wanted; he had also known that it was seldom or never expedient to put it all into words and it is unlikely that he ever did so to the Duce. It is necessary to distinguish between what he announced that he wanted, which was full of contradictions,² and what in fact he deliberately brought about, which was not.

On 29 December 1941 he wrote Mussolini a long letter to wish him a happy New Year. Already, he said, such blows had been given to Russia that she could never recover, and the recent entry of Japan into the war was among the most decisive events in modern history. He hoped for a long period of peace and reconstruction to follow, which would give great tasks

'to us in the North and North-East, and to you and your people, Duce, in those spaces which once were civilized by Rome.

'Above all, Duce, it often seems to me that human development has only been interrupted for fifteen hundred years and is now about to resume its former character. That destiny should have given to the two of us so eminent a position in this struggle³ binds me year by year more closely to you.'

It was quite serious. He wished, not to safeguard European civilization, but to undo the evolution of fifteen hundred years. He wished to go back to the time of Attila; the Hun ruler, too, had gloried in 'erasing' his enemy's cities. Gibbon likened the Huns of Attila to the Moguls and Tartars.

¹ Ibid (ii).

² Apropos the permission of an anti-Nazi speech by Hans Frank in July 1942 Hassell wrote 'Hitler tut das ganz nach seiner raffinierten Methode des Doppelgeleises, um den Menschen Sand in die Augen zu streuen. Was auch gelingt' Hassell, *op. cit.*, p. 273.

³ Presumably he meant the struggle to bring about this resumption.

'The most casual provocation, the slightest motive of caprice or convenience, often provoked them to involve a whole people in an indiscriminate massacre: and the ruin of some flourishing cities was executed with such unrelenting perseverance, that, according to their own expression, horses might run, without stumbling, over the ground where they had once stood.'¹

Sometimes Hitler or his lieutenants would speak of resuming the mission of the Holy Roman Empire in its pristine glory, but while they longed to play with universalism they desired something far more barbarous than the régime of a Charlemagne. In 1933 Robert Dell² exclaimed in horror to a Nazi acquaintance, 'You have gone back to the tenth century!' and was startled by the simple rejoinder, 'Why not?' But Hitler was more accurate in the expression of his dreams when he wrote to Mussolini of a return to the fifth century, when the Barbarians of Germany and Scythia were overrunning the decadent Empire of Rome—did Mussolini forget that the period Hitler longed to renew was that of a disintegrating Italy?

The strongest external influence upon Hitler had been the doctrine of Nietzsche to whom power and the struggle for power—which meant trampling down the weak—provided the ultimate values. Nietzsche had condemned both Christianity and the ideas of the first French Revolution as the triumph of a slave mentality against which he exhorted all master spirits to rebel; they were to create a new code of the strong, the basis of which must be ruthlessness. 'A ruling race can only arise amid terrible and violent conditions. Problem: where are the barbarians of the twentieth century? Obviously they will only emerge and consolidate themselves after tremendous socialistic upheavals.'³ But Nietzsche's dreams had come to him as professor of classical studies in the humanistic air of Basle; they were Homeric dreams of magnanimous heroes who took risks, and he quarrelled with the monstrous conceptions of Wagner. In the year of Hitler's birth, Nietzsche became permanently mad, and the thought is irresistible that Hitlerism was a form of Nietzsche's madness. In reading Nietzsche it is obvious that Hitler had picked out only what he liked and thought he understood. Far

¹ *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, chapter xxxiv.

² A famous *Manchester Guardian* correspondent of that day.

³ Nietzsche, *Der Mensch*, p. 111.

from escaping from a lower-middle-class and mechanical age, Hitler's master caste was to be built up without taking risks. Many German writers of the Treitschke and the Ludendorff brand had been working up to a doctrine, not of ruthlessness alone, but of total, mechanical ruthlessness; their efforts culminated in the *petit bourgeois* Hitler with his love of machines and his theory of the economy of force.

In order to realize his dreams, Hitler had constructed a human machine. The black-shirted Schutz Staffeln (S.S.) organized by Himmler since 1934 were to be the nucleus of a master caste which was to stamp out stupid *idées fixes* about social justice and human rights. Those who clung to such notions must either be destroyed completely or become the slaves who were required for several purposes: they must work for the masters and they must provide the masters with material upon which to sharpen the teeth of their brutality. Since Hitler's ideology contained a crude eugenic element which was part of his tendency to equate men with machines and the study of medicine with military science, the slaves could fulfil both these functions and a third at the same time—that of supplying human material for physiological experiment. But the aim of all this could only be revealed to a small *élite* of bold supermen—only a very few even among the masters—partly because only these few were sufficiently 'heroic' or degraded not to flinch, and partly because one of the weapons in the glorious fight of the strong against the weak was to demoralize by the suggestion of infinitely terrible but undefined possibilities. The Nazi concentration camps¹ were, in fact, an integral and essential part of Hitler's State,² for the herding of the slaves at the mercy of the S.S. masters in these places about which no one who had not entered them knew the truth was only too effectual. Those who refused to be good Nazis lived on the threshold of hell with the words 'Abandon hope all ye who enter here' in the forefront of their minds. And yet there was little against which one could struggle; it was part of the plan that no outcry could be effectually raised because the Nazis could reply, 'But this is just some-

¹ The term 'concentration camp' is indiscriminately used for internment camps with no ulterior purpose and for the Nazi 'KZ' which should be sharply distinguished from all others.

² See E. Kogon, *Der S.S. Staat*, quoted above, which is probably the best book on the subject.

one's imagination or the propaganda of the Jews—you have no proof.' And the nameless terror was complete in the absence of martyrs; in February 1938 Hitler told Schuschnigg contemptuously¹ that the Austrian régime had made the fatal error of creating martyrs, and a month later Schuschnigg himself, who, one may say without cynicism, was cut out for the role, disappeared too completely to discredit Hitler by his sufferings.

The S.S. system was disappointing, however, so long as it could only be applied to Germany, for there was a surfeit of supermen and a shortage of slaves. There were only the German Jews and a relatively small number of very brave Germans to victimize. The year 1938 made available the Austrian and Czech Jews and a good many priests and patriotic Czechs. Then 1939 brought the Poles as victims and 1940 the Norwegians and Danes and Dutch and Belgians and French and Rumanians, and 1941 the rest of the inhabitants of the Balkan peninsula and the peoples of western Russia. This was much more consistent with Hitler's aspirations. He had never been a nationalist in the Mazzinian sense, for that involved a recognition of the equal rights of other nations. Racialism could be interpreted to extol the Germans at the other races' expense and to provide a case for anti-Semitism, but on the other hand it involved one in fearful anthropological complications, and the Nordic brothers in Scandinavia and Holland were sadly unappreciative of the superior caste status which was offered to them. Essentially Hitler was a paranoiac type who cared for nothing but power and the struggle for power and more power; obviously he preferred power over a continent to power merely over his own rather arbitrarily chosen race. Everywhere he found a few Quislings as recruits for his master spirits, or in other words for his criminal gangs, and above all he found whole populations to swell the ranks of the slaves. The Führer's faithful apostle, Himmler, declared to his followers: 'What happens to a Russian or to a Czech does not interest me in the slightest. What the nations can offer in the way of good blood of our type we will take, if necessary by kidnapping their children and raising them here with us. Whether nations live in prosperity or starve to death interests me only in so far as we need them as slaves for

¹ Schuschnigg, *op. cit.*

our Kultur. otherwise it is of no interest to me. . . .'¹ At one time or another Nazi experts wrote endless volumes explaining the legal and economic significance of Hitler's New Order. Quite simply, however, it amounted to the establishment of a very cruel slavery on an unprecedented scale, combined as it was with the concentration of the control of industry and trade in German hands.

Total war embarked upon with inadequate resources vastly increased the demand for labour, and the occupation of Europe made it possible to draft a stream of foreign slaves into the Reich. For that is what not only the prisoners of war, but also the 'freely' enrolled foreign workers, became.² They were carefully divided into categories, of course: on the lowest plane were the Jews and fairly near them the Slavs and the 'renegades' or 'Communists' of other races, while for a long time the French and the Dutch were regarded as the super-slaves. Food was distributed accordingly, Jews and Slavs being kept as near to starvation as was useful. It has been seen that the invasion of the U.S.S.R. had been planned with the idea of 'liquidating' a considerable proportion of the population in order that others should have their food. Consequently the Russian prisoners were often deliberately starved to death. Occasionally they were incited to cannibalism in order that propaganda might exploit *their* barbarism: Göring seems to have boasted to Ciano of this when Ciano came to Berlin to sign the renewal of the Tripartite Pact in November 1941.³

In a country which has never been subjected to S.S. rule, its meaning is difficult to comprehend. It is perhaps worth repeating that the Axis occupation of Europe, so far as Hitler and Himmler could shape it, meant the suppression of every human right and personal freedom. It meant the suppression of all accurate information. It meant pillage by the privileged Germans which in turn created dearth and induced black marketing and inflation. Some of the French or Belgians were enticed to work in Germany by golden promises (which were broken), but again many a chance passer-by in the occupied countries

¹ Speech to S.S. Generals at Posen, 4 Oct. 1943, see *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part ii, p. 290.

² The Nazi leader responsible for all this was Sauckel (*Generalbevollmächtigter für den Arbeitseinsatz*).

³ Ciano Diary, 24-6 Nov. 1941.

was simply impressed when the S.S. cordoned off a street or a cinema. If anyone protested or resisted he was liable to find himself in a Nazi concentration camp or in a Gestapo prison. In both these places he would be deliberately tortured to supply information, but also so that his torturers might perfect their own cruelty: further, he might at any moment be executed as a hostage in reply to alleged insubordination of which he knew nothing. An act of defiance against some German soldier in any small centre might lead to the village being burnt to the ground: often the women and children were burnt alive in the church while the men went off into slavery. After Hitler had enrolled the Vlassov White¹ Russians to fight with him against Stalin, the Germans would sometimes bring some of them along: in a French village which had sheltered Gaullist Partisans near the Swiss frontier, the German soldiers first arrested the men and took the supplies they required for themselves, then they let loose their inebriated Russians to rape and loot as they chose, the German officer in charge remarking to the French lorry-drivers who were forced to look on, 'You see what the Russians are like.' (One of these French spectators afterwards remarked that the Germans had nevertheless seemed to him more wicked than the Russians 'parce qu'ils sont plus conscients'.) Thus 'horses might run without stumbling' thanks to the German will to power and organization of slaves. It was indeed the kingdom of Nietzsche on earth. The supermen and masters had freed themselves from traditional morality; they lived by cruelty, in which they gloried, and by its scientific application. But the slaves as a whole retained their astonishing worship of freedom and right. Though occasional members of 'inferior' races were promoted to S.S. status, very few others accepted the offers with which they were to have been bribed. Weakened by suffering, many of them defied their well-fed torturers. They were not impressed by the mastery of force.

Mussolini often boasted of the Nietzsche he had read, and when to flatter Hitler he took up anti-Semitism he wrote the Jews off with Nietzschean phrases about their slave mentality.² But nowhere is there evidence that he thought out methods by which to put Nietzsche into practice or even that he contem-

¹ In the political, not the geographical, sense.

² Nietzsche himself called anti-Semites *schlechtweggekommen*, or failures.

plated the possibility. Of the Italians who were sent to Yugoslavia, certain Blackshirt units behaved with unsystematic savagery in Dalmatia,¹ while the rest displayed a varying combination of corruption and humanity. By 1941 the average Italian had had his last hopes of Fascism destroyed by the German Alliance. His profoundly humane inheritance through the ages, his fundamental belief in human rights, made him feel ashamed: Italian soldiers on leave from Yugoslavia or Greece or, later, back from Russia, constantly said, 'We have no right to be there.' Italian peasants, especially from southern Italy, felt very close to the Slav peasantry in their understanding of poverty. And then, while Hitler believed in the economy of force in order to be the more forceful, the Italians instinctively looked for ways of avoiding the use of force because they always prefer to win by intelligence, to intrigue, be political, or what you will. Mussolini often despaired of the Italians, Ciano tells us—undoubtedly they had less than no joy in struggle and destruction for their own sake, the German *raison d'être*. No one embraces an ideal more whole-heartedly than the Italian, but once disillusioned he is easily demoralized. In the Second World War few Italians found any inspiration until it came to resisting the Germans in Italy itself; the Second Italian Army in Yugoslavia was demoralized from the start.

Thus where the Italians had any place at all in the New Order it was always the same thing. The Germans as a whole were in earnest in intending to establish a palpable domination, and their leaders were in earnest in intending German domination to effect Nietzsche's inversion of morality as interpreted—one might say mechanized—by Hitler. Mussolini, who had originally understood Nietzsche better, was dragged in Hitler's wake now in uncomprehending imitation. The Italians as a people were either not serious about the Axis crusade or utterly opposed to it. Everywhere, in Yugoslavia, in Greece, or in France, they had to contend with stronger initial prejudices against them. Besides this they were poorer—worse equipped and grubby—making less impression, their rations were scarcely half those of the Germans and they had less to give away. Slowly, nevertheless, it came to be realized that they were

¹ There was some deportation to Italy of Slovenes and Croats from villages on the coast which were to be Italianized.

humane, that one could put an individual case to them, that they were naturally kind, and, above all, that they detested the systematic cruelty of the Germans as much as did its Serb and French victims. If Italian soldiers heard cries for water from Jews packed suffocatingly into cattle-trucks on their last journey to the East, it was difficult to prevent them from going to the sufferers' help. No wonder the Germans and the Duce in his Germanophile moods despaired of them. Were they not the children, *par excellence*, of that traditional morality which Nietzsche had condemned, the morality of the weak?

After the campaign in April 1941 the division of the spoils in the Balkans caused more than the usual tension between Rome and Berlin. Although the Balkan peninsula had so often been solemnly acclaimed as Italian *Lebensraum*, Hitler dictated the new frontiers here as elsewhere, with the sole exception of those between Italy and Croatia for which it suited him that Italy should be responsible. When Ciano went to Vienna to meet Ribbentrop in the second half of April, he was presented (on 21 April) with orders with regard to Slovenia and 'strong recommendations' with regard to Macedonia. It was curtly conveyed to him on 22 April that the line Hitler had drawn incorporating Slovenia in Germany to within three kilometres from Ljubljana could not be discussed; Italy might do what she liked with the rest of Slovenia. With regard to Macedonia the Fuhrer had promised all ex-Yugoslav Macedonia to the King of Bulgaria and felt favourable towards his claim to Salonica; he sympathized with Italy's claim to the Kossovo district for Albania, but must keep Mitrovica in German-occupied Serbia owing to the existence of German-owned mines there—'the Fuhrer makes a personal appeal to the Duce to recognize his particular interest in this question'.¹ The allotment of the Bačka and a little territory on the River Mur to the Hungarians was not mentioned, nor any reference made to their former authority in Croatia.

As for Croatia and Montenegro, Italy was to do exactly what she pleased. Montenegro did not seem politically important. The Queen of Italy² eagerly championed her poor relations as

¹ Ciano Minute, 22 Apr. 1941. Arguments over Mitrovica continued for some time.

² Daughter of the last King of Montenegro.

candidates for the throne, but they all preferred their poverty, and after various delays and expedients Italy sent a military governor there.¹ His task, however, became one of prime political importance, for the forbidding mountains of Montenegro were the favourite refuge of the Yugoslav Partisans, the first actively military resisters inside Axis Europe. Croatia was a very different matter, for it had constituted for many years a political problem of the greatest delicacy. The Croats had an age-long grievance not unlike the Irish: they felt themselves to be a coherent and civilized community from which national independence had been unjustly withheld for the last thousand years. Before 1914 they had protested against their subjection to Hungary, sometimes demonstrating with considerable success in Vienna that Zagreb merited more confidence from the imperial authorities than Budapest. When the Habsburgs collapsed, Yugoslav² impulses, long operative in certain intellectual circles, turned the eyes of Croatia towards Belgrade, but a Yugoslav federation was dreamt of, not a unitary state. Once the latter had been set up by King Alexander Karageorgević, feeling between Croats and Serbs, supposedly fraternal before 1914, became exceedingly bitter; it was this which Mussolini had always sought to exploit. In order to do so it has been seen that he had offered protection to Pavelić and Kvaternik and other Ustaša or anti-Serb terrorists,³ and it has been seen that Pavelić was waiting in Italy while Yugoslavia was destroyed. The Germans would have preferred Kvaternik to be Leader of Croatia, but Mussolini insisted on Pavelić.⁴

For at least three reasons the Croatian question was more delicate than Mussolini or Ciano seemed to know. In the first place Pavelić was as unpopular in Croatia as any Serb because he was the protégé of Italy. The Croats regarded Dalmatia as purely Croatian and some of them had considered the only good thing in the state of Yugoslavia to be that it had united Croatia-Slavonia with Dalmatia. Italy's Dalmatian claims and her presence at Fiume and Zara were intensely resented, and the Croats joined with the Slovenes in indignation over the Fascist oppression of the Slovene and Croat minority in post-Versailles Italy. Secondly, Pavelić represented next to nothing in Croatia.

¹ General Pirzio Biroli—see below.

³ See Chapters III, XVI.

² Yugoslav means Southern Slav.

⁴ See Kordt, *op. cit.*, p. 288.

Politically and socially the Croats were a remarkably homogeneous people; it was usually estimated that about ninety per cent. of them supported the Croat Peasant Party, which had been inspired by the Radić brothers and, after the death of Stjepan Radić, led by Maček. The Croat Peasant Party was based upon a traditional village co-operative organization, and, being pacifist in doctrine, rejected Pavelić out of hand. Thirdly, Pavelić and Kvaternik came from among the pro-Austrian followers of a certain Dr. Frank who had played some part before 1914; like so many retrograde Balkan politicians who had had Legitimist connexions at one time or another, they accepted Hitler for what he longed to be, heir to the Habsburgs he had hated so much. They, and especially Kvaternik, preferred to take orders, therefore, from Hitler rather than from Mussolini, and they encouraged journalism intended to show that the Croats were of Gothic, not Slavonic, descent.

The Axis Powers announced themselves, of course, as the liberators at long last of Croatia, and the new Croatian State was given all Bosnia and Hercegovina despite their mixed Serb and Croat population. At first Italy claimed the whole of Dalmatia and it is interesting to find that Hitler, for whom Dalmatia would always be Austrian,¹ instructed Ribbentrop to raise no objection to this in his interview with Ciano on 22 April.² He was equally content that King Victor Emmanuel's worthless cousin, the Duke of Spoleto, should be nominated as King of Croatia. Oddly enough Pavelić accepted this plan and came to Rome for an *ad hoc* ceremony on 18 May, but conditions in the new kingdom were never such as to tempt the Duke to mount his throne. On 7 May Pavelić had met Mussolini and Ciano at Monfalcone,³ and there he persuaded them to allow Croatia to touch the Adriatic coast at Senj, and at Dubrovnik and to the north of it; there was a tussle over Split (Spalato), the loss of which, the Poglavnik⁴ said, would overthrow his régime, but after the usual giving way to his visitor of the moment, the Duce was persuaded to stand firm.⁵

Meanwhile German troops remained in Croatia. Germans

¹ Having been a province of Cisleithania, i.e. Austria, as distinct from Hungary, before 1914.

² Ciano Minute, 22 Apr. 1941.

³ See Ciano Diary.

⁴ Croatian for leader.

⁵ The new Croatia came close up to the south of Split.

soon gained control of its new army and police. As in every country they occupied, they stripped it neatly and sent all the plunder home. Further, Hitler was determined to control the bauxite mines and the railway lines which ran from Ljubljana and Vienna and Budapest to Zagreb and Belgrade; Ciano observed with his transient lucidity that Croatia 'nella mente di Ribbentrop [in other words of Hitler] è considerato uno Stato molto vicino se non già addirittura facente parte del sistema politico-economico del Reich'.¹ Marras knew that Germany intended to keep Croatia in her own military control and did what he could to fight Jodl about it.² But Hitler understood the intricacy of the Croatian question very well. If it discredited the Italians too much Germany would be 'forced' to intervene in the Adriatic; if the Duke of Spoleto were involved this might provide a welcome lever against the House of Savoy. Meanwhile the possibilities of intrigue were immense; they might be made to preface any *coup* he fancied, indeed, they might easily lead him in Slovenia's name to Trieste. Fiume had been Hungarian before 1914 and Hitler had fanned the flames of Hungarian revisionism in this direction before now;³ on 21 April Ribbentrop brought the matter up to Ciano and he certainly let the Magyars know that he was doing so. To crown this edifice of tension and friction Hitler appointed the Italophobe Austrian General, Glaise-Horstenau, who had once smoothed the Führer's path to Vienna, to be Commander of the German forces in Croatia. To him the Führer explained that Italy must have all her greed satisfied in order to hold her.⁴ On 15 June, at Venice, Pavelić signed Croatia's adherence to the Tripartite Pact. 'Valore politico dell' evento, eguale a zero', wrote Ciano in his Diary.⁵ It was on this occasion that Ribbentrop had made clear to Ciano that war with Russia was imminent.

Face to face with an Axis occupation the Balkan peoples had certain advantages compared with western Europe. Hitler, in his contempt for them, made few efforts to blind them by seduction. They were accustomed to tyranny and oppression though nothing in their history had been so systematic and

¹ Ciano Minute, 21 Apr. 1941 (= 'in Ribbentrop's mind is considered as a state very near to, if not directly forming part of, the politico-economic system of the Reich').

² Simoni, 28 Apr. 1941.

³ Hassell, op. cit., p. 197.

⁴ Ibid., p. 204.

⁵ 15 June 1941.

therefore so merciless. And then the Slav peoples, Serbs, Montenegrins, and—in spite of the Germanophile policy of their rulers at testing times—Bulgars and Croats felt a filial mysticism towards Russia, retrograde or revolutionary.¹ Russia, according to their popular traditions, had ever tried to help them, thwarted though she was by evil, alien, in fact German, forces—for what did they know of Disraeli or Salisbury? Now again in 1941 Russia was their hope. When it became clear that Hitler had failed to break her in the two or three months he had said he would require, this hope became something substantial, no longer a remote dream. And then the fourth Balkan advantage came into play. It was impossible to subdue this barren and mountainous country-side with anything like total effect. Much of the Yugoslav army had melted away but it had not been destroyed, and now small groups were in hiding wherever there were mountains and especially in Montenegro; there were also indomitable fragments of the Greek Army who concealed themselves among the mountains of Greece.

Until the end of 1941, however, a horrible chaos seemed to prevail in what until April had been Yugoslavia, and it was only towards the end of the year that the shadow of a pattern emerged. In the portion which Germany had annexed, the fate of Poland was repeated: the educated classes in particular were condemned to a brutal annihilation since they would be most likely to resist the role of a slave-gang to which the Slovenes were condemned. In Italian Slovenia, things began fairly well; it was a clerical country and the faith which the S.S. were determined to stamp out was readily accepted by the Italian authorities in Ljubljana who were sickened by the news from the immediate north. Serbia, Hitler vowed—strange champion

¹ Much of what I had learnt previously about Yugoslavia and am trying to express here was confirmed to me by a series of letters written from Bosnia to relatives in Switzerland during the war. Many of these letters were written by an elderly Serb peasant who was evidently the scribe for his village; they all date from 1942 or 1943. 'We have nothing against Stalin', this old man wrote on New Year's Day 1943, 'rather we should rejoice if the Russian Army were to approach, for we know that Russia is the mother of our people. . . . Our Četnici were compelled to join with the Italians because the Partisans are stronger. The same thing happened in Serbia. . . .' The writer said he was too old to be either a Četnik or a Partisan; he did not think resistance worth while, for it only meant that one's village was destroyed by the Germans. Once he wrote of the Italians that they took Serbs into their hospitals as well as Croats, for they said the Serbs were human beings too.

of Francis Ferdinand though he was—should pay for Sarajevo and for the indomitable spirit its people had shown, and only its subjection to the Germans could ensure this. At first, in spite of the terrifying action of the occupying authorities, no Serb or Slovene Quisling could be found, but then in August 1941 Nedić accepted this dubious role.

Scandalous wholesale massacres of Serbs were carried out by the Hungarians in the Bačka and by Pavelić's Ustaši, especially in Bosnia; many Jews, including refugees from Germany and Italy, were their fellow victims. What seemed like the wholesale destruction of the Serbs and the Slovenes made some of their leaders fear their literal extermination and convinced them that any compromise that saved lives could be justified. The first groups which continued active resistance to the Axis forces had been followers of Serb military chiefs like Mihailović who were Pan-Serb and fiery supporters of the tradition of the last active Tsarist in Europe, Alexander Karageorgević. This king, who had built up a typically corrupt 'Balkan' tyranny, had split Serb loyalties, and the sympathy of the bulk of the people had become all the more Russophile now that Moscow was a symbol for social justice in their minds. The attitude of the Croats in April 1941 and subsequent Ustaša atrocities seemed to justify the Serb chauvinists, but then they lost support. They consisted very largely, after all, of Četnici, a Fascist militia *à la serbe*, men who had terrorized their own peasantry and, of course, that of Croatia for years, and using the argument of the danger of extermination Mihailović gradually showed signs of preferring the Axis Powers before Russia and Communism. There were clashes probably before the end of 1941 between his followers and Russophile groups which called themselves Partisans, like the Russian fighters behind the German lines.

Now the followers of Mihailović had had to leave at least their heavy arms behind them at the time of Yugoslavia's defeat. The Italians very soon rescued Italian prisoners from them by giving them arms in exchange; it seemed more reasonable to them to save their fellows rather than to fight an unjustified war at all seriously. The responsible officers also thought it more reasonable to use the Četnici to fight against the more revolutionary Partisans; let these people kill each other in the

mountains if they chose rather than that Italians should die. By 1942 the Italians had contrived to reconcile the Četnici and the Ustaši, the Serb and Croat terrorists who had once vowed to exterminate one another; in June 1942 at Doboi, for instance, a pact of alliance was signed by the Italians with representatives of both these groups who thereby undertook to fight with the Italians against the Partisans; this was one of several similar agreements. To many of the best Yugoslav types, Serb, Croat, or Slovene, such pacts were infamous, because Italy was their national enemy and because she was Fascist. It was not very long before groups of the Četnici accepted bribes, often food, from Germans as well,¹ and this hardened the others' determination to resist them; stories from the East made clear that Hitler was the enemy. Maček had been interned by the Ustaši in his home at Kupinec and was entirely cut off from the outside world. But gradually more and more of his followers went off to the mountains and joined the Partisans under their at first mysterious leader, Tito, who was a Croat himself. Part of the new Croat Army melted away in the same direction. Thus Tito became something of a Yugoslav national symbol, for he redeemed the Croats in Serb and Montenegrin eyes. The Yugoslavs felt reunited now in fighting for Russia against the Germans and Italians in alliance with their own Fascist renegades.

From the beginning of 1942 it had become clear that the Pavelić régime had nothing but a diminishing number of Ustaša thugs and an increasing number of foreign bayonets behind it. Even the Bosnian Mohammedans, who had originally been among its warmest supporters, began to go over to its enemies. Kvaternik blamed Pavelić for staking too much on the Italian card and listened gladly to German hints to work for a German Protectorate, Bohemian style, in Croatia. Early in October Pavelić reacted sharply; he consulted the Italian Minister and then drove Kvaternik out.

Thereupon more German troops arrived in Croatia, the German S.S. took charge of Maček, and Maček's Party was suppressed. In effect Croatia was now ruled by a young protégé of Ribbentrop's called Kasche, who had been German Minister

¹ The village writer quoted on p. 274 (note 1) reported this; letters also came to Switzerland from Četnici themselves, boasting of it, because 'one was well fed if one went with the Germans'.

which it gave rise. In Greece and in France the position was a little simplified by the greater homogeneity of the inhabitants. It should be noted that the theory of Italy's free hand in the Balkans was honoured by a nominally Italian occupation of Greece except in the area handed over to the Bulgars. From the beginning, however, the Germans had justified Ciano's *mot* when he referred to the occupation of Greece as a *mezzadria*, implying that the Germans were its masters while the Italians received a share of the proceeds for doing the work; in private, the Germans at first missed few opportunities of patting the Greeks on the back for their valorous resistance to Italy. In France again, though the Italians in June 1940 had seemed to be unjustifiably greedy, they had in fact only occupied their fifty-kilometre strip—roughly from Grenoble to Menton—while the German occupation, as ever, overflowed its boundaries into Vichy and Italian territory.

In July 1942, on his way back from Libya (where he had arrived a second time to witness an Italian advance degenerate into a standstill), Mussolini stopped at Athens. There he was represented by Pellegrino Ghigi, one of Italy's abler diplomats, who has already appeared in this history of the Axis in Vienna just before the Anschluss.¹ Ghigi was horrified by the folly of German ruthlessness in Greece, for which the Italians were technically responsible, and he arranged that the heads of the collaborating Greek Government should expound their troubles to the Duce. Immediately after his return to Rome Mussolini wrote Hitler a letter carefully pruned of all sentiment but a letter of genuine concern.² He stated that the condition of Greece was catastrophic—'last winter 24,000 people died of starvation. . . .' 'I prezzi sono saliti alle stelle.' In the meantime the food situation had slightly improved, but the financial outlook was becoming worse.

'In my opinion, Führer, there is only one remedy: to reduce the occupation costs. . . . As far as Italy is concerned I told the head of the Greek Government, that I am ready to reduce them to the absolutely indispensable minimum. . . . The crisis is apparent in the aspect of the city and the physical condition of the population appears critical.

¹ See Chapter VI, p. 91 above and Donosti, op. cit., p. 272 et seq.

² Mussolini to Hitler, 22 July 1942.

'I will not remind you of what Greece has meant in the history of the world, I will only state that it is in the interest of the Axis that Greece should be orderly and tranquil, rejecting London's suggestions and giving us no anxiety.'

Though this letter from the theoretical master of Greece was obsequious in its tone, it was genuinely insistent, for the Duce emphasized that there was not a moment to be lost.

Hitler's reply written on 4 August was completely negative; naturally he shared Mussolini's worries with regard to Greece. Thanks to Mussolini's competent advisers there a fundamental issue had been raised between Duce and Fuhrer. It has been seen that all along a certain respect for the Czechs or the Poles or for any other nation had survived the Fascist corrosion of Italian policy. Rome had expected Hitler to leave post-Munich Czecho-Slovakia¹ in peace. In the autumn of 1939 Rome had wished for the recognition of a reduced Polish State. Still, after the events of 1941, the Italians could not overcome a certain regard for other human beings and the societies they had formed or might wish to form. The most extraordinary thing of all was that they could never quite believe that Hitler was determined to deny all traditional rights and reverse the morality which induced a regard for them. In the spring of 1942, when he visited his friends the Bruckmanns, Hitler was thoroughly pleased with himself and boasted of the S.S. as the bravest of the brave because they suffered from 'no Christian inhibitions. He would see to it that all Germans were cured of such feelings in the future.'²

All through the war the question of France provided the strangest aspect of the relationship between Mussolini and Hitler. It was the exception which proved the rule, for in this case the Duce constantly pressed for a more uncompromising policy. While Mussolini believed that Hitler was betraying him with France, in this one case Hitler seems to have kept his word to Italy. 'He [the Fuhrer] can in no circumstances prejudice our relations with Italy by making concessions to France. He cannot allow our relations with Italy to deteriorate.' This is noted by Raeder after a secret conference with Hitler at the *Wolfsschanze* headquarters near Rastenburg on 25 July 1941;³

¹ After Munich Czechoslovakia became Czecho-Slovakia.

² Hassell, *op. cit.*, p. 276.

³ *Fuhrer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1941.

it is only one example of many secretly recorded statements to the same effect.¹ This perplexing fidelity on the part of the Fuhrer contributed to the débâcle of Axis Mediterranean strategy for which he continued to blame Franco.²

If the Duce was wrong to distrust Hitler with regard to North Africa he was right when he said the French nation was basically hostile to the Axis. It is easy to assume in this and analogous cases that the French only waited to be on the winning side; it is more exact to state that as Germany's military prospect darkened it became possible for essential French elements to assert themselves against the S.S. It has been seen that in 1940 some French leaders showed an abject submissiveness to the conquerors, and it is certain that men like Laval were sincere when they expressed enthusiasm for French participation in the Axis New Order; Laval remained faithful to this hope in spite of perpetual disappointments over occupation costs, French prisoners and workers in Germany, and the many questions at issue with the Germans.

By the end of 1940 there were already anti-German leaflets which were passed from hand to hand in Paris. One of them ended as follows:

'L'aigle allemand marche pompeusement et c'est le pas de l'oie. Partant en guerre contre l'Angleterre, il chante avec ostentation. Et c'est peut-être le chant du cygne . . .

'Tu grognes parce qu'ils t'obligent à être rentré chez toi a vingt-trois heures précises. Innocent, tu n'as pas compris que c'était pour te permettre d'écouter la radio anglaise.

'Tu en as déjà vu de toutes les couleurs. Les verts, les gris, les noirs se sont présentés les premiers. C'était les militaires. Puis sont venus les moutardes avec au bras une bague rouge comme en ont les cigares: c'était les militants.

'Voici venir les sans-couleurs. Ils arrivent par paquets avec leurs petites femmes. A les voir tu jurerais des civils, vêtus de pacifiques vestons, de paisibles jupons, ils logent dans ta maison, écoutent à ta porte, épient tes gestes, dénoncent tes propos.

'Ils sont insonores. Aussi quand ils marchent près de toi, n'entends-tu pas ce fameux bruit de bottes qui, en te faisant dresser l'oreille, te ferme automatiquement la bouche.

'Méfie-toi de tous. Aussi de toutes.

¹ See numerous examples in Ciano's Minutes, Hitler's fairly severe letter to Pétain of 10 Nov. 1941, and especially Hassell, *op. cit.*, p. 223.

² See Simoni, 9 Nov. 1942, for Hitler's outburst against Franco that day.

'En prévision des gaz, on t'a fait suer sous un groin de caoutchouc et pleurer dans des chambres d'épreuve. Tu souris maintenant de ces précautions. Tu es satisfait d'avoir sauvé tes poumons. Sauras-tu maintenant préserver ton cœur et ton cerveau?

'Ne vois-tu pas qu'ils ont réussi à vicier l'atmosphère que tu respire, à polluer les sources auxquelles tu crois pouvoir encore te désaltérer, à dénaturer le sens des mots dont tu prétends encore te servir?

'Voici venue l'heure de la véritable *Défense passive*.'

The French had surely understood what Hitler wished to do. Inside France, now, they began to resist him with heart and head. For them the idea of the superman was bad because it was stupid—had not Nietzsche himself known that it ended in self-destruction?

In France the Germans were face to face with a paradox of their history. Nietzsche, the German mind unchained, at one moment made efforts to despise French eroticism, at the next bowed down before the lucidity of the French mind. Was Hitler—more logical than Nietzsche in his contempt for the intellect—himself not immune from the Circe-like spells of France? Perhaps he had hoped to out-fascinate the fascinating. On 29 December 1941 he still wrote to Mussolini that he did not wish to go too far lest France might recognize her European obligations after all. But the French were silent—*le silence de la mer*—and the Germans were shaken by the silence of France.¹

The French resisted the Germans and resisted Vichy and Laval. They did not resist the Italians. At first they despised them.² But the sympathy of the soldiers of the very Duce who declared that all Frenchmen were Gaullistes and demanded that France be taught the lessons of defeat was with the French. When the maquis fighters collected here and there Italian sympathy sometimes extended to them. The French and the Italians were both the children of the old morality; where the French emphasized *cerveau*, the Italians perhaps put *cuore* first. Above all the Italians in France caused particular annoyance to Hitler and Ribbentrop on account of their 'laxity' with regard to the

¹ Cf. Ciano Diary, 19–20 Dec. 1942, where he marvels at German susceptibility to French *charme*, even Laval's.

² The French attitude was illustrated by their attempt to acknowledge only the Germans as their conquerors—see the question of the lorries recorded in the Schmidt Minute of the Duce–Ribbentrop meeting on 13 May 1941.

Jews. A high proportion of Jews of various nationalities had collected in Vichy France and they sometimes escaped internment and all that it might mean rather through the help of the Italian, than thanks to the Vichy, authorities. On 24 August 1942 the German police in Paris complained to the German Embassy there of the unequivocally 'pro-Jewish' attitude of the Italian Consulate-General. At the end of the year the Italian Consul-General in Nice refused to allow any Jews to leave the Italian zone, with the excuse that they might then disseminate anti-Axis propaganda. Early in 1943 the Prefect of the Alpes-Maritimes was therefore able to complain to Laval that he could not organize the transportation of the Jews from south-east France to the concentration camps to which Hitler and Laval had agreed to send them. The S.S. chief at Marseille was complaining at the same time that the Italians protected Jews of every nationality. They allowed them to live unlabelled and were very friendly with them, 'creating the impression of a big difference between the German and the Italian point of view'.¹

By about this time a consciousness was creeping into many minds in the Axis countries of the real significance of Hitler's New Order. It is ludicrous for Germans to claim that they were not aware of it, unless they add that they were determined not to be. Many a German soldier on leave from the Russian front or the other occupied countries had a tale of horror to tell, though the most terrible details were supposed to be reserved for the *élite*. When the Germans first arrived in the Ukraine there was certainly feeling there against Moscow, and men like Schulenburg, who had been Ambassador to the U.S.S.R., urged a politic generosity in the granting of some show of autonomy to Ukrainians, Georgians, and other separable groups;² German propaganda had, after all, attacked Russia, as it had formerly fulminated against Czechoslovakia, as a *Nationalitätenstaat*. But Rosenberg, who had had his appointment as Regional Commissar for the *Ostland* drawn up in April 1941,³ was determined not to be cheated of the exercise of his tyranny, and Koch and

¹ Extracts from this material were published in the *Corriere d'Informazione*, 27-8 July 1946. See also Goebbels Diary, 13 Dec. 1942. 'The Italians are extremely lax in the treatment of the Jews.'

² Simoni, 28 Mar. 1942.

³ See *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings* part II p. 240.

Sauckel went to the East to organize the new slavery:¹ all of them became the tools of the S.S. State.

In August 1942 Hassell noted in his Diary:

'Very strained situation in the occupied territories, thanks to the evil Party administration. Particularly in Bohemia after Heydrich's fearful and bloody Reign of Terror. The two obliterated places, where all the men were shot, the women deported and the children taken off to be compulsorily trained, have provided Allied propaganda with glowing symbols. The same thing has now happened in Norway. In France, too, the greatest tension prevails and draconic measures are constantly taken. In Poland terrible things continue; it is like a nightmare and makes one red with shame.'²

¹ See DeWitt C. Poole, as above. Erich Koch had been Gauleiter of East Prussia and was now appointed as a Reich Commissar in the East.

² Hassell, *op. cit.*, pp. 272-3.

XVIII

Italy Rebels

FROM the autumn of 1941 signs multiplied to indicate the transformation of Italy from an Axis Partner into another occupied country of slaves. The Germans by turns suspected and subjected her more completely from this time. When Bottai visited Germany in October 1941, the German Minister of Education, Rust, gave things away badly after a good deal of drink at a banquet at Weimar, for he insisted that when Hitler had done with Stalin he would clear away Mussolini too;¹ even earlier than this Hassell noted that General Milch had said Mussolini no longer had anyone behind him.² When Ciano visited the Führer's headquarters at the end of October Hitler, however, talked all doubts away. The gossip-mongers, he declared, were an international gang who spoke ill of anyone. In Germany only such people doubted Italy.³ And yet when Mussolini wrote to Hitler about ten days later, lamenting the shortage of raw materials in Italy which reduced his industrial production by half, he found it necessary to say that if Italy could contribute more, it would be the best answer to the rumours that Italy was seeking to make a separate peace.

As the war went on in Libya it became clear that the question was one of ships and oil to transport the soldiers and their arms. By now Italy was living from hand to mouth for oil, which she could only obtain as German largess, whether it came from Rumania or the Reich. Her military dependence was advertised, not only by the acceptance of Rommel, but by the special appointment of Rintelen, German Military Attaché in Rome, to the headquarters of the Italian Army,⁴ and later by the arrival of Kesselring as 'Commander-in-Chief, South'. Less public but a great deal more sinister was the information Ciano received from the Italian Secret Intelligence people (the S.I.M.) about the German 'cells' which were being established in the chief Italian cities.⁵ At much the same time the Italian Embassy

¹ Simoni, 5 Oct. 1941.

² Hassell, *op. cit.*, p. 223.

³ Ciano Report to Duce, 26 Oct. 1941.

⁴ Mussolini to Hitler, 24 July 1941.

⁵ Ciano Diary, 25 Sept. 1941. Certainly S.S., rather than regular army, activity.

in Berlin was informed of a plan for the complete occupation of Italy; the S.S. under Dollmann were to 'suppress' the King and the Prince of Piedmont and hand over such authority as remained to Farinacci.¹ At the time this information seemed too fantastic to be true, but subsequent events and the documents which have come to light since then suggest that it was perfectly exact.

A disastrous aspect of the Axis relationship may be referred to under the heading of manpower. It has been seen that Mussolini thrust Italian aeroplanes upon Hitler to take part in the bombardments of Britain, but it was Hitler who asked Mussolini, in his letter of 21 June 1941, what he could contribute to the attack upon Russia. As usual the Duce was only too eager that the Italians should 'show up'. In a memorandum for his *Comando Supremo* on 24 July he insisted that a second Italian Army must be added to the one already on its way to Russia. 'We cannot be less on the spot than Slovakia and we need to get out of Germany's debt.'² This was the beginning of a long and tragic story. The Italian Army leaders were nearly all opposed to the project and Marras fought hard to prevent its being carried out. But Mussolini had his way and the wretched Italian soldiers were sent off with most inadequate equipment to face the rigours of the Russian front,³ when they were soon to be needed much nearer home. They were still trickling back to Italy at the end of 1946 and later.

When the Duce clamoured for raw materials as he was bound increasingly to do, whether in August 1939 or in December 1940 or July 1941, the answer became every time more peremptory: We will send you some of your requirements in return for the sending of Italian labour to Germany. Mussolini resented the implication—as he felt—that Italians could only work but not fight, and he would always have preferred to send soldiers. In the autumn of 1941 the often scandalous treatment of the Italian working men in Germany⁴ was reported to Rome by an Italian official who had found that the brother heroes inspired by the Duce for nearly twenty years were in

¹ Simoni, 5 Oct. 1941.

² *Hitler e Mussolini*, pp. 114–15.

³ Between late summer 1941 and early 1943 there was an Italian Army in Russia of at least ten divisions plus extras

⁴ See above, Chapters XI and XVI.

some cases guarded by fierce sheep-dogs taught to bite any faltering labourer. This was too much even for Mussolini, and it was on this account that Ciano visited Hitler and Ribbentrop at the end of October 1941. Hitler pooh-poohed the whole matter—one must remember, he repeated, that there were still anti-Nazi and anti-Fascist elements who had every interest in creating incidents between the Germans and the Italian workmen in Germany. The Führer, on the other hand, showed ‘immediate comprehension’ of the Duce’s desire to send more soldiers to Russia—beyond the Caucasus¹ they would become climatically suitable. It is worth noting that this was the last occasion upon which Ciano reports the Führer in good physical form and the first upon which Hitler, convinced though he claimed to be that Russia was beaten, failed to project any programme of action. There was much talk about European solidarity, which Ciano dismissed as the latest German slogan, but no programme; Ribbentrop assured him that the Führer was shaping Europe for a thousand years to come,² but Ciano, according to the entry in his Diary, persuaded Ribbentrop to reduce the ten centuries to one.

In his reports for Mussolini Ciano always beautified the atmosphere which had prevailed when he met Hitler and Ribbentrop. He even described their behaviour at the time of his visit to Berlin in November 1941 as exceptionally courteous.³ Simoni gives a different, and probably more accurate, picture of his visits, of Ciano behaving like a very spoilt boy recklessly distributing rude criticisms of his hosts. In November it was the anti-Comintern Pact which was to be renewed. ‘Ribbentrop made a long speech intended as an invitation if not a hymn to efficient European collaboration but it seemed more like an order of the day from a despot to his vassals. Ciano is furious. “I should have liked to answer in the same tone,” he exclaimed, “everyone would have been with me.”’⁴

After another grim Russian winter Hitler again felt the need to hold forth to Mussolini and a meeting was arranged at Schloss Klessheim near Salzburg at the end of April 1942. Its

¹ A month later ‘beyond the Caucasus’ was stated by Hitler to be Italian *Lebensraum*. See Ciano Minute, 24–7 Nov. 1941.

² Ciano Report to Duce, 26 Oct. 1941, and Diary.

³ Ciano Minute, 24–7 Nov. 1941.

⁴ Simoni, 26 Nov. 1941, but in his own Diary Ciano is resigned.

strategic importance consisted in the planning of an Axis assault upon Malta. The Führer was infinitely verbose, without, it appears, saying anything of importance; it was during this visit that Ciano watched the chiefs of the Reichswehr engaged in *un' epica lotta* with their desire to sleep through Hitler's post-prandial perorations. On the same visit Edda Ciano found a workman in hospital with the fingers cut off one hand when she visited an Italian labourers' camp; Hitler stormed when she told him. There were several straws which showed a changing wind. Hitler looked tired and for the first time Ciano noted that his hair was going white.¹ From this time on the healthy physical frame in which that extraordinary spirit was contained began to decay; the results, not only of strain, but of Dr. Morell's injections, began to tell, and the morbidity which had been fitful to prevail.² Hitler still fascinated Mussolini as he had since September 1937, and, if the Duce's account is to be believed, the Führer threw in a lollipop this time, declaring that the Greek war, by a timely pricking of the Balkan boil, had demonstrated the favour of Providence after all. Nevertheless, the Duce's doubts were growing. Before now he had said that to fight against Russia was to fight endless space, and it seemed that even Hitler could not do this: the Führer's feverish self-comparison with Napoleon was bound to nourish Mussolini's jealousy and scepticism, and at the end of this encounter the Duce remarked to his own entourage that he really did not know why Hitler had wanted it.

Before the Duce there still lay the last Italian successes in North Africa which ejected the British from Tobruk on 21 June 1942. But that was the end, and before July Hitler abandoned the plan against Malta because Italian morale seemed inadequate. During the second half of 1942 Mussolini's ulcer became a very serious matter, affecting his judgement and his temper, and it was only because he was too ill to travel that Ciano took his place at the meetings with the Führer at the end of the year. It is difficult to avoid trite reflections at this juncture upon the sorry state to which the world's two Supermen had been reduced by the philosophy of force. There were those

¹ Ciano Diary, 29 Apr.-2 May 1942. Cf. Goebbels Diary, 27 Apr. 1942, on the danger of Hitler collapsing.

² Reports to this effect reached the German Legation in Berne later this year.

who said that Mussolini's affair with Clara Petacci, which had now been going on for about seven years, had contributed to the deterioration in his health. In the spring of 1942 Ciano complained to Suñer¹ that there was nothing to be said against a bevy of mistresses but this concentration upon one had become a public scandal. The fact is that the talk about 'Claretta' and her intriguing family was chiefly a symptom of rising discontent.

With the spring of 1942 opposition to the war, to the Germans, and to the Fascist régime was no longer concealed in Italy. There was frequently friction where German soldiers were stationed. In April and May there were many arrests of anti-Fascists, especially in Rome and Genoa, and in June in Milan; in Rome and Milan mostly intellectuals were concerned and in Genoa working people. The Sicilians were very hard hit economically and increasingly indignant, and in September 1942 several hundred people were arrested in Naples because the police had found slips of paper stuck on the walls saying *Vogliamo la Pace*. In Florence the followers of the Rossellis and of the *Giustizia e libertà* movement were stirring. In October, when the R.A.F., in quest of Ansaldo's, raided Genoa, crowds (mainly women) gathered to demand peace *and liberty*, and the Socialists, who had been strong here in the past and were beginning to reorganize, managed to stick up posters to the same effect. It was decided to give Genoa a lesson; indeed, the people believed that Hitler had demanded this from Mussolini. So the military were ordered to shoot at a crowd sheltering from air-attacks in the Columbus *galleria*, and the casualties were heavy.²

Perhaps the most effective opposition was organized by the Communists whose stronghold was Turin. Russia's resistance to Hitler had sent up Communist stock and a good many of the students arrested during the year had been strongly 'red'. But the core of Italian Communism was composed of the Fiat workers. In September 1942 they were denounced by the secretary of the Fascist labour unions of Turin at an official meeting. 'When one is part of a victorious army,' he declared, 'when one forms an integral part of a revolution, one has no right to be weak or sentimental, one has no right to treat the country's enemies other than as enemies.' He complained that

¹ See R. Serrano Suñer, *Entre Hendaya y Gibraltar* (Madrid, 1947).

² From an account by a Socialist eyewitness.



even the local Fascists 'failed to regard the democracies with hostility' and that they seemed to feel concern about 'the fierce Fascist repression in the occupied territories'. This was the atmosphere in Italy at the beginning of the autumn of 1942.

In addition to the intellectuals and the industrial working classes, the Italian generals and diplomats were at work. General Castellano first visited Ciano in April 1942 in order to make contact between him and Ambrosio, who was strongly anti-German and wished Italy to make peace.¹ But the military successes which followed in Africa made further action inopportune until after Mussolini's visit to Athens in July. Castellano speaks of Ciano's hatred of the Germans as *parossistico* and he believed that the Germans hated him as much. But Ciano, though openly defeatist, was strangely inert; he was blinded by the delusion that when things had gone further the Allies would be ready to make peace with Italy if he took Mussolini's place.

In the night of 7 to 8 November 1942 Allied forces landed in French North Africa. The Axis replied immediately with the German occupation of Vichy France—Operation Attila—and the Italian occupation of Corsica. This was the end of Hitler's ambivalent approach to the question of France. Laval was summoned to meet Hitler and Ciano at Munich on 9 November and to the Führer's headquarters in December. 'Laval, qui a toujours eu l'espoir d'être l'égal de Mussolini dans ses rapports avec le Reich, s'est trouvé au quartier général d'Hitler en même temps que le comte Ciano. Mais alors que le Ministre de Mussolini a été bien reçu, Laval a été accueilli avec beaucoup de froideur.' He had come full of readiness to help incorporate France in the New Order and even with an offer of French troops, but though Hitler expressed confidence in Laval himself, the Führer subjected him to 'de violents reproches sur la duplicité des fonctionnaires et des officiers français qui trahissent la cause européenne dès qu'ils en ont l'occasion pour se tourner vers les ennemis de l'Axe'.² The subtle distinctions had ended. France was now an occupied³—and resisting—country like

¹ G. Castellano, *Come firmai l'armistizio di Cassibile* (Mondadori, 1945).

² From the contemporary report of a high French official who was Gaulliste by sentiment.

³ The vexatious *ligne de démarcation* was retained because the Germans could not spare the troops for a full occupation beyond it. See Schmidt Minute, 25 Feb. 1943.

any other, as the Duce had wished. And yet at the moment when this Axis dispute ended a greater one became acute.

The shock to Hitler of the Allied invasion of North Africa was violent. Simoni accompanied Alfieri to Munich for Ciano's meeting with the Fuhrer on 9 November and he gives a picture of confusion and consternation. The Germans had allowed themselves to be surprised. There was a marvellous moment when, after sybilline antics, Hitler declared that it was all the fault of Franco (still) and of the *Unsinn* of which he had been guilty.¹ The conclusion Hitler drew was that the Axis must be more remorseless than before. 'I belong to those men', he wrote to Mussolini on 20 November, 'who, when they receive blows, become more resolute.' A stop must be put to the last ambiguities, not only in the matter of France, but from end to end of Europe. But it was Italy's survival which was threatened by Montgomery's offensive from one side and the landing in Algeria from the other. Just when the Duce had got his intransigent way with regard to France, Italian anxiety was sufficiently strong to induce him to follow up his efforts over Greece in 1942 with an attempt to mitigate the New Order as a whole.

On 30 January 1943 Mussolini replaced Cavallero, whose 'servility' to the Germans had so often exasperated Ciano,² by Ambrosio as Chief of Staff. At the beginning of February, with the news of the defeat at Stalingrad, he took what appeared to be the contradictory step of dismissing the 'Ciano Cabinet' which he had appointed in the autumn of 1939. Ciano left the Palazzo Chigi to become Ambassador to the Vatican and the Germans were convinced that he had gone there to arrange a separate peace.³ The ailing Mussolini⁴ took over foreign affairs himself, to the tune of a Stefani announcement that politics must now be put back on the same level as the prosecution of war and the peoples of Europe shown that their sacrifices would bear fruit. The Duce appointed as his Under-Secretary Bastianini, who had been Under-Secretary to Ciano in 1936,

¹ On 10 Feb. 1943 the Germans induced Franco to sign a secret agreement promising to resist the Allies should they invade Spanish or Portuguese territory.

² Schmidt thought Ciano more servile than Cavellero on 19 Dec. 1942.

³ Simoni, 8 Feb. 1943.

⁴ The eminent German surgeon, Sauerbruch, was called to Rome (see Hassell, op. cit., p. 297, 14 Feb. 1943), but was then not allowed to see the Duce for fear of what the world might think.

then Ambassador in Warsaw and later in London (succeeding Grandi), and Governor of Dalmatia from 1941. He was not a man of great worth or distinction, but he had a fixed idea about paying a modicum of respect to the principle of nationality, and had warmly supported Ciano's attempts to help the Poles; he wished at this point to bring together the smaller satellites with Italy on the basis of the rights of each nation, in order to arrive at a compromise peace.¹ If Germany refused to modify the tyranny of the New Order so much the worse for her. For the moment Mussolini had been won over to this policy. The situation in Russia was critical and Hitler refused to consider the proposals of the Duce and others² in favour of peace with Stalin. When the Germans threw the blame for the break in Russia and the collapse at Stalingrad upon the Italians the Duce's indignation mingled with that of the rest of Italy. The country was quickly exasperated by the news of how the retreating Germans monopolized the tanks and lorries and left the Italians in the lurch, and in the night of 6-7 February Mussolini wired to Marras to tell Keitel 'that at least a minimum of help is called for if comradeship still has any meaning'.³

The situation was extraordinarily confused. Germany itself was profoundly shaken by the shock of Stalingrad, and broad if unofficial hints from influential Germans⁴ reached the Italian Embassy in Berlin that Mussolini's ancient role of peacemaker should be revived. It was arranged that Ribbentrop should go to Rome 'to discuss the military situation', the Italians welcoming the opportunity to press for political changes. The Axis pattern seemed still to be the same. Before he set off Ribbentrop saw Alfieri; while expressing his regret that he would no longer be meeting Ciano he took the opportunity to assert that the present situation allowed of no politics for it could only be fought out. He concluded ominously: 'It sometimes appears as if the Axis should not trust its own Allies. Still, the Finns and Rumanians must know exactly what would happen if the Russians were to win.'⁵

¹ After 8 Nov. the plan mentioned by Simoni for an Italian breakaway was only one of many drawn up by other diplomats along these lines. (See Simoni, 24 Nov. 1942.) ² e.g. of Goebbels. ³ Simoni, 7 Feb. 1943.

⁴ Simoni, 10 and 17 Feb. 1943. On the second occasion the hints came from the staff of the Press Department of the German Foreign Office.

⁵ Schmidt Minute, 22 Feb. 1943.

Ribbentrop was in Rome on this visit from 24 to 28 February 1943; he was officially received by the Duce on 25 February. Characteristically enough an unconscionable amount of time must have been spent upon irrelevant digression over a self-generating problem like that of the Jews. Ribbentrop told the Duce that he knew that

'in Italian military circles—just occasionally among German military people too—the Jewish problem was not sufficiently appreciated. Only thus could he understand an order of the Italian Supreme Command which cancelled measures against the Jews in the Italian occupation zone of France; these measures had been taken by the French authorities acting under German influence. The Duce contested the accuracy of this report and traced it back to the French tactics of causing dissension between Germany and Italy.'¹

Later in the conversation Mussolini indulged in a favourite Axis reflection—in the spirit of Nietzsche—that Bolshevism was the revenge of the Jews against Christian civilization; in the same breath he deplored the obstinacy of the Pope in resisting the omnipotence of the Fascist State. He lamented the 'proletarian' war the Italians had been compelled to fight armed with the weapons of the war before this one—Ribbentrop might well have asked by whose fault.

Much time was spent on the Yugoslav situation. From the time of the Anglo-American landing in Algeria in November 1942, Hitler had developed a fresh obsession; from now on he was haunted by the fear of an enemy invasion of his *Festung Europa* and he feared it most of all in the Balkan peninsula.² On 16 December 1942, therefore, he inspired Keitel to sign an order in the following words:

'The enemy employs, in Partisan warfare, Communist-trained fanatics, who do not hesitate to commit any atrocity. It is more than ever a question of life and death. This fight has nothing to do

¹ Schmidt Minute, 25 Feb. 1943. At his trial Ribbentrop managed to remember that 'a large espionage and sabotage organization was going at the time in France and that the Fuhrer ordered me in this connection to talk to Mussolini, since the Italians were working against certain measures we had introduced in France'. In fact he had declared to Mussolini that 100,000 Jews were the equivalent of 100,000 members of the British Secret Service, and that the Italians must be made to take the matter seriously.

² The British Prime Minister, I believe, hoped to justify this fear.

with soldierly gallantry or the principles of the Geneva Convention. If the fight against the Partisans in the East, as well as in the Balkans, is not waged with the most brutal means, we shall shortly reach the point where the available forces are insufficient to control this area.

‘It is, therefore, not only justified, but it is the duty of the troops to use all means without restriction, even against women and children, so long as it ensures success. Any consideration for the Partisans is a crime against the German people.’¹

The crisis in the Balkans between the Axis partners was brought to a head at the meeting at the Fuhrer’s headquarters in Gorkitz forest exactly three days after this. On this occasion Ribbentrop and Keitel received Ciano and Cavallero. According to the German Minute Ribbentrop began with the old story that Croatia was entirely Italy’s affair, except, of course, that during the war Germany felt concerned with (1) the suppression of all resistance, (2) the control of the railways and of the whole economic system. Keitel then announced to the Italians that the Fuhrer had decided that the remaining resistance in this area where British influence was so strong must be crushed before the winter was over without fail. ‘The Fuhrer had declared that the Serb conspirators were to be burnt out and that no gentle methods might be used in doing this. Every village where Partisans were found must be burnt down. . . . Roatta had unfortunately believed that he could consolidate the position through political action’, but Hitler now absolutely forbade this. Cavallero tried to intervene in favour of the Četnici, but Ribbentrop caught him up sharply and said they were conspirators and must all be liquidated.²

In the immensely long letter dated 16 February which Ribbentrop brought to Rome on 24 February Hitler hammered away at this same theme. You counted, he wrote to Mussolini, upon Greek and Albanian support in 1940 with disastrous results. ‘Whenever and wherever the Balkans are invaded, O Duce, the Communists and Mihailović followers and all the other Comitadji will unite to attack the German and Italian forces immediately, in favour of the invading enemy.’ On 25 February Ribbentrop went on and on with this argument though the Duce declared that the Četnici had been useful,

¹ See *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part ix, p. 53.

² Schmidt Minute signed at Berlin, 23 Dec. 1942.

and—which was true—that the Germans themselves had made use of them. It was a typical Axis situation—the Germans insisting upon the utmost brutality and a purely military ‘solution’. An agreement was reached with difficulty and was not very clear. The Četnici were at all events to be disarmed.

As for the projects of Bastianini, they did not get far, either during the discussions or in the statements published after them. Ribbentrop expounded the German slogans of the moment. The Russian flood was to be dammed up behind a great Eastern wall beyond the Ukraine. Simoni had already reported the German attitude of indifference to disasters so long as the war were kept at a distance from Germany and the further breeding of the German race not seriously endangered.¹ But in order to conceal this with adequate bluff, Ribbentrop began secret-weapon hints² and told the Italians he hoped the submarine war would soon drive the Western Allies to an invasion of Europe which would certainly end in their destruction. We have seen that Hitler himself was in terror of D-day.

It was clear, however, both to Hitler and Ribbentrop, that the Italian fruit was ripe enough to fall and that it might be worth while to make verbal concessions over the New Order and over peace. On 1 March it was indeed broadcast from Berlin that during his visit to Rome Ribbentrop had

‘repeatedly emphasized the determination of their countries to continue the war with all necessary means until the complete destruction of the enemy forces and the elimination of the danger of a Bolshevik Europe. . . . They [the Axis leaders] once more emphatically asserted the resolute will of Germany and Italy to set up a new order in Europe after achieving final victory. . . . The European people will be guaranteed the possibility of productive work and social justice within the secure frontiers of the great European area . . . an importance that should not be underestimated is attached to the discussions in Rome. . . . The Italo-German statement represents the Magna Carta of the Great European area.’

At the same time the *Völkische Beobachter* printed a Stefani commentary about the Duce’s peace-making career and added that he was fully supported in his humane work by the enlightened

¹ Simoni, 16 Nov. 1942. ² Already made to Alfieri, see Simoni, 22 Feb. 1943.

leader of Germany. Further, the Germans suddenly made the most astonishing economic concessions to the Italians: at a moment when Hitler was proclaiming the total mobilization of all European labour in the fight against Bolshevism, he agreed that the Italian workmen in Germany should return to Italy. The situation is illustrated by the Fuhrer's remark at a naval conference on 26 February that it would be best to man with Germans some of the Italian ships which were to be procured 'provided that this can be done without hurting the feelings of the Italians'.¹

By March it was too late. On Saturday, 6 March 1943, the week after Ribbentrop's visit, open demonstrations began at Fiat's. The method, later used in northern Italy against the German occupier, was adopted of putting forward clearly justifiable economic demands, in this case the payment of already promised compensation to bombed-out workmen. By 1 p.m. on 12 March, 8,000 men of the Mirafiori factory had gone on strike, and during the day 40,000 to 50,000 workers seem to have become involved. This was the first big, definite strike in Italy, or for that matter in New Order Europe, so newly granted its Axis Magna Carta. On Saturday, 13 March, a manifesto was circulated among the Fiat employees which ended with the words '*Viva la Pace e la Libertà*' and was signed '*Il Comitato Operai*'. That day a payment of 300 lire to all workmen who would 'maintain discipline' was conceded, and after the week-end the strike died down. It was not yet a complete anti-Fascist success for there were a number of victims, workmen who were subsequently arrested and hanged. But it was a momentous beginning and a number of employers openly expressed sympathy for the strikers against the régime. Rome had ordered ruthless repression but the police authorities of Turin, with troops ready at hand, had been unwilling or unable to obey. There was serious labour trouble in Milan at about the same time.² Within a few days began the Anglo-American offensive against Tunisia, the possession of which both Fuhrer and Duce had agreed would decide the war in the Mediterranean.

Hitler clamoured to see Mussolini—he wished to inspire him

¹ *Fuhrer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1943, p. 11. By this time the more brutal Donitz had succeeded Raeder as Commander-in-Chief, Navy.

² See Senise, *op. cit.*

with bellicosity—but he would not travel farther than Salzburg now, and the Duce was so ill that it was the second week in April before they met, once again in the castle of Klessheim. Hitler was fagged and hectic, Mussolini still ill. At Salzburg station, according to one of the Italian diplomats,¹ they greeted one another with emotional warmth. Hitler wished Mussolini to be treated by his notorious quack doctor, 'Professor' Morell, but this the Duce obstinately refused. To Alfieri he said: 'If you want to know the name of my illness, I can tell you—convoys.'²

Although Hitler told Goebbels (and he probably believed it) that he had rejuvenated Mussolini,³ the meeting was a fiasco. One might well say that the Axis broke here. The Italians came determined to urge peace with Russia and the final withdrawal of the Italian armies from abroad to help defend Italy, and on the other hand a fuller working out of some kind of European Charter with a view to peace in the West.⁴ Mussolini promised Bastianini and Ambrosio to press for these things. But with the state of his health as it was he crumpled up even more easily than usual in his talks with Hitler who wished to hear no more sentimental rubbish about small nations.⁵

Meanwhile Ribbentrop thundered out the Fuhrer's views to Bastianini. Russia must be fought—there was nothing else to be done with her. As for Hungarian and Rumanian attempts to reach a separate peace, whoever made efforts of this kind would only hasten his own end.⁶ Bastianini, nevertheless, made it perfectly clear that Italy could not continue the war; he referred to the alarming strikes there had been in Turin and Milan. Ribbentrop broke in significantly. He preferred, he said, to speak not of Italy but of the occupied territories. In Norway, in Greece, in France attempts at a compromise had

¹ See article in the *Momento*, 13 May 1945.

² Simoni, 11 Apr. 1943.

³ See Goebbels Diary, 7 May 1943. 'The Fuhrer did everything he could, and by putting every ounce of nervous energy into the effort, succeeded in pushing Mussolini back on the rails . . .'

⁴ Hitler talked a great deal at this time about European solidarity against Russia and half hoped to come to terms with Britain on this basis.

⁵ Goebbels Diary, 8 May 1943. Mussolini did manage to ask Hitler for aeroplanes.

⁶ Ribbentrop knew very well that the Italian Minister in Bucharest was scheming with Mihai Antonescu for an escape from the war.

proved a failure and brutal severity the only successful method. 'Far be it from Germany', he said, 'to wish to oppress any other country', but Churchill's broadcast of 21 March had disturbed the smaller nations and this was not a moment at which to allow oneself to be weak. The Axis could make a declaration more favourable to national autonomy only at a time when the military situation was a hundred per cent. satisfactory. The present was a particularly unfortunate moment because the Führer required radical measures for the mobilization of European labour. If the various countries were allowed governments of their own, 'die latent gegen die Achse gerichtete Dynamik', say in Holland or France, would consolidate itself, and twice as many occupation troops would be required.¹

Two or three weeks later Ribbentrop summoned Laval to Klessheim in order to tighten the fetters of France and he sent for Bastianini at the same time. The latter obstinately used this, like every other, opportunity to press for the European Charter he advocated. If his own account² is to be trusted he compelled Ribbentrop to listen on 29 April to a disquisition on the necessity for the reconstruction of Europe with France in the place her traditions deserved; it was pointless, he said, to exasperate her national feeling. On 1 May Mussolini went so far as to instruct the Stefani Agency to issue a communiqué in this sense.

With the fall of Tunis on 7 May the shadow of defeat fell darkly across Italy; it was as if in the darkness before dawn the ghost of Mazzini had appeared to his sons and roused them to avenge him, for in one sense the Italians broke with Nazi Germany over the principle of national autonomy. At the same moment their own independence had been lost. While the Duce had contrived to eject Rommel from the command of Italian troops, he had successfully banished the bulk of his own forces to Africa or Russia. When he asked for help from Germany, the Germans insisted upon economizing in the transportation of Italian soldiers from the Eastern Front, which meant that only German troops were available. On 13 May Mussolini told Donitz (who was on a visit to Italy) he would accept only three of the five divisions which Hitler had offered

¹ German Minute signed by Schmidt, 10 Apr. 1943.

² Documents published in *Il Giornale del Mattino* (Rome), 10 and 11 Oct. 1945.

him. At this desperate moment Kesselring observed that this was 'an act of political importance inasmuch as it proves that the Italians want to remain masters in their own house'.¹ They wished it in vain. It suited Hitler's ends that Italy should be defended, but he made certain that German help meant the German occupation of Italy.

There was a remarkable pendant to Axis relations in the spring of 1943. There had been less haggling over Yugoslavia this April than at any time since the previous November. The Balkan situation had changed very little. The Germans had taken action without the slightest regard for the Italians, who were left in the dark, while the Italians interpreted the 'understanding' of February to mean that the Četnici should be disarmed *after* the destruction of the Partisans. All that followed was that the Četnici were demoralized and the Partisans encouraged, and it sometimes occurred that the Axis partners were drawn into fighting against one another. On 19 May Hitler committed one of his paroxysms of wrath to paper. I am determined, he wrote to Mussolini, to destroy the Yugoslav fighting groups while your General Pirzio Biroli (the governor of Montenegro) is working for their preservation—indeed the Italians have actually created some of these formations. I have tried 'with really angelic patience' to arrive at co-operation in the Balkan area, 'but my efforts have failed thanks to repeated—I am forced to use this hard word—sabotage and lack of will to restore order'. As for any aspersions cast upon Germany's loyalty to Italy, Hitler repudiated them with 'the deepest indignation'. He knew nothing of Ambrosio and Pirzio Biroli when Italy was fighting Abyssinia, 'But it was then that I led Germany on to Italy's side.' In order to avoid another North Africa Hitler begged Mussolini to give orders to his High Command to conform, not only in the letter, to the February agreement. 'Let me speak to you, Duce, as perhaps your most sincere friend: I know well enough, and so do you, that not all the Italian and German generals have stood solidly behind us. . . . Believe in the sincere attachment of a man who will never abandon the fate of his own Revolution, of yours and of those² of Fascism.'

The unhappy Duce with his back to the wall tried to defend

¹ *Führer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1943, p. 32.

² Plural used in the text.

himself even against Hitler. His letters this spring were more than usually full of petty resentments.¹ When he replied on 22 May to Hitler's outburst he insisted once more that it was the Italian Army which had broken resistance in Greece.² But he accepted Hitler's orders and abandoned Bastianini. At Klessheim, it appears, Himmler had said to him quite simply what was true—that he had no support left in Italy; in that case he had nothing to lose by adopting ruthless coercion.

Fascism had failed to eradicate a certain universalism in the Italian approach, and Mazzini's nationalism, which respected the nationalism of others, had lingered fitfully on. The Italians instinctively felt that Hitler's frightfulness was bad politics as well as bad morality, and that the two might come to the same thing. Even in Yugoslavia they recognized some kind of national entity in the Četnici. Laval expressed their view when he said to Hitler, 'Vous voulez gagner la guerre pour faire l'Europe; faites donc l'Europe pour gagner la guerre.' Until the second Klessheim meeting in April 1943 the Duce was balancing precariously between Italy and Hitler. But as his half-hearted attempt to coax concessions from the more resolute Fuhrer broke down, the Italians' desire to free themselves from him could no longer be concealed. If he attempted to liberalize Fascism, it would cease to mean anything; he was forced to choose Hitler as against Italy. When Bastianini met his Berlin colleagues at Klessheim at the end of April he remarked to them that, although Italy's position was desperate,

'Mussolini would never make up his mind to capitulate and that anyway at the first symptom of surrender the Germans would spring upon us.

'His own talks with Ribbentrop, Bastianini said, had been disconcerting. The Germans suspect Pétain, Kállay, and Mihai Antonescu. They suspect Franco and fear Turkey. And of course they suspect us. All Europe is rising up against the attempt, *condotto con tanta bestialità*, to impose the hegemony of Germany. And Italy, from whom so many peoples had hoped for good sense, has let herself be dragged, like the others, into the vortex of this folly.'

'Are we really at the end?' asked Simoni.³

¹ See letters to Hitler dated 9 Mar. and 23 Mar.

² Hitler's letter had referred to Germany's 'conspicuous contributions' to the conquest of the Balkans in 1941.

³ Op. cit., 29 Apr. 1943.

XIX

'Mésalliance'

Saturday, 12 June. The news of the surrender of Pantelleria has provoked a violent German reaction. They suspect betrayal and demand explanations. . . .

'9 p.m. Ribbentrop telephones to Alfieri that the Fuhrer has decided to send Marshal von Richthofen to Italy at once with an air unit.

'Sunday, 13 June. . . . Richthofen, having arrived in Rome, says he is only on a tour of inspection. . . .

'Tuesday, 22 June. . . . It won't be much . . . a few dozen planes, for which we must put twelve air-fields at their disposal.

'Saturday, 10 July. At dawn Allied forces landed in Sicily. . . .

'Sunday, 11 July. The news from Sicily is worse. The battle may now be considered lost. Silence from Rome over the most disturbing questions. No instructions at all. . . .

'Saturday, 17 July. . . . it is now a matter of [German] forces to occupy rather than to help us. . . .'

These are entries in Simoni's Diary in the summer of 1943.

When Dönitz returned from his visit to Rome in the middle of May the Führer expressed doubt as to whether the Duce was 'determined to carry on to the end'; as for Ambrosio, Hitler believed that he 'would be happy if Italy could become a British dominion to-day'.¹ On Saturday, 17 July, Hitler conferred on the Italian crisis with Dönitz, Keitel, Jodl, and others at the Wolfsschanze. Only 'barbaric measures', he said, could now save Italy. 'Therefore the Fuhrer believes that a sort of directorate, tribunal or court-martial should be set up in Italy to remove undesirable elements. . . . He has already consulted Ambassador von Mackensen, but the latter could suggest no one capable of taking over the leadership.' It is curious that on this occasion Farinacci's name was not mentioned, though Goebbels was still convinced, a week later, that 'we can depend upon him blindly'.²

On the same day Hitler summoned Mussolini to meet him in North Italy on the Monday morning (19th) for their thirteenth

¹ *Führer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1943, p. 38.

² Goebbels Diary, 25 July 1943.

encounter, Simoni noted.¹ Fuhrer and Duce with their retinues met at the air-port of Treviso and proceeded to Senator Gaggia's villa at Feltre (for the Italians had expected their guests to stay for two or three days): on the way Ambrosio asked Keitel for the reinforcements which the Germans had promised and Keitel replied that, owing to the Russian counter-offensive which had begun during the week-end, he was unable to spare any help at all.

The Feltre meeting was a battle between Hitler and Ambrosio over the tired body of Mussolini. It was Hitler's last chance to reinflate the Italian balloon: it was the last chance for Ambrosio—and indeed the rest of Italy—to induce Mussolini to tell Hitler that he must make peace.

Adolf Hitler held forth for three hours on that Monday morning at the Feltre villa in order to inspire Mussolini with the courage of despair. Everything must be defended, the oil regions, the Ukraine for corn, and Norway, Petsamo, and Serbia for their metals. Work must go on regardless of tremendous air attacks. Above all the Italian air-fields must be properly defended. 'It is tragic', he throws in, 'that the British are very much on the spot over organization': this was illustrated by their rapid fitting-up of Pantellaria. Our first task is to weaken the enemy on the Eastern front before the winter. A new weapon against which no protection is known will then be in use against Britain. Italy must be held so that 'Sicily may become for the enemy what Stalingrad was for us'. There must be total mobilization. Boys of fifteen, the Fuhrer boasts, are manning Germany's A.A. guns. 'And if anyone should say our tasks can be left to a future generation I reply that it may not be a generation of giants. The resurrection of Germany took thirty years. Rome never rose again. This is the voice of history.' Cold comfort for Italy on the very day of the first bombardment of Rome! And throughout the Fuhrer insists that it is the men—and above all the officers—not the machines, that count. Therefore Germany will give Italy no more machines without Germans to guard them—again she will save Italy only at the cost of occupation.²

¹ Op. cit., 19 July 1943.

² This account is taken from the Italian Minutes published in *Hitler e Mussolini* quoted above.

After a tête-à-tête Superman lunch,¹ Ambrosio and Bastianini, and even Alfieri, urged upon Mussolini his duty to speak out to Hitler before the German party left. All the morning he had opened his mouth exactly twice—once, quite early on, to announce the air attack on Rome and a second time to say something about the population of Corsica.² From his reaction to Ambrosio's entreaties it was clear that at lunch it had been very much the same thing.² On the way back to Treviso with the Fuhrer he was silent. It was easier to be mesmerized by Hitler. The Germans were strong; it seemed simpler and safer to stick to them. Back in Rome the next evening Mussolini told Ambrosio that he had decided to write a letter to Hitler to say that Italy must make peace, but he never did. Ambrosio asked to resign.

For the last three months Italian anger had been mounting against the Duce. A week after his return from Klessheim in April he had appointed the old terrorist, Scorza, as Secretary of the Fascist Party to follow Himmler's advice. Groups of Fascist thugs reappeared in the streets, but now they themselves were sometimes murdered in the night. A varied clandestine Press reached a good many people and there was a good deal of labour unrest round about 1 May. Representatives of the chief pre-Fascist political parties, together with members of the new Party of Action, began to see more of one another cautiously. They contrived to convey their dismay to the King and to consult with the dissident generals; Mussolini's old enemy, the moderate Socialist Bonomi, was in touch with Ambrosio before the end of 1942³ and was received by the King on 2 June.

Until July 1943 Ambrosio had always hoped to induce Mussolini himself to break with Germany, but from the time of Feltre he agreed with Castellano and other generals that the Duce must be forcibly removed. At the same time the King made up his mind to do what he had always found impossible hitherto, to dismiss Mussolini.

¹ This is recorded in an Italian Minute of the Feltre meeting.

² Mussolini (*Il tempo del bastone e della carota*) says he asked Hitler for help. Ambrosio and Marras were afraid he had only handed Italy over, bound hand and foot.

³ In 1944 Mussolini claimed to be in possession of Ambrosio's Diary and published an entry from it dated 4 Dec. 1942. 'Visita Bonomi — Proposta Badoglio — Abdicazione S.M. — Il Principe — Armi — Cavallero.' Op. cit., p. 107 *supra*. See also Ivanoe Bonomi, *Diario di un anno* (Garzanti, 1947).

For some weeks the Fascist leaders had been asking that the Fascist Grand Council be summoned to meet (for the first time since December 1939); some of them hoped thus to steady the régime,¹ others to overthrow it. After his return from Feltre Mussolini agreed, and the meeting was fixed for the afternoon of Saturday, 24 July, at 5 p.m.; it lasted, with a short interval at about midnight, until 2.40 a.m. on 25 July. Mussolini admitted that the country was dead against the war, but failure was always unpopular, he said; he made a long list of all the help Italy had had from Germany and proposed to fight to the finish. In the end nineteen² of the twenty-eight members of the Council voted for an Order of the day proposed by Grandi which invited the King to take over the command of all the armed forces. It was an invitation to Mussolini to quit, but he himself warned the *gerarchi* that they were risking the breakdown of the whole Fascist machine.

The King sent for the Duce at 5 p.m. on the Sunday. He commented on the Grandi resolution and informed Mussolini that he was placing the government of the country in Badoglio's hands. According to Mussolini's account³ Victor Emmanuel told the Duce that he was certainly the most hated man in Italy and had only one friend left, the King himself. On leaving the royal villa Mussolini was gently but firmly arrested and removed in an ambulance by an officer and a force of carabinieri; this had been arranged by the anti-Fascist generals.

Just before 11 p.m. that night the news was broadcast from Rome together with formal proclamations from Badoglio and the King. It was a hot summer night and the streets in all the towns of Italy were thronged with people. When they heard that Mussolini had gone they sang and laughed and wept with joy. It was the end of the long Fascist nightmare, and above all, as Mussolini said to the King as he left him, to the people his fall meant the end of the war.

King Victor Emmanuel's position on 25 July 1943 was certainly not enviable. The House of Savoy had been linked in the popular mind with the Duce, and was felt to have condoned

¹ Goebbels and the Nazis in general regarded the Grand Council meeting as an Old Guard Fascist move—see Goebbels, *op. cit.*, 25 July 1943.

² Including Alfieri.

³ *Op. cit.*

his pro-German policy; the Prince of Piedmont, too, had made himself unpopular by his apparent enthusiasm over war against France. The tardy dismissal of Mussolini gave the King a sudden opportunity; for the moment everything was hoped from him. But he could only satisfy expectation if he showed confidence in his people by quickly appointing a broadly based government and if he made peace.

The King, however, was old and suspicious, and determined, as it seemed, to rule at last. He was afraid of the popular currents of feeling and especially of the leftist parties and the industrial workers in the north. According to Badoglio¹ it was Victor Emmanuel himself who insisted on a Cabinet of technicians which was thoroughly out of touch. Martial law and a stricter censorship than ever were like cold douches to a population which fondly believed it had regained its liberty. The other cold douche—this one seemed icy—was the immediate announcement that the war would go on. Now the King and Badoglio probably wanted peace as much as the public, but they knew that the Germans would try to occupy all Italy in full force if they admitted this wish. It is easy enough to be wise after the event, but one cannot help wondering, if Victor Emmanuel had bravely appealed to the Italians and placed himself at the head of the Second Risorgimento—as the resistance to Germany came to be called—whether he might not have emulated his grandfather, who had had the courage to lead the first national uprising in Italy. The best elements in the country were longing to fight *against* Hitler, but when the political leaders offered mass support in Rome and Milan for immediate resistance, the King and the generals ignored them, and small isolated groups of resisters were shot down when the Germans arrived. In a month or so, after the German occupation, resistance was spontaneously organized, and all the King's manoeuvres only saved a portion of southern Italy from the Germans.

There was one member of the Fascist Grand Council who had stood alone. Farinacci, who had been making furious journalistic attacks on the generals since the invasion of Sicily, proposed a motion of his own in favour of the royal command of the armed forces but in favour also of absolute loyalty to the

¹ Op. cit.

Axis alliance and the Axis *guerre à outrance*.¹ On the Sunday he disappeared from Rome and arrived precipitately (without luggage) at Munich in a German plane with a letter from Mackensen;² he continued at once to the Führer's headquarters. Although on 17 July Hitler had had no suggestion from Mackensen as to the replacement of Mussolini, it may safely be assumed that Dollmann had been plotting with Farinacci for some time. Mackensen was an astonishingly stupid man and had completely misinformed Berlin;³ in any case the S.S. had a separate and more powerful organization, in Rome as elsewhere, than that directed by the Auswärtiges Amt. Farinacci had undoubtedly been instructed to follow up his order of the day with armed Fascist pressure which should compel the King to place all the Italian armed forces, as Hitler had so long desired,⁴ under German command. When, instead of this, Farinacci escaped to Germany alone and found fault with Mussolini, Hitler broke into a good Austrian rage. 'Mit diesen Katzelmachern ist eben nichts zu machen',⁵ he exclaimed, and 'handed him over to Himmler to look after for the present'.⁶

On 26 July the German public was told very coolly that Mussolini had resigned on account of ill health, but that this involved no change at all in Italian policy. The German Press had nothing to say about it all for several days, but the Berlin public, at least, listened to the B.B.C. as it had never dared before, and knew all about the demonstrations in Italy and the short work which had been made of anything like a Fascist Party decoration. The fall of Mussolini coincided not only with the successful Russian counter-offensive but also with an intensification of the air war—the British raided Hamburg on quite a new scale two nights earlier, and on 1 August Goebbels made the sensational announcement that Berlin was to be evacuated. It all made a tremendous impression, but especially

¹ For the full English text of the resolutions brought up at the Grand Council meetings see *Mussolini's Memoirs* (Contact, 1949). The third one (Scorza's) is almost meaningless.

² Simoni, 26 July 1943.

³ See his report to Donitz, 19 Aug. 1943. *Führer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1943, p. 91.

⁴ And had demanded in so many words at Feltre.

⁵ From a reliable German diplomatic source. = 'There is simply nothing to be done with these Wops.'

⁶ Goebbels, op. cit., 27 July 1943.

the Duce's fall created an atmosphere of 'That's one of them out: when do we get rid of the other?'¹ This was typically Berlinesse, but not confined to Berlin; it was interesting that in Bavaria with its odd insularity a shock was felt: until then the Bavarian peasants had very nearly ignored the war, but from this time they feared Allied air attacks from Italy.² When Donitz went to Hamburg a little later he reported to Hitler that 'the general feeling of the people is one of depression in spite of their willingness to work. Everybody sees only the many reverses. In view of the impressions I gained from my visit in Hamburg and on the basis of many reports and intelligence I believe it is very urgent that the Führer speak to the people very soon. . . .'³ It may indeed safely be affirmed that German morale now touched the lowest level it ever reached until 1945.⁴ During the last week in July Himmler told Hitler that the S.S. of the interior could no longer be regarded as absolutely reliable, and a S.S. division from the *Ostfront* was brought to Berlin.⁵

It might be suggested that Hitler and Himmler had lost their heads, but it is probably more exact to describe them as greatly excited. Not only were Italy and Germany vibrating with the shock of Mussolini's fall. The anti-German parties in Rumania and Hungary and indeed throughout Axis Europe were stimulated to a degree such that if the Allies could have followed up their advantage in Italy, the war might have ended in 1943. And then for Hitler, whose fantasy had identified Mussolini with himself and linked the fate of 'our revolutions', it was emotionally a fundamental blow to HIM, greater, perhaps, than the German defeat at Stalingrad—he probably believed more profoundly in the Supermen than in the German Army or the German nation. He dug his feet in, however. When on 27 July Rommel, Richthofen, and Dönitz expressed their feeling that Fascism had lost all hold on Italy and that the only stable influence there with which Germany could now work was the House of

¹ Simoni, 25 July 1943, and many German sources.

² Information from a neutral visitor to Bavaria at the time.

³ *Führer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1943, p. 88.

⁴ 'Some sections of the population are almost in a state of panic.' Goebbels Diary, 27 July 1943. He had noted two days earlier that 'the letters addressed to me are disturbing'.

⁵ Information received from a particularly good source at the time.

Savoy, Hitler angrily declared that soldiers did not understand and that Fascism *MUST* be restored.¹ Jodl had faith that the Führer could do this and Goring and Ribbentrop supported him. Four new operations were to be worked out immediately: (a) *Eiche* for the rescue of Mussolini; (b) *Student* for the restoration of Fascism, with the occupation of Rome; (c) *Schwarz* for the military occupation of Italy; and (d) *Achse* for the capture or destruction of the Italian fleet. This had become the meaning of *Achse*. Hitler wished *Eiche* and *Student* to be carried out without delay. It may be noted that particular anxiety was shown with regard to the effect of the change in Italy upon the Balkan situation—Hitler was still hypersensitive about this.

On 29 July 1943 Mussolini was sixty. In Germany the birthday—and especially the sixtieth birthday—of any personage was always advertised with fervent eulogy in the papers. This time the Press was unchained in a paean of praise to demonstrate the Führer's fidelity. On 30 July the Deutsches Nachrichten Büro announced that Hitler had sent Mussolini a special edition of the complete works of Nietzsche in twenty-four volumes, with 'a cordial personal dedication', and Trans-ocean subsequently referred to Mussolini's belief in living dangerously. At the same time the German Press began to point out that the change of régime in Italy did not seem to have softened the wrath of the enemy.

The action of the Badoglio Government—it was unfortunate but not surprising—was timid and dilatory. On 29 July Marras arrived by air from Rome with a message for Hitler, and proceeded with Simoni to Rastenburg. They were met with an atmosphere of melodramatic suspicion. On 30 July, after being ostentatiously disarmed, they were received by the Führer, covered by Jodl, Schmundt, and Hewel all with their hands on their revolvers. Evidently Hitler had made up a diabolical plot . . . it was another of the familiar symptoms, the attribution of his own intentions to his victims.² Marras then invited Hitler to an early meeting with Victor Emmanuel in northern Italy. Hitler refused this for the present but agreed that the Foreign

¹ *Führer Conferences on Naval Affairs*, 1943, pp. 67–8, cf. Hassell, *op. cit.*, p. 328.

² Goebbels (*op. cit.*, p. 324) refers to a plan for parachutists to kidnap the Italian King with his family, and possibly the Pope as well. Gisevius (*op. cit.*) refers to plans of the kind at Easter 1943, but he is often inaccurate.

Ministers and Chiefs of State should meet instead. He was didactic and reproachful about Communism in Italy, but the hysterical climax which occurred in nearly all his speeches (including those called interviews) was on this occasion induced by a reference to the British air attacks. History was familiar with the annihilation of cities 'But the day will come—it may be in 300 years—when we shall be able to revenge ourselves.'¹ When Hitler spoke of helping Italy he again made much of the difficulties of transport; Marras and Simoni had the impression that the Germans were only really held back from an immediate occupation by the impoverishment of their resources.

On the day of Marras's theatrical interview it is noted in the naval minutes that 'Operation *Schwarz* is to be deferred, in order to permit pouring as many troops into Italy as possible while co-operation still continues'. On 1 August—'Movement of German troops into northern Italy continues.' At 3 p.m. on 31 July the Italian Consulate at Innsbruck had reported to the Embassy that German troops were crossing the Brenner.² By now the Germans, except for Kesselring and possibly Donitz, felt convinced that Badoglio was negotiating with the Allies. Hitler's 'intuition' had told him so from the beginning. Characteristically he missed no opportunity of blaming Italy for his three-year-old disappointment with regard to Spain which had 'decided everything'; one day it was Italian jealousy, another Italy's attack on Greece, which had made the Spanish hen broody.

In these peculiar circumstances Ribbentrop and Keitel met Ambrosio and the new Italian Foreign Minister, Guariglia, at the unimposing Italian frontier station of Tarvisio on 6 August. The inevitable Dollmann was there to interpret, together with Paul Schmidt. The Germans were frigid and menacing, and accompanied by a formidable company of S.S. guards. Keitel made difficulties when Ambrosio repeated more forcibly than in the past that the Italian troops must be brought home from Croatia and France to protect Italy. He complained that some German troops chivalrously coming to Italy's help had been held up by Italian frontier authorities at Arnoldstein—Ambrosio said, Yes, the Italians would prefer to be informed beforehand

¹ Simoni, 30 July 1943.

² *Idem*, 31 July 1943.

about German troop movements. In the afternoon Keitel and Ribbentrop disappeared for two hours without a word, then returned to say that they had just ordered the passage of their soldiers at Arnoldstein. ‘È un gesto inaudito,’ Simoni noted.¹

But Guariglia achieved what he intended and indeed all that he could. He was an exceedingly clever and skilful Neapolitan—*una vecchia volpe*,² Dollmann said admiringly—and he teased and puzzled Ribbentrop. When his German colleague asked him whether the Badoglio Government was in touch with the British or Americans, Guariglia lied blandly—No, we are your loyal allies—some irresponsible contact, perhaps, but that he could not know. To Ribbentrop’s ‘And how do you propose to fight now?’ Guariglia came back quickly with ‘And you? You will have to make peace with Russia, if you can.’ Ribbentrop in revenge shook menacing fingers at him over the unleashing of Italian Communism. Guariglia brushed that aside—Italian Communists were different—and followed Bastianini in stressing the importance of respecting the rights of nations;³ at one point he even remarked to Ribbentrop that if the Germans were to occupy Italy, all Italians would regard it as an act of hostility. By lunch-time Ribbentrop had thawed a little and consented to lunch in Guariglia’s train. To his enticing proposition that the King of Italy, the Prince of Piedmont, and the chief Italian generals should soon visit Hitler in Germany Guariglia was all smiles. Ribbentrop added that the Duce’s resignation had been a great blow to the Führer, ‘from a personal point of view as well’.⁴

Simoni’s account of the meeting at Tarvisio begins with a reference to shooting between soldiers and partisans in the neighbourhood a full month before the Armistice.⁵ It ends with Dörnberg’s warning given to a friend of Ciano’s that Galeazzo should beware of falling into German hands, for ‘they will kill him’.

¹ Simoni, 6 Aug. 1943.

² *Ibid* (= an old fox).

³ This account is based mainly upon a conversation with the Italian protagonist. It should be noted that Ribbentrop was particularly suspicious of Guariglia, since he had only just returned from the Italian Embassy in the neutral town of Ankara. Cf. Goebbels Diary, 27 July 1943.

⁴ See Italian Minute given in *Hitler e Mussolini* quoted above.

⁵ The district is mixed Italian-Slovene in character.

The Allies were perhaps excessively cautious in their attitude to the new Italian Government and in their plans for the future conduct of the war. Anti-Fascist Italy hoped they would quickly have landed near Genoa and elsewhere in the north. At last on 3 September the unconditional surrender of Italy was secretly accepted; on 8 September it was announced and the Allied forces landed on the mainland at Salerno. Italy north of that was quickly in German hands. But if operation *Schwarz* was successful, operation *Achse* was not, for a number of Italian ships joined the Allied navies and the battleship *Roma* was sunk.

The hysterical contradictions in Goebbels' Diary for 10 September reflect the scene at Rastenburg to which, upon news of the Italian armistice, he had been summoned to meet the Fuhrer. 'The Fuhrer anticipated Italian treason as something absolutely certain. . . . And yet when it actually happened it upset him pretty badly. He hadn't thought it possible that this treachery would be committed in such a dishonourable manner.' Both Donitz and Goebbels thought that Hitler had been marvellous about the whole thing, and yet Goebbels said it was all the fault of German policy. In spite of the fatigue he had manifested for months, the Fuhrer appeared after a night of two hours' sleep inspired so as to look 'as though he had just come from a holiday'. Pavolini,¹ Renato Ricci,² and the Duce's son, Vittorio, were already at the Fuhrer's headquarters drafting a Neo-Fascist appeal to the Italian people, and Farinacci was to be allowed to join them. Philip of Hesse, on the other hand, was arrested and handed over to Himmler. 'The Duce will enter history as the last Roman,' Goebbels reflected, 'but behind his massive figure a gypsy people has gone to rot.'

The Duce seemed more likely to disappear from history as a broken man. To a formally polite note from Badoglio he replied on 26 July with an almost servile letter; though Mussolini quotes it in his book, Hitler was convinced that it was forged. The Italians knew that Hitler intended the Duce's rescue and they soon learnt that the Allies would require him to be handed over to them. It was expedient, therefore, to move him from place to place cautiously. The naval officer, Admiral Maugeri, who conducted Mussolini from Gaeta to the island of Ponza

¹ See Chapter XIV.

² See Chapter XIII.

and from Ponza to La Maddalena has recorded their conversations on board.¹ He describes him, not as sulky, but depressed and indignant, and more than anything torn in two directions about Germany; on the first voyage he was full of the necessity for Italy to make peace and on the second he had veered away from defeatism. Exile to islands off the west coast of Italy was agreeably stimulating to Mussolini's Napoleonic vanity. He himself notes with pride that he spent the days in translating Carducci's *Odi barbare* into German and in reading a *Life of Jesus* by Ricciotti; the latter book was found marked to indicate that Mussolini, too, had been betrayed. Badoglio allowed him the twenty-four volumes of Nietzsche with considerable delay; 'Una vera meraviglia dell' editoria tedesca', Mussolini remarked in his own account, and adds that he had time to read the first four volumes containing Nietzsche's early poems. He was taken, finally, to a small hotel at the Gran Sasso, high up in the mountains of the Abruzzi, the higher the better, it was thought.

On 10 September the Fuhrer broadcast from his headquarters the speech to which Dönitz and Goebbels had been urging him. According to this latest version Germany had had to face war in 1939 'alone and forsaken'. But Mussolini was not to blame—he was 'the greatest son of the Italian land since the downfall of the ancient Roman Empire'. And henceforth Germany could continue the struggle freed from all burdensome restrictions.

On Sunday, 12 September, Mussolini was rescued by Nazi glider formations and taken to Germany. This with the rapid occupation of nearly all Italy was the token of Hitler's recovery. The rescue had all the right heroic colouring that Hitler had wished. The democracies had been fooled again, and still more fooled were all those who had had faith in them. The Gran Sasso incident, together with Hitler's fierce speech a couple of days earlier, reinvigorated German morale, while the German papers were let loose to shout their threats to the satellite Finns, Hungarians, and Rumanians, who had hoped to follow Italy's example. Mark well how treachery is rewarded, they shrieked. And on 15 September, the day after his arrival at the Fuhrer's headquarters, Benito Mussolini was proclaimed to have resumed the supreme direction of Fascism in Italy with the publication of

¹ See *Politica Estera*, August–September and October numbers, 1944.

six Orders of the Day. On 18 September the Duce broadcast from Munich and the Italian Social Republic was born. 'Hitler and Mussolini embraced after their long separation',¹ Goebbels noted (on hearsay, for he was in Berlin on 14 September); 'it was a deeply moving example of loyalty between men and comrades.'

It was nothing of the kind, though until he went to the Fuhrer's headquarters on 22 September it appears that Goebbels did not suspect the truth. It was a listless Mussolini who left the Gran Sasso on 12 September. When his S.S. rescuers asked him where he wished to go, he merely said, 'My political life is over—where should I go but to Rocca delle Caminate?'² but when another Italian³ pointed out that they were heading for Austria he did not protest and in a short time he found himself in Vienna. Early on 22 September Goebbels arrived at Hitler's headquarters, and, accompanying the Fuhrer on his morning walk, had the Fuhrer's soul poured out to him. Without accepting Goebbels as a disinterested reporter, since he feared too great friendship between Fuhrer and Duce, his Diary makes plain that the arrival of Mussolini had added to the Fuhrer's griefs.

'We may consider him absolutely disillusioned concerning the Duce's personality. . . . He [the Duce] is not a revolutionary like the Fuhrer or Stalin. He is so bound to his own Italian people that he lacks the broad qualities of a world-wide revolutionary and insurrectionist. . . . There was, of course, no actual quarrel between the Fuhrer and the Duce.'

Hitler seems to have been exasperated because, while on the one hand Mussolini was only really angry with the King, on the other, as soon as he reached Munich on 13 September, he had allowed Edda to reconcile him with Ciano, who had so mysteriously disappeared from Rome on 29 August.

'That means this poisonous mushroom is again planted in the midst of the new Fascist Republican Party. . . . Ciano intends to

¹ It was less than two months since Feltre.

² In his *Storia di un Anno* Mussolini makes no complaint about Badoglio's treatment of him except that from Badoglio, too, he had asked to go to his home at the Rocca. His health appears to have been shaky but not desperate. People said he looked large-eyed and emaciated.

³ This was Soleti, chief of the Italian police, who was forced by the Germans to accompany them in order to bewilder the carabinieri guarding Mussolini.

Italians and Slovenes were joining the Partisans. Of course Hitler would 'never forget' all that Mussolini had done to help him with regard to rearmament, the Anschluss, and 'to integrate the Protectorate into the Reich'. But it had become clear that all the King's horses and all the King's men could not really put Mussolini together again. Searching furiously for a scapegoat, the Fuhrer satisfied himself that the Duce had been corrupted by Ciano;¹ Ciano must be made to pay for the greatest disillusionment of Hitler's life.

¹ Goebbels Diary, 23 Sept. 1943.

Nazis and Neo-Fascists

MUSSOLINI had no illusions left to be destroyed when he arrived at Hitler's headquarters on 14 September 1943. He had feared and admired and envied the Fuhrer for many years; these emotions in relation to the paranoiac Austrian had woven themselves into a feeling of fascination, garnished with hatred, never with sympathy. Sometimes he believed that Hitler had wished to bring about his fall in order to tighten the German hold on Italy. Mussolini was neurotic, not psychotic. He knew, as he had said at the Gran Sasso, that his political life was finished—there was no future for him except as Hitler's pawn, and he had no German taste for the tragic joys of self-destruction. He was unwell and tired and had longed to go home to the Romagna, not to Rastenburg.

The Fuhrer, however, had made up his mind. He had looked at Farinacci and Pavolini and the other Fascists who had taken refuge in Germany, and he had decided that they would not do. As Goebbels said, Mussolini's name was the oldest Fascist password, and Hitler, who had felt the effect upon the Germans of Mussolini's fall, was determined not to be deprived of so precious a symbol.

As Hitler had confided in Goebbels so Mussolini, at a later stage, entrusted his version of his meetings with Hitler in September 1943 to his Neo-Fascist Minister of Propaganda, Mezzasoma. This occurred, unfortunately, only at the beginning of 1945, but while neither Mussolini nor Mezzasoma can be relied upon for detailed accuracy, there is no reason to suspect them of invention on any scale.¹ According, then, to Mussolini, Hitler received him by 'recalling him to realities'—just as the King had, Mussolini commented crossly. The Fuhrer then asked him what he intended to do and he repeated that he wished to retire into private life in order to avoid civil war in Italy. That, Hitler objected, would suggest that he did not believe in the

¹ See *Il Momento*, Rome, 1-8 Nov. 1945, where the story was put together from notes left by Mezzasoma and by other Neo-Fascist *gerarchi*, such as Tassinari. This evidence is not impeccable but is borne out in a general way.

victory of Germany, and he made it clear that if Mussolini insisted upon this poltroonery he would certainly not be allowed to leave Germany and he might also find that he had been very severely injured during his rescue; moreover, if Mussolini withdrew Hitler would find it necessary to act more ferociously in Italy—he might be compelled to use gas against the population if it proved itself unruly. At this stage Mussolini was sent away to meditate upon his reply. The wretched man returned acquiescent. He was then informed of the new conditions in which he was to act. Hitler, liberated from 'burdensome restrictions', now required 'territorial security to prevent any further crisis';¹ in point of fact he announced that the Austria of their youth was to be revived and expanded in order to attract the Balkan Slavs. (In the pleasure of anticipating this the Fuhrer seems to have forgotten the danger of a Balkan invasion.) Goebbels need not have been afraid; South Tyrol and Trieste were already marked down, and Italy was to give up Dalmatia. It was also plainly indicated that Italy had forfeited her claims upon France. Hitler seems to have gone on from this to indicate what was to be the economic structure of his coming world; there was to be a great deal of 'internationalization' of ports and of communications in general, but in each case internationalization was to mean co-ordination under strict German control, the liquidation of any other authority.

In some ways Mussolini's surrender to Hitler was the most abject of all the surrenders of those who had been devoured by that monstrous spirit: it was symptomatic that he now submitted to an examination by Morell.² Thus the last chapter of the history of Duce and Fuhrer is macabre and ghostly. The spine of their relationship had been Hitler's belief in Mussolini and the spine was broken and the relationship dead. The shock to Hitler, far from curing his disorders, was followed by a period when few people thought of him as anything but mad. In this atmosphere it becomes additionally hard to unravel the truth among groups of desperate and ill-balanced men intriguing more and more feverishly.

In addition to Farinacci, Pavolini, Ricci, and Vittorio Mussolini, several other Fascist fanatics had fled from Badoglio's Italy to take refuge in Germany, among them Giovanni Preziosi³ and

¹ Goebbels Diary, 23 Sept. 1943.

² Ibid.

³ See Chapter VII.

another anti-Semitic journalist called Evola. The irony of the situation was that they were nearly all disloyal to their Duce and rather hoped to take his place. Especially the Jew-baiters, Farinacci and Preziosi, complained that Mussolini's anti-Semitism had never been serious, and in general that he had been intolerably tolerant and was to blame for the recrudescence of Freemasonry in the shape of the Badoglio régime.¹ Mussolini told Mezzasoma later on that it was the attitude of some of these people, faithfully reported to him by Vittorio, which helped to make up his mind that he would not retire. It is significant that Hitler approved of Farinacci and particularly of Preziosi² as the only intransigent and genuine pro-Germans, yet he would not accept their proposals for the dethronement of the Duce. He had had a Neo-Fascist Government proclaimed three days before the Duce was 'freed'; it had been proclaimed in the name of Mussolini, and Mussolini's 'weakness' was not to change that.

For the moment these men who were to breathe new life into Fascism agreed on one point alone, and that was the condemnation of the Monarchy in Italy; their broadcasts consisted almost entirely of abuse of the House of Savoy. This gave the Neo-Fascists an unexpected advantage, for the precipitate flight of the royal family before the Germans had increased national feeling against the Monarchy from end to end of Italy.

In the Orders of the Day which were pronounced on the day after the critical Fuhrer-Duce interviews it is interesting that, apart from Mussolini, only two other Fascist leaders were felt to be worth naming. Pavolini was proclaimed Secretary of the reconstituted *Partito Fascista Repubblicano* and Renato Ricci chief of the Fascist Militia.³ A week later a new Fascist Government was appointed whose weight was increased by the presence in it of Buffarini-Guidi⁴ as Minister of the Interior and of Graziani as Minister of Defence. The enlistment of Graziani was the only small Neo-Fascist triumph, though the Marshal's action was

¹ It was true that Badoglio belonged to Masonic circles.

² According to E. Amicucci, *I 600 giorni di Mussolini* (Faro, Rome 1948), Preziosi arrived in Germany on the same day as, though independently of, Farinacci, and, unlike the latter, was immediately received by Hitler.

³ Until then the Germans would not publish even their names, 'as they are too unimportant'. See Goebbels Diary, 10-11 Sept. 1943.

⁴ See Chapter XIII.

probably motivated by very little but his notorious detestation of Badoglio.¹ Graziani made a fairly successful speech at the Teatro Adriano in Rome on 26 September, and there were those who would have preferred him to head a purely military Neo-Fascist régime. Clearly Hitler would never have consented to this, but Graziani was not, apparently, on bad terms with the Führer, whom he visited very soon after, describing him as looking like a monk who had put on civilian clothes.¹ Mussolini himself once more took over the direction of Foreign Affairs with Mazzolini² in Bastianini's place. Farinacci, still indignant and declaring that Mussolini was far too ill to rule, refused to hold office and went home to Cremona to pour all his venom into his newspaper, the *Regime Fascista*. On the day of the announcement of Mussolini's new Cabinet, Goebbels noted that Pavolini had so far recruited exactly fifteen men in all Rome for the resurgent Fascist Militia.³

In the next few months Neo-Fascism, helped by the slow progress the Allies made in Italy, was able to gain at least a foothold. A National Assembly met at Verona on 14 November at which Fascism was defined afresh; in several ways it went back to its abortive revolutionary programme of 1919.⁴ There was to be one Republican Chamber, which, owing to 'the partially negative experience of a method of appointment too rigidly hierarchic', was to be to some extent genuinely elected. Further, there was to be workers' control in industry—the employers were not mentioned—and considerable nationalization of the land. All this, at so desperate a stage in the war, was peculiarly academic, but it reflected, not only the Duce who had now been more than ever exasperated by the *bourgeoisie*, but also the young pre-1922 Mussolini; if his role during the autumn and winter was not an active one, it is impossible not to feel his participation in this part of the Neo-Fascist programme. On the other hand, its seventh point stated, 'Members of the Jewish

¹ See R. Graziani, *Ho difeso la Patria* (Garzanti, 1948). Graziani claims to have been impelled by nothing but the purest patriotism in his every action.

² Count Mazzolini had been Italian Minister in Egypt until June 1940 and later Civil Governor of Montenegro.

³ Goebbels Diary, 23 Sept. 1943. The first meeting of the revived Milan Fascio took place at the Piazza San Sepolcro on 17 Sept.

⁴ See Muriel Grindrod, *The New Italy* (R.I.I.A.), Appendix I, and Chapter I above.

race are foreigners. For the duration of the war they belong to enemy nationality.'

Another issue had divided Mussolini from Hitler from the moment he arrived in Germany. The fallen Duce desired no more feuds and no revenge against the *gerarchi* who had voted for Grandi's motion at the Grand Council meeting; he even wished to assume responsibility for them.¹ As for his family circle, he had always had a weakness for his stormy daughter, Edda, and apart from the inevitable friction between the women,² he was yearning for a little private life at home in Italy. To Hitler this humanity was an outrage, the mark of a slave mentality; far from being 'a world-wide revolutionary and insurrectionist', Mussolini turned out to be hoping in his undecided way for an end to strife. But Hitler required a ferocious punishment of the nineteen, for there is no way but *Furchtbarkeit*. They had criticized: they had rebelled. They had rebelled, not in order to struggle more furiously, but in order to abandon the struggle. It was essential to make an example of them in order to terrify all those in other countries who might be tempted to behave in the same way. And of all the nineteen, Hitler was most incensed against Ciano. Ciano knew too much. Ciano's insolent jokes against the Germans had re-echoed round the world. His cynical impishness was corrosive of the atmosphere necessary to New Order Europe.³ And then a superman should know how to be severe above all with those personally close to him. Had Hitler hesitated to strike at his closest friend, Rohm, when the moment came? Finally, if the Fuhrer was less sure now than he had been that Ribbentrop was greater than Bismarck,⁴ he would be glad enough to concur in giving him Ciano's scalp.

One can imagine the feeling of relief with which Mussolini left Rastenburg to join his various relations in Munich; he was lodged in the Prinz Karl Palais there just as he had been in the days of his glory. One can feel how, in spite of the sharp things

¹ Goebbels Diary, 23 Sept. 1943.

² Donna Rachele reproached Ciano furiously as the 'new Brutus', see Amicucci, *op. cit.*

³ 'Ciano is the Satan of the Fascist movement and the curse of Italy', wrote Goebbels, the Satan of National Socialism, obediently echoing his master (Diary, 23 Sept. 1943).

⁴ Ribbentrop lost influence with Hitler during 1943

they had said about one another, Mussolini and Ciano were relieved, nevertheless, by the familiarity of being together in the nightmare Germany in which they now met. Mussolini had always found Ciano good company and Ciano had a lingeringly filial affection for his Duce. At first it seems impossible to explain Ciano's journey to Munich. It is certain that Dornberg's message at Tarvisio was far from being the only one sent or received to warn him to avoid falling into German hands. Naturally he wished to go to Spain, to the protection of his good friend Serrano Suñer, but Badoglio had made difficulties. It was almost certainly Dollmann, through one of his agents, who thereupon offered to help him; the offer was probably mixed up with some velvet threat about his children. He was spoilt and charming and vain and sure that the worst things would only happen to other people; and besides, Edda could always manage her father and there was nothing else to fear. So Galeazzo Ciano had walked straight into the S.S. trap.

Quem Deus vult perdere . . . Instead of behaving with a little care both Edda and Ciano seem to have lost their heads in the villa in Upper Bavaria, next-door to the Nazi writer, Johst.¹ Impatient, perhaps, and scared to find the Duce powerless, they began to threaten him with the revelations in Galeazzo's Diary. Hitler was quickly informed about this, and naturally incensed and provoked. 'The Fuhrer would like the Duce to hand Ciano over to him. He would stand him up against a wall immediately. . . .'² It was impossible for Mussolini to resist German pressure for any length of time, and at the beginning of November he had Ciano arrested after all while he dispatched Edda to a sanatorium. At about the same time he sent for Clara Petacci, of whom the Cianos 'disapproved'. Quarrels over 'Claretta' no doubt contributed to the Cianos' fall.

'The personal conduct of the Duce with his mistress whom Sepp Dietrich had to bring to him', Goebbels noted on 9 November in pious indignation, 'is a cause for much misgiving. One can see from it that he has no clear understanding of the seriousness of his situation, and that, accordingly, the reconstruction of the Fascist party is more a matter of theory than of practice. While he has had his son-in-law arrested, all those in the know understand clearly that he won't have him condemned to death. It is assumed that the

¹ Goebbels Diary, 23 Sept. 1943.

² Ibid.

Italiani!

Valorosi soldati dell'Esercito, della Marina, dell'Aeronautica e della Milizia!

Pietro Badoglio ha completato il suo tradimento. Colui che, Capo di Stato Maggiore all'entrata di guerra dell'Italia è responsabile della sua impreparazione bellica, si propone ora di consegnare la patria ai nemici.

Pietoso è il suo tentativo di addormentare la coscienza insorgente del popolo italiano con frasi insulse. La verità è, che se il tradimento si consuma, non soltanto l'Italia perderà irrimediabilmente il rango di grande potenza, ma perderà altresì tutti i frutti di risorgimento della prima guerra mondiale e della rivoluzione fascista, di un intero secolo di battaglie e di sacrifici.

L'uomo che ha per anni ingannato il DUCE e che ha pertinacemente puntato al potere attraverso la disfatta, intende ora di attuare il mostruoso piano per cui la patria verrebbe mutilata per sempre.

La patria senza Sicilia, senza Sardegna, senza possedimenti d'oltremare, probabilmente senza la stessa Italia meridionale, e colla prospettiva sinistra, verso cui si vorrebbe storgere il destino del paese.

E a questo scopo non si tratta già di uscire della guerra. Badoglio non si è impegnato soltanto a cessare le ostilità contro i nemici, si è impegnato a iniziarle contro la potenza alleata ed amica, contro le agguerrite forze germaniche venute alla difesa d'Italia, al cui fianco i nostri combattenti si sono fin qui battuti in fedele cameratismo. Le nostre forze armate dovrebbero, con un voltafaccia inaudito negli annali dell'onore militare, passare agli ordini di un generale straniero, il cui nome è Wilson, dovrebbero andare incontro alla morte

senza più gloria, trasformando, ben più che per il passato, il territorio nazionale in campo di battaglia.

Italiani! Combattenti! Il tradimento non si compirà!

Si è costituito un governo d'Italia nazionale e fascista. Esso sorge ed opera nel nome di Mussolini. Il governo nazionale fascista pugnerà inflessibilmente i traditori, i responsabili veri ed unici delle nostre sconfitte, ed agirà con ogni mezzo per trarre l'Italia dalla guerra col suo onore intatto e con le possibilità della sua vita a venire.

È terminata la triste farsa di una sedicente libertà, imposta con lo stato d'assedio, col coprifuoco e con la censura. Il sangue purissimo degli squadristi e dei combattenti uccisi nei giorni dell'ignominia ricadrà sul capo degli assassini in basso e soprattutto in alto.

Basta con lo slittamento al bolscevismo, basta colla reviviscenza dei vecchi uomini, in un'Italia che vuol aprire le porte alla gioventù combattente e onorare i titoli conseguiti col sacrificio e col valore guerriero. Si stringono intorno alla nostra bandiera, insieme coi combattenti e coi giovani le forze del lavoro, la cui marcia nel terreno sociale, incominciata col Fascismo, nel Fascismo raggiungerà le sue mète.

Combattenti! Non obbedite ai falsi comandi del tradimento! Rifiutate di consegnarvi al nemico! Rifiutate di rivolgervi contro i vostri comilitoni germanici! Tutti, ai quali riesca possibile, continuino le operazioni al loro fianco. Gli altri raggiungano le loro case, nei paesi e nelle città, in attesa degli ordini che verranno prontamente impartiti.

Dalla sofferenza e dalla vergogna noi vogliamo risorga un'Italia pura e potente.

Il Governo Nazionale Fascista.

absent Count Grandi will be condemned to death only because he is missing, whereas the rest will get off with terms of imprisonment or perhaps life sentences, which will then be commuted after a few weeks. One certainly can't begin reconstructing a great revolutionary movement in that way! It is tragic to think how far the Duce has drifted away from his original ideals.¹

But the Special Tribunal for the Defence of the State had been revived, and Hitler insisted upon victims. At last, in January 1944, all the nineteen members of the Fascist Grand Council who had voted for Grandi's motion were arraigned and condemned for treason. All the accounts one can get describe Mussolini as hesitant and undecided at the turn of the year. But he knew that he could not escape from the murder of Ciano. In the end he seems to have shut himself in with his mistress, refusing to receive Edda grown desperate. If Edda and Galeazzo had lived wild, dissolute lives, they had a certain rough affection for one another, and they were genuinely bound by their children. In his cell Ciano wrote that prostitutes and pimps—by which he meant the Petacci family—were responsible for his fate, but he was also struck by a grisly joke: he had made a bet with Ribbentrop in August 1939 that France and England would fight if Germany attacked Poland, and Ribbentrop still owed him *una collezione di armi antiche*—was this how the debt would be paid?

Of the six accused who could be brought into court, five were condemned to death, one to thirty years. The executions took place on 11 January 1944, at dawn. The five victims were tied to chairs in which they were made to sit, and shot in the back: the neo-Fascist execution squad was totally incompetent and could not shoot dead—'it was like the slaughtering of pigs'.² Ciano tried to face the fire; he died as bravely as one could. If Mussolini ever knew exactly how Hitler had forced him to butcher the father of his grandchildren, his hatred for the Fuhrer must have become unendurable. A journalist who claims to have seen him on 5 April 1945 declares that she heard Mussolini say that he had been dying since that January morning and the time seemed atrociously long.³ Only Edda could escape and

¹ Ibid., 9 Nov. 1943.

² From an account by a German diplomat at the time.

³ *Il Tempo* (Rome edition), 3 Sept. 1947.

taste a moderate revenge. Earlier she had sent the children to Switzerland in charge of a priest, and soon after this she conveyed the Diary¹ into the safety of neutrality. It is certain that the Germans would have wished to destroy it. As it is it is incomplete, and notably shorn of references to Edda Ciano herself.

Periodically Mussolini was treated to lectures by German experts on the invincibility of Germany because of her new arms, but between the lectures he knew perfectly that Germany was beaten. His life was the life of a privileged prisoner. He had returned to Italy on 23 September and held his first Cabinet meeting at Rocca delle Caminate on the 27th. But on 10 October he had moved to Gargnano on Lake Garda. There he was lodged in the Villa Feltrinelli with his wife and younger children, with Vittorio and his wife close by and the German Embassy at Fasano next door, and S.S. headquarters at Gardone a little farther down the road. Hitler had long wished to provide him with a S.S. bodyguard:² now he was watched by S.S. men, the German Staff doctor, Zacharias, who was with him every day, and a kind of social and political nursemaid, or *Betreuer* as he was called, a certain Nazi princeling, Furst Urach, who seems to have lived in Mussolini's villa for some time. In January 1944 Urach himself gave the following account to some colleagues in Switzerland:³

'I always sing or whistle when I cross the garden as there is a German S.S. man with a pistol behind nearly every tree. He [Mussolini] is fantastically guarded. There are a few Italian Black Shirts thrown in in order to keep up appearances.

'Mussolini', Urach continued, 'tends to withdraw himself from all practical questions of Government. If a German General comes to him with some request, he says, "Oh, do talk to Graziani". If Leyers⁴ or some economic expert comes he says, "Oh, do see my Economics Minister, won't you?" He wishes to be enthroned above the clouds like a Patriarch, while we, of course, are concerned to exploit all the authority he still has with the Italian Fascists.'

¹ With the help of her lover, the devoted Marchese Pucci. On 10 Jan. she made a last attempt to save Ciano by writing a last blackmailing letter to her father (Photostat published in *Unità*, 28 June 1945).

² See Goebbels Diary, various references.

³ He happened to be travelling through.

⁴ The German General in charge of the economic organization of Italy, see below.

On the day after the publication of the Italian Armistice the German wireless had announced the re-establishment of a Fascist régime. In the next few days the German Army was rushed into Italy with all speed. A local armistice was made with Marshal Caviglia according to which the German soldiers would remain outside Rome: the same thing was promised to General Ruggero at Milan, but both undertakings were practically ignored. On the day of Mussolini's rescue Kesselring proclaimed all Italian territory under his jurisdiction a war zone in which German martial law was valid and the organization of strikes and sabotage punishable by death. Most of the Italian Army at home, in France, in Greece, or in Croatia was easily disarmed. The Badoglio Government, having done nothing to prepare the men, took hastily to flight, and the battered army, like the civilian population, felt stunned. The Nazis thought there would not be much resistance trouble with this rotten people, provided it were thoroughly terrified. It was particularly easy for the S.S. to pounce upon innumerable anti-Fascist victims; they had exposed themselves heedlessly during the forty-five days, as the period between Mussolini's fall and the Armistice was called. Not only was an example made of these people, but also the persecution of the Jews began in earnest. The S.S. amused itself—no, trained itself to heroism—by forcing Jewish children of ten and eleven to crawl up and down stone steps on their bleeding knees in the San Vittore prison in Milan: an Italian jailer who had to witness these things broke down completely.

As for the Neo-Fascist Government, it did not get very far. Farinacci and Preziosi poured out their hatred in print, and distributed leaflets explaining that the Allies meant to take, not only the colonies and the islands, but also southern Italy.¹ Fascist officials arrived in northern Italy from the south and the centre, and, after various moves, the Ministries were set up in the vicinity of the Duce at Maderno and Salò on Lake Garda. It was for this reason that his new republic was called the Little Republic² of Salò. Ricci found it difficult to enrol anything but

¹ One of these leaflets brought out in the middle of Sept. 1943 is reproduced opposite p. 320.

² It was nearly always referred to by Italians as the *repubblichetta di Salò* and its supporters as *repubblicani*.

half-criminal adolescent riff-raff in his Militia. For this reason all members of the Party were later forced to serve in the new *Brigate Nere*. At first all Italian military personnel were ordered to report to the Germans, but then Graziani was given a chance to do some recruiting of his own at good rates of pay; those who reported were mostly sent to Germany to be trained. Urach remarked how strange it was to see some Italians running about in Germany in uniform and fully armed and others in a state of the most abject servitude.¹

For all those Italians—quite apart from active anti-Fascists—who would not positively support Neo-Fascism were now treated as belonging to the lowest category of subhuman enemy. Ordinary Germans felt bitterly towards them for their second ‘betrayal’ after they had been supplied and bolstered up by their ally; most Germans, in fact, accepted Goebbels’ propaganda, and fell in with Hitler’s policy. Goebbels had long ago pronounced that he judged a nation by the positive nature of its response to anti-Semitism, and events were now confirming that the Italian response was negative. The dissolution of the Axis was expressed by the German treatment of General Marras. He, with his Naval colleague, and Goring’s old friend the Air Attaché, Teucci, all of them entitled to diplomatic privilege, correctly left Berlin for Italy at the time of the Armistice. At Munich they were arrested, sent back to be kept forty days in solitary confinement at Gestapo headquarters in Berlin, and then sent as ‘political delinquents’ to the concentration camp at Oranienburg for five months; since Italians, unless they re-attached themselves to Mussolini, were to be treated as traitors, they were allowed no extra food-parcels at all, though these were customarily received by the otherwise starving inhabitants of Oranienburg.

Simoni had heard shooting in the mountains near Tarvisio early in August, and, if demoralization was widespread at the time of the Armistice, it was by no means complete. In France and Croatia and Slovenia some Italians joined the local resistance. In Italy some of the Alpini kept their arms and established themselves in the mountains above Bergamo or in Piedmont. Instead of reporting to the Germans or Graziani,

¹ On the same occasion in Jan. 1944, when he went to Germany for a few days and returned to Gargnano via Berne.

men of military age disappeared to join such nuclei or to form fresh ones themselves. Certain industrialists came to the rescue in the difficult matter of supplies. When in October 1943 some Alpini Partisans came down to the village of Boves in Piedmont to look for provisions, they overpowered a few German soldiers they found there and took four of them away as prisoners. German troops from Turin very soon appeared, and the priest of Boves was told that unless the four prisoners were brought back within two hours, the village would be burnt to the ground. So the village was obliterated and most of the villagers who survived were taken off by the Germans to be beaten up and deported.

Italian resistance did not break; it was fortified. Allied strategy was difficult to understand and Allied air-raids seemed merciless. Ordinary life was very hard, with scarce supplies and soaring prices. Yet Neo-Fascist propaganda, with its generous offers of revolutionary social reform, made no impression. The Italians turned out to be very artists of resistance. After the hateful Axis years the best elements threw their souls into this fight against the Germans, while the common humanity of the ordinary people drew them in, too, on the patriots' side. Immediately after the armistice the O.K.W. had offered 1,800 lire or £20 sterling [*sic*] for any Allied prisoner handed over to the Germans. Though the rewards increased and the punishments for failure to comply were terrible, it was the rarest thing for a prisoner to be betrayed; rather he was fed and clothed and helped on his way. Secret all-party committees of national liberation¹ sprang up everywhere. Clandestine newspapers multiplied. The Partisan or Patriot groups increased. Germans were sometimes struck down in the streets. Then ten times as many Italian hostages would be shot.

The German Reign of Terror in Italy was organized by Himmler's agent, the indispensable Dollmann, who had been attached to the German Embassy in Rome since 1939 and whose fluent Italian had explained his presence at the most important Axis interviews; on such occasions the Fuhrer had been wont to offer him special marks of favour. The career of S.S. *Standartenfuhrer* Dollmann is characteristic of successful German

¹ Co-ordinated by the central *Comitato di Liberazione Nazionale* (C.L.N.) of Upper Italy in Milan.

candidates for the master class. His mother was the daughter of a well-known Munich doctor; of his father nothing seems to have been known. Before Hitler came to power Frau Dollmann kept a *pensione* in a palace near the Pincio, and Eugen, her good-looking son, studied *Kunstgeschichte* and flirted with the pretty ladies he guided around Rome. He was genuinely *cultivé*, but believed in the philosophy of force and naturally became an enthusiastic Nazi. This and his perfect Italian led to his enrolment as interpreter when Himmler went to Libya and to his appointment to the German Embassy in Rome. With the outbreak of war Dollmann went into S.S. uniform and tore around Rome in a giant Mercedes car. In the spring of 1940 a Swiss diplomat spoke of him as 'complètement transformé physiquement; d'un joli garçon blond et un peu mou', he had become a fiend of forcefulness with tightly pressed lips and chin thrust forward. General Maeltzer was the Reichswehr officer in command in Rome in 1943, but it was Dollmann who supervised the torture-houses in the via Tasso and at the *Pensione Jaccarino*; it was Dollmann who gave the orders carried out at S.S. headquarters at the *Hotal Regina* in Milan and who kept an eye on certain Neo-Fascist criminals, like Koch and Carità, whom he used as his instruments. In March 1944, in the via Rasella, near the tunnel in the centre of Rome, a bomb was thrown and killed thirty-two German soldiers. Though Kesselring was technically in command it was Dollmann who bore the real responsibility for the gruesome machine-gunning of 320 hostages in the Fosse Ardeatine in revenge.

The *Resistenza* was stiffened, not weakened, by these things, and very little information was elicited from the victims of the S.S. No doubt Dollmann nurtured S.S. ferocity with so large an increase of obstinate slaves to maltreat, but he was short of German personnel; the existence of the Neo-Fascists, who were like the Germans' jackals, suited him also because they diverted some popular hatred from the Germans themselves. But in Reichswehr eyes the urgent practical need in 1943 was industrial output—labour, therefore, and industrial plant. Northern Italy was rich in both and was therefore an area of paramount importance. The Germans were primarily interested in transferring Italian labour to Germany. The S.S. found reason to deport large numbers of people punitively. In addition, an

appeal to the Italians had been published in Kesselring's name before the end of September 1943; they were invited to join the free workers who were founding the New Europe in Germany; applicants, it was stated, would not need an Italian passport for the journey. From that time on the Neo-Fascist papers were full of the most seductive offers from leading German firms such as Siemens; the response, however, was negligible.

Though all economic key positions were now in direct German control, the attempt to stimulate production in the north Italian factories was disappointing. The workers found every imaginable reason to go slow, to be ill, to indulge in short sit-down strikes (based on some technical complaint) which were difficult to punish. Many employers conspired with them to keep production down. One of the basic principles of the New Europe which Hitler wished to create was the concentration of industry in the hands of the class of masters with its centre in Germany; territory which was not so directly dominated by the supermen was to be de-industrialized. Since, in addition, it was impossible to make the Milanese and Torinese workmen work hard in Italy, and since the north Italian factories were most inadequately defended from air attack,¹ the German economic authorities aimed at the transference of Italy's industrial plant to Germany. There were large-scale strikes in Milan in December 1943 and March 1944 on various pretexts. These sharpened the intentions of the Germans, but when in June 1944 the Fiat workers found the occupation authorities preparing to remove their plant from the suburbs of Turin they staged a fresh series of strikes.

While the S.S., which represented the thought of Hitler, believed that Neo-Fascism had its uses, the Reichswehr and especially General Leyers, who was in economic command in Italy, complained that one could have worked far better without the Mussolini shadow-Government. Indeed, the Germans occupying Italy were soon on the very worst of terms with the Neo-Fascists. Both S.S. and Reichswehr disliked the socialistic slogans emanating from Salò, slogans which in their view encouraged the subversive tendencies in the Italian factories. Normal German contempt for Italians was naturally increased tenfold by the half-criminal, half-frivolous personnel which was

¹ The Germans deliberately neglected the air defence of Italy.

almost all that the Neo-Fascist leaders could enrol. Any better elements which had joined them tended more and more to desert to the patriots. Some youths joined the Republican Guard (the Militia was incorporated in this) in order not to be sent to Germany and in order to procure arms with which to desert. German sources confirmed that the major part of the Neo-Fascist Monte Rosa and San Marco divisions, trained in Germany, deserted to the Partisans when they were brought back to Italy. The rest of the story of General Marras is typical. He and his colleagues were returned to Italy in the spring of 1944, but the Neo-Fascist soldiers in whose charge they were went over to the Patriots and Marras became a Partisan chief. At about this time—on 18 April—a decree was issued in Mussolini's name which threatened every Partisan with summary execution if he failed to surrender by 25 May; the effect, however, was trivial.

The friction between Germans and Neo-Fascists was so great that ordinary citizens lived by it. If the Neo-Fascist authorities threatened to confiscate one's house, the best thing to do was to appeal to the Germans for protection, and if one was in difficulties with the Germans there was a chance, though a very much smaller one, that the Neo-Fascists would help one out. The patriots were very early aware of this, and it became one of the trump cards in the C.L.N. hand.

The war dragged on disappointingly for everyone through the winter of 1943-4. On the one side people became desperately tired of waiting for the 'Second Front', on the other they wearied of the hints about new weapons of victory. In March Hitler had, as he thought, cleared away the last anomaly he had left in Axis Europe, which was the semi-autonomous Hungary of Horthy and Kállay. When Horthy was summoned to Klessheim in the previous year to be rapped over the knuckles for his unheroic attitude to the Jews the uncomprehending old man had asked, 'But what am I supposed to do? Shall I beat them to death, perhaps?' The answer came back: Yes,¹ and the Germans marched into Hungary to see that it was done. Yet if Budapest was conquered, there was insurrection in Zagreb. Pavelić, the doyen of the Quislings, had congratulated the

¹ See *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part x, p. 141; *Nazi Conspiracy and Aggression*, vol. vii, pp. 190-1.

Fuhrer upon the elimination of Italy from her long-promised *Lebensraum* in the Balkan peninsula. He thereupon started negotiations by which he hoped to induce the suppressed Peasant Party to collaborate with him. This was defection to the enemy and Kasche forbade it. Pavelić was defeated, however, not by the German veto, but by persistent refusal from the followers of Maček.¹ In 1944 the German hold on the Balkans was like that of a rotting, dead hand, which the Russian armies would soon strike away.

Every imaginable rumour circulated with regard to Mussolini. Some said he was dead or bedridden, others that he had gone back to Rocca delle Caminate, and others again that he had gone to live with the Fuhrer. Occasionally he was brought out for some anniversary celebration,² but he looked so old that no member of the public was allowed to see much of him. From time to time it was found necessary for a special correspondent of the *Volksische Beobachter* to assure the world that there was still the old fire in his eyes. In February 1944 Hassell noted with disgust that the Germans had photographed Mussolini triumphant at chess, a game which he never played.³

There were endless rumours, also, about Mussolini's state of mind. According to Neo-Fascist diaries posthumously found,⁴ he desired at one point to denounce the Lateran Pacts and favoured Farinacci's furious campaign against the Vatican. It is even claimed that he would have begged Hitler to use V-weapons against Rome had not his mistress protested. Apart from outbursts of boasting and strutting, and apart from the fact that he must have known very little about the outside world, it is difficult to believe that Mussolini had reacquired many illusions. No doubt he changed his mind at least as frequently as in the days when Ciano recorded his vacillations. But in his heart he knew the truth—that he would not have long to wait for retribution and that there was nothing he could do to save himself. He was not very active. What with the doctor, the masseur, his children, and his mistress who lived

¹ A sharp refusal was sent by Maček's deputy, Košutić (who had married the daughter of Stjepan Radić), to Pavelić on 30 Sept. 1943.

² Such as that of the death of D'Annunzio on 1 March each year.

³ Hassell, *op. cit.*, p. 350.

⁴ That of Tassinari, for instance. See *Il Momento* (Rome), 9 and 13 Nov 1945.

near by with her family, there was not much time left in the day. In the old days he had prided himself as an equestrian, but now the only exercise he could manage was to ride a bicycle round the garden. The old journalist read and marked¹ as many newspapers as he could get, and later on he wrote the apologia which was published that summer as a series of articles in the Neo-Fascist *Corriere della Sera*. According to the Editor of that paper² the German censorship interfered several times, on one occasion on Farinacci's behalf. On another Mussolini described Hitler as having told him at Munich in 1938 that on returning to Germany from Italy in the previous May he had doubled the pensions of the Socialist ex-Ministers, since it was they who had rid Germany of the Hohenzollern monarchy. This revelation was too much for the German Embassy, and we are told that Mussolini dropped the whole story rather than ask Hitler's leave. His articles then appeared as the book to which reference has been made.³ The last sentence of the Duce's preface to this publication was exquisitely ambiguous: 'Italy is crucified to-day,' he wrote, 'but already the dawn of the Resurrection can be seen on the horizon.'

After Mackensen's disgrace⁴ Rahn had been appointed German Ambassador to Italy; he withdrew at an early stage from Rome to Fasano. He was a relatively mild Nazi who succeeded in taking his job seriously. He occasionally protested to Sauckel about the drain of Italian labour to Germany and he occasionally protested over German looting of Italian works of art. But he was not much less futile than Mackensen and he could not stem the tide of the New Order which had lashed across Italy. Mussolini probably had more contact with Rahn at this time than with his own Ministers.

Towards the end of April 1944, Mussolini made a brief demonstration of energy. He undertook an expedition to Germany with Graziani and Mazzolini and Rahn and the inevitable S.S. comrades, Karl Wolff and Dollmann; Anfuso, Ciano's former *chef de cabinet*, who was Neo-Fascist Ambassador to Germany, left Berlin to join them. Hitler received the party

¹ According to Rahn's friend quoted below (p. 333).

² See Amicucci, *op. cit.*

³ *Il tempo del bastone e della carota*.

⁴ Simoni noted at Tarvisio that Mackensen was suddenly ordered to Berlin, and though he returned to Rome once again it was only to take leave.

in the later Axis tradition at Schloss Klessheim on 22 and 23 April. It was like a phantom play, except for one novelty: the German records of the conversations¹ reveal the astonishing fact that Mussolini and Graziani were allowed time to speak. While Mussolini felt compelled to refer more than once to his profound belief in the victory of Germany,² he managed to indicate some Neo-Fascist weaknesses: he found courage, moreover, to protest very cautiously against the German seizure of South Tyrol and Trieste and to complain that the treatment of Italian 'internees' in Germany depressed the morale of their relatives in Italy. Hitler replied with a variety of strange and significant statements showing, *inter alia*, an odd conflict in his mind between the occasional recrudescence of his attitude towards the Duce before September 1943 and his new condition of disbelief. He complained that the Italian workers in Germany were lazy and Communist and that 'the Italian troops at the [Russian] front had sung the "Internationale" and had made insulting remarks about the Duce and himself'. He also stated that among the Italians 'only Fascist units and certain anti-German elements had had real military value'. Finally he made it plain that it was still essential to his plans that Mussolini should be kept alive, and in connexion with the Duce's health Hitler intimated that mistrust of Morell³ was as absurd as mistrust of Galileo had once been. All this was recorded in the German Minute. Graziani noted that Hitler argued against capitulation on the grounds that coalitions never last for more than five years.⁴

At last in June great events crowded upon one another's heels. On 4 June the Allied armies entered Rome, and on the night of 5-6 June Allied troops landing in Normandy began the invasion of France. A week later the first V1 was fired from Northern France at Britain.

The Axis was broken when Mussolini fell, but the expulsion of the Germans from Rome, eleven months later, revealed its

¹ See *Department of State Bulletin*, vol. xv, nos. 381 and 388.

² Cf his first meeting with Hitler on 15 Sept. 1943.

³ A German diplomat who frequented the Führer's headquarters told his colleagues in Switzerland in Dec. 1942, that Hitler called for Morell to give him injections at all hours of the day. Only Jodl seems to have escaped from treatment by Morell.

⁴ See Graziani, *op. cit.*, p. 461. Mussolini, he says, went from Klessheim to inspect the San Marco Division and returned to Italy on 25 April.

utter disintegration. Although Florence was not to be liberated until the end of August, Italy vibrated with the fall of Axis Rome.¹ The Neo-Fascist generals met at Bergamo on 15 June to review the situation together with representatives of the *Wehrmacht*; the Minute of the meeting was dated 22 June. It was a frank confession of defeat. 'After the fall of Rome a greater depression of a spiritual character . . . and a big increase in the number of Partisans must be noted.' General Montagna reported that 'the rebels already control nearly all Piedmont' and referred to the National Guard as scarcely resisting them even when it did not 'actually connive'. General Jalla reported a serious situation in Liguria, while General Diamanti feared that 1,000 rebels had just entered Milan in the night (14-15 June). To oppose the Partisans the Neo-Fascists could barely muster 1,100 in all Milan, 500 of whom belonged to the now dubious Muti battalion.² The 300,000 industrial workers of the city, solidly anti-Fascist, were expected to occupy the factories at any moment. As for the Veneto, that was reported to be in a state of great disturbance. It was characteristic of the whole situation that the Neo-Fascist commanders, whose inadequate forces were inadequately armed, begged the participating German General, Lungershausen, to allow them at least the arms which were taken from captured 'rebels'. Lungershausen answered politely but he promised nothing; he emphasized that various Neo-Fascist battalions had disappeared since the fall of Rome, and he ordered steps to be taken to concentrate their men at Bologna in order that the severest punishment be inflicted upon them.³

Two days later Kesselring himself issued an Order to the following effect:

'The Partisan situation in the Italian theatre, particularly Central Italy, has recently deteriorated to such an extent that it constitutes a serious danger to the fighting troops and their supply lines as well as to the war industry and economic potential. The fight against the Partisans must be carried on with all the means at our disposal

¹ On 22 Apr. Mussolini had urged upon Hitler that this would be so.

² See *Verbale del 4° Gran Rapporto tenuto dal Capo di Stato Maggiore dell' Esercito a Bergamo il 15 giugno 1944 XXII*.

³ In addition to the Republican Guards and the *Brigate Nere*, Neo-Fascism had several other 'para-military' groups of supporters, the chief ones being the Muti battalion named after Ettore Muti (killed in Rome in July 1943), and the 10th M.A.S. (*Motoscafi anti-sommersibili*.)

and with the utmost severity. I will protect any commander who exceeds our usual restraint in the choice of severity of the methods he adopts against Partisans. In this connexion the old principle holds good that a mistake in the choice of methods in executing one's orders is better than failure or neglect to act.'

And on 20 June this Order was reinforced by a second which emphasized that the first one

'does not represent an empty threat. . . . Wherever there is evidence of considerable numbers of Partisan groups a proportion of the male population of the area will be arrested, and in the event of an act of violence being committed these men will be shot.'¹

This expressed the relative restraint of the Reichswehr chief in Italy, of whom the S.S. and Hermann-Goring Division were semi-independent.

On 18 June

'two German soldiers were killed and a third wounded in a fight with Partisans in the village of Civitella. Fearing reprisals, the inhabitants evacuated the village, but when the Germans discovered this, punitive action was postponed. On June 29th when the local inhabitants were returned and were feeling secure once more, the Germans carried out a well-organized reprisal, combing the neighbourhood. Innocent inhabitants were often shot on sight. During that day, two hundred and twelve men, women, and children in the immediate district were killed. Some of the dead women were found completely naked. . . . Ages of the dead ranged from one to eighty-four years. Approximately one hundred houses were destroyed by fire. Some of the victims were burned alive in their homes.'²

This was only one of innumerable incidents of the kind. The Bozen S.S., young Germans from the South Tyrol, who mostly spoke Italian, were notoriously cruel. A Swiss friend of the new German Ambassador in Italy came back horrified from a visit to him³—the Hermann-Goring Division and Karl Wolff's S.S. troops were behaving in Italy as if it were Russia, he said. And, what was more, they now often introduced so-called Cossacks or Vlassov troops to finish off their atrocities for them, as we

¹ *Nuremberg Trial Proceedings*, part ix, p. 53 et seq. While Kesselring emphasized the gravity of the situation in central Italy, the Neo-Fascist generals had been reporting mainly on the north.

² *Report of United Nations War Crimes Commission*, quoted at Nuremberg Trial, 13 Mar. 1946.

³ Apr. 1944.

know had happened in France.¹ The friendship of Italy and Germany consummated in the Steel Pact and the New Order amounted to this.

The Neo-Fascist Ministers, as Mussolini knew, were intriguing more than ever against one another and against him. Sometimes they courted the Germans, sometimes they sought contact with the patriots. Mussolini himself did much the same. After the Allied capture of Rome he decided that he must see the Fuhrer again, but it was not until 20 July that, together with Graziani and Dollmann, he arrived at Rastenburg. Mussolini's train was met by a shaken Hitler with his right arm bound up. For it was the very day upon which Stauffenberg's bomb had exploded at the Fuhrer's midday conference, killing Schmudt and three others, injuring Hitler's right arm and leg and damaging his eardrums. But he told Mussolini that he had just had the greatest good fortune of his life: Providence had snatched him from peril once again, in order that he should 'finally' triumph over his enemies. At 5 p.m. the Fuhrer-Duce Conference began, with Ribbentrop, Goring, Keitel, as well as Graziani and Dollmann. This time Hitler sat silently and vacantly, munching Morell's pills. All the German leaders had become physical and psychological wrecks. For two years now Hitler had ordered them to be injected by Morell. On this fearful summer afternoon with the Allies advancing easily in France and the Russians not far away at the gates of Warsaw, these German heroes began to quarrel pettishly over the tea as to why the war was not won yet; Ribbentrop, angry that someone had neglected his *von* by adoption,² cursed the generals and Goring shook his marshal's baton at him. Mussolini was horrified. These northern savages were worse than his Neo-Fascist intriguers.³ Long ago, in Hitler's heyday, he had asked Starhemberg whether Hitler was mad⁴—now he must have known that he had harnessed himself and his country to a chronic paranoiac. It was significant that on this occasion Keitel asked Graziani for Italian air units to come to the Germans' help against the advancing Russians.

¹ See above, Chapter XVII, p. 268.

² The *von* was due to his adoption by an aunt in 1925.

³ The account of this meeting came from Dollmann later, when he was in Allied captivity. It is quoted also in Allen W. Dulles, *Germany's Underground* (Macmillan, New York 1947).

⁴ See above, Chapter II.

When Hitler broadcast towards midnight¹ that night he declared that the group which had perpetrated the assassination plot against him 'believed it could thrust a dagger into our back as it did in 1918'. At the same time the Fuhrer likened the abortive attempt of 20 July 1944 to what he chose to call Badoglio's *coup* against Mussolini almost a year earlier. It is worth noting that the Italian collapse had made so great an impression in Germany that Kluge, who was in command of the German troops in France, thought it opportune to announce on that same day that 'For us there will be no repetition of 1918, nor of the example set by Italy'. Kluge had flirted with the Stauffenberg conspirators and his statement was an attempt to save himself with the Fuhrer.

Above all Hitler was resolved to show no humanity; if Mussolini, when put to the test, had proved to be a mere human weakling, he, Adolf Hitler, would show that he was strong and inexorable, a master not a slave. For over two years now he had been unhealthy, and more often than not in an insane condition; for the next nine months he became even more disagreeably abnormal. The story of his end has been told with such dangerous wit as to obscure the importance and the strength of Hitler's rule until 1942; however disloyal his underlings were to one another, they were held in his grip. But it is incontestable that after July 1944 the story degenerated into nothing but a ghastly farce.

There was discontent and opposition and despair in Germany, but after summer 1943 an obstinate resignation kept the Germans fighting. At no time was there any popular mass movement against the Nazis—no serious strikes—although people worked badly from morose fatigue. Berlin jokes were always as important as anything in indicating the *Stimmung* at least of the capital: in March 1944 Hassell noted the saying, 'I prefer to believe in victory than to go about with no head on my shoulders.'² On 20 July and after that Hitler himself ordered the S.S. to be—if that were possible—even more ruthless, and the punishment meted out to all those who could be in any way implicated with Stauffenberg was indescribably terrible. But while this was so, and while, as Kogon has said,³ the self-under-taken task of the S.S. became so enormous as to defy fulfilment,

¹ Central European time.

² Hassell, *op. cit.*

³ *Op. cit.*

Hitler and the faithful voice of Hitler, Goebbels, somehow kept their hold on a considerable portion of the German people. The so-called officers' clique had ramifications which reached to certain labour leaders, but not to mass opinion or sentiment. On the contrary mass feeling accepted the Party and S.S. version that the attempt on Hitler's life had been made by 'reactionaries' in their own class interest.

The attempt of 20 July had nourished Hitler's fantastic superstitiousness, for it was true that his life had again been saved by the chance of the position he had taken up; he was only obliged to stay in bed for four weeks. While S.S. stalwarts like Himmler and Kaltenbrunner and Karl Wolff put out all the peace-feelers they could to West and to East, Hitler convinced himself that the Allies and Russia were sure to fall apart in time to save him if he only held out. After six years of war, Frederick the Great had been saved from destruction by the defection of Russia from the hostile alliance when the Empress Elizabeth died in 1762. One of Hitler's favourite pastimes in this period was to have Carlyle's account of this miracle read aloud to him; when Roosevelt died on 12 April he once more believed that Providence had 'finally' pronounced in his favour.

While Hitler lost himself in an insane intransigence which he mistook for greatness, Mussolini was pursuing the opposite course. There were moments, of course, when all Neo-Fascists were to die fighting to the last on Italian territory, scorning to take refuge in Germany. Mussolini has been said to have wished at one point for the last stand to be made at Trieste, but Pavolini decided that the Valtellina was to be Italy's Redoubt. At the time of the German offensive in the Ardennes in December 1944 Mussolini made his last descent on Milan before the journey which ended with his death; on this Milanese occasion Graziani seems to have expressed strange confidence. But generally the fallen Duce spent his time searching in a senile, feverish way for any compromise. He had almost consistently desired peace with Russia, and there are indications that he would have welcomed negotiations with the Western Allies had they concerned themselves with him. The correspondence between Hitler and Mussolini had continued across the yawning gulf of disaster, and on 27 December 1944 the Fuhrer wrote his last New Year letter to the Duce. He was glad to hear from

Mussolini that Fascism was slowly re-consolidating. 'One thing is certain,' he said, 'and that is that neither Fascism nor National Socialism will ever be replaced in Europe by democracy.' He was convinced that 1944 had been the nadir, and that fortune would renew her favour now. The chief object of the letter, however, seemed to be to refer again to the 'lack of perfect harmony' which had at one time become evident between Germany and Italy with regard to Greece and Spain. In other words, the Fuhrer implied very broadly in this letter that if Italy had not attacked Greece—how both of them were haunted by this 'if'!—Spain would have joined them, Gibraltar would have been conquered, and the war would have been won. When Mussolini was captured by the Italian Partisans he was found to be treasuring this letter to prove with it that he had made his contribution to the Allied victory.

Early in 1945 Mussolini began to offer amnesties to the Partisans. He also encouraged a renegade Liberal called Cione, in conjunction with the journalist Concetto Pettinato, of the Turin *Stampa*, to start a 'democratic' Neo-Fascist wing which favoured greater freedom of criticism. Farinacci was indignant to the last, but the leader of one of the chief Neo-Fascist fighting groups, Prince Borghese of the 10th M.A.S., supported the Cione attempt at conciliation and gave orders to his followers accordingly. The Duce's search for a compromise was as futile as Hitler's determination to triumph implacably. By the end of 1944 the Italian Patriots felt confident. They had a collection of German uniforms by now which helped them to carry out all kinds of dare-devil feats. On New Year's Eve groups of them sprang on to the stage in three cabaret-cinemas near the Porta Venezia in Milan and forced the actors to read out Resistance manifestoes; then they withdrew with impunity.

Since nothing else could influence or eliminate Hitler, the war had to be fought out. The end of the Axis dictators has been only too favourite a journalistic theme. In each case it was characteristic. Mussolini see-sawed between the hope that the Germans would save him and the knowledge that they would not. He himself began to toy with the idea of fleeing to Switzerland, and it is interesting that his Minister of the Interior, Buffarini-Guidi, applied to the Swiss authorities several times for permission to cross the frontier but was always refused. Remembering

that he had once been a Socialist himself Mussolini thought wildly of saving himself by joining up with the clandestine Socialist Party, which was not represented in the Government of Rome at the time, though its representatives sat on the Committee of National Liberation.¹ When at last on 25 April, the day the Patriots were to liberate northern Italy, Mussolini met the Archbishop of Milan, Cardinal Schuster, in order to negotiate with the C.L.N., he found that Karl Wolff had agreed to unconditional surrender to the Allies in Italy without any reference to the Neo-Fascist Government. Mussolini took flight, then, with his last friends and Claretta Petacci, but all of them fell into the hands of the Patriots. He and she were separated from the rest, he faltering to the end between despair and the hope that the Partisans would be indulgent; they were not maltreated but were shot together near Tremezzo on the western shore of Lake Como on 28 April. Pavolini, Farinacci, and the others were shot too, and the corpses of all of them were taken to Milan² and hung in the Piazzale Loreto, where there had been a horrible massacre of patriot hostages in the summer of 1944.

It is not certain how fully Hitler was informed about Mussolini's death and its aftermath: it is therefore a matter of conjecture how the news may have affected him. On 30 April, ten days after his fifty-sixth birthday, he stage-managed his own exit to Valhalla, dragging for her only conjugal consolation his photographer's assistant, the wretched Eva Braun, along with him.³ In his last will and testament he bequeathed to the German nation the barbarous heritage of persecuting the Jews.

¹ See *Mussolini's Memoirs* (Contact, 1948), Introduction by C. J. S. Sprigge.

² Starace was among these people, though he had been in disgrace with Mussolini since 1941 and played no part in the Republic of Salò.

³ The details have been made familiar by H. Trevor-Roper in *The Last Days of Hitler* (Macmillan, 1947).

Epilogue

AT Christmas 1888, in Turin, Nietzsche wrote the preface to his main fulmination against Wagner¹ which he called—as well he might—‘an essay for psychologists, not for Germans’. Crispi was Premier of Italy at the time and was leading the country into quarrels with France and closer friendship with Germany. It was four months before Hitler’s birth. ‘I would have a word to whisper in the ears of the Italians, whom I love . . . an intelligent people will never make anything but a *mésalliance* with the Reich.’ We have seen how the Axis which Hitler created and to which Mussolini gave its name fulfilled Nietzsche’s warning.

Each of these dictators was like a malicious caricature of his own people. Mussolini was theatrical, vain, hypersensitive, and sceptical; he never really stepped outside traditional continuity. Hitler was hysterical, fanatical, romantic, and cruel. In their satisfaction in inflicting pain on other human creatures the cruelty and romanticism of Germans like Hitler and Himmler met; in sadism their split personalities were integrated. They were barbaric without the excuse of being primitive.

For many years Mussolini had rolled his eyes and brandished his chin, he had shouted cruel phrases with Romagnol violence, but his goal had never become clear to him: after years of delay, he had committed certain vague aspirations to paper, but without ever thinking out a method by which they might be realized. The aspirations in fact served chiefly as a Sorel ‘myth’ or as the stimulus to the political speculation so dear to Italians. In practice Mussolini was an opportunist and, far from destroying the ideas and institutions which he found in existence, he generally sought a compromise with them. Hitler made himself President as well as Chancellor of Germany and immediately started a preliminary campaign against the Christian Churches, but Mussolini came to terms with both the King and the Pope. The fact that the Fascist Grand Council, which the Duce created, could instigate his downfall, was a piece of ‘conservatism’ which

¹ *Nietzsche contra Wagner* (Vorwort).

seemed ludicrous to Hitler: it helped to convince him that Mussolini was no 'world-wide revolutionary'. By and large Mussolini remained an ordinary human being in doubt. Perhaps it is doubt which distinguishes the sane and the civilized from the mad and the barbarous.

Mussolini, partly owing to physical weaknesses, doubted excessively. This fact explains what Monsieur Gafencu¹ has analysed so brilliantly, 'le phénomène Ciano'. 'La fonction de Ciano était d'entretenir le doute.' His relation to the Duce—again it is Monsieur Gafencu who was inspired to grasp this—was like that of a court fool—'dont les plaisanteries provoquaient un malaise salutaire'—to his king. Lear's fool comments, as no one else could, on the old man's folly in placing his destiny in the hands of Goneril and Regan. Ciano was cheap and dissipated and sometimes servile, and one flinches a little from the parallel, but his role was the same. 'La voix du jeune ministre ne pouvait pas s'élever bien haut, puisqu'elle correspondait à une voix intérieure dans le chef du Gouvernement.' Mussolini and Ciano 'forment une unité contradictoire, un couple disproportionné et pourtant indissoluble'. Sometimes he liked to play the hero enthroned in solitude, above all he had been potent—except in Germany—as an orator addressing the masses; but Mussolini was dependent upon personal relationships. How different from Hitler who was never in doubt and who was never amused!

The metal with which the Rome-Berlin Axis was forged, so that it seems to have been warped from being a straight line into becoming a vicious circle, was Nietzsche, inspirer of Mussolini's words and of Hitler's deeds. Nietzsche was a German who longed to be a Pole; he admired France and he loved Italy. The medical records of his madness² show that he identified himself either with God or with the first King of modern Italy. He feared the Germans as Mussolini did, and he despised them as Hitler despised them when he found them unappreciative. Out of his fear of the commonplaceness of the German middle class and of the mentality of anti-Semitism, Nietzsche formulated the doctrines which then nourished Hitler; 'Rien en lui ne semblait sortir de l'ordinaire', Gafencu noted as his first impression of the Fuhrer.

¹ Op. cit.

² See E. F. Podach, *The Madness of Nietzsche* (1931).

'When to-day we see German youth marching under the sign of the swastika, our minds go back to Nietzsche's *Thoughts out of Season*, in which this youth was invoked for the first time. . . . And when we call out to this youth *Heil Hitler*, we greet at the same time, with the same cry, Friedrich Nietzsche.' This was written by Baumler in 1937.¹ Nietzsche's was not the only thought which influenced Hitler; it has been seen that there were strong currents of the old Pan-German Austrian state of mind in him and of Wagnerian mythology which intermingled with them. The influence of Nietzsche, however, remained predominant, of Nietzsche who was shocked by the 'vulgarity' of John Stuart Mill.² It is almost incredible to find how exactly Nietzsche formulated Hitler's egocentric obsessions. 'I teach that there are higher and lower men,' he wrote, 'and that a single individual may in certain circumstances justify whole millennia of existence—that is to say, a wealthier, more gifted, greater and more complete man, as compared with innumerable imperfect and fragmentary men . . .'; '. . . the "higher nature" of the great man manifests itself precisely in being different, in being unable to communicate with others . . .'; and, again, he defines mighty men as those with a passion for dominion and a love of change and deception. Nor does Nietzsche fail to insist upon the forcible prevention of the reproduction of lower beings. All this is to be found in *Der Wille zur Macht*. As for *Zarathustra*, it echoes through the events of Hitler's life; one has only to think of the threat to Schuschnigg to overwhelm him 'like a storm in the spring'.

It has been said that Hitler's ascendancy over the Germans has never been explained. The Communist formula which equates National Socialism with Fascism as a camouflaged 'come-back' of the propertied classes at the price of bread and circuses is misleading. It is true that the most powerful industrialists in Italy used Fascism as their instrument. In Germany the majority of the big employers and landowners favoured Hitler's rise to power. Rearmament and the policy of *Schacht* suited them very well, and the *Führerprinzip* in the organization of industry satisfied their most conservative dreams. On the

¹ *Nietzsche und der Nationalsozialismus*, by A. Baumler (Berlin, 1937).

² This because Mill could claim that 'what is right for one man is right for another'.

other hand, it is certain that Hitler went to war against their wishes, and it is probable that they would have liked to be rid of him long before material destruction in Germany reached the point at which it had arrived in April 1945. Hitler was the ally, while it suited him, of the German industrialists, but never their tool. Like Mussolini, they were forced to be part of the dream of this subnormal adolescent who, with all his consistency in action, might well have ended in a humbler madhouse than the Berlin bunker of the Führer.

It seems monotonous to refer to Nietzsche again, but it is he who illuminates most brightly the irrational nature of the power of Adolf Hitler. In one of his outbursts against Wagner¹ Nietzsche speaks of that *hysterical-erotic* quality which so much pleased Wagner in women. 'Only look at our women when they are "wagnetisiert": welche "Unfreiheit des Willens"! . . . Welches Geschehen-lassen, Über-sich-ergehen-lassen.'² Perhaps they guess that they are more attractive to some men in this state . . . reason the more to worship their Cagliostro and magician!' Anyone who has lived in Germany will recognize what Nietzsche meant—Shirer described it in his *Berlin Diary* when he spoke of the audience at Hitler's *Winterhilfe* meeting on 4 September 1940.³ Hitler expressed and integrated something which then became monstrously powerful, the hysteria of Germany.

'Lorsque, à la suite d'une formule ou d'une idée, il s'échauffait assez pour livrer un peu de soi-même, le son de sa voix, et plus encore le sens de ses paroles, le choix de ses arguments, l'enchaînement de ses pensées semblaient se trouver en une étrange harmonie avec une force invisible qui l'entourait. Il devenait alors un démagogue dans le sens antique du mot: l'homme qui prête sa voix à la foule et à travers lequel la foule parle . . . derrière lui, on le sentait, il y avait son double — un double collectif: "la masse", la foule innombrable, le peuple — et le discours avait l'allure d'une grande armée en marche.'⁴

With the madman's knowledge of how to excite, Hitler combined the madman's—or the superman's—inability to communicate normally with others as individuals: he either mesmerized or frightened them or perhaps did both these things.

¹ *Aufzeichnungen zu einer Schrift über Wagner* (Werke, Bd. vii, Leipzig, 1931).

² Impossible to render in English—it indicates an hysterical passivity.

³ See Chapter XIV.

⁴ Gafencu, op. cit.

The women of Germany, it has been seen, were peculiarly susceptible to his approach, nor were the men very different. Though Hitler, like Nietzsche, was probably impotent¹ and not a pervert, the masculine homage he received was often passionate, whether it came from members of the Stefan George circle or from groups of *Wandervögel*. Negatively it was of importance that 'he had the gift of inspiring in those who resisted him a feeling of isolation',² a gift which had helped him to conceive the system of the Nazi concentration camp.

Another factor in Hitler's success was his skill in concealing his true objectives except from an inner *élite*. The majority of professing National Socialists held only Fascist views; they were willing to sacrifice liberty to efficiency and they were racially arrogant, but they did not wish for the destruction of 1,500 years of civilization nor for the inversion of accepted morality. By the time that they began to feel that Hitlerism spelt the end of Christianity and humanism in favour of biological mechanism, there was very little they could do by way of protest. The scepticism and gloom in Germany, and especially in Berlin, during most of the Axis period, may be attributed to the hysterical and the esoteric nature of Hitlerism. Between the injections of hysteria, enthusiasm flagged, and doubts grew as to what it was to which one was committed.

Mussolini was neither perverse nor hysterical. To charm Italian crowds he had had to be theatrical. It was by stimulating his lust for power and the fear of isolation that Hitler had subjugated Mussolini; from the day in 1936 when he felt cut off from France he had been won by the Führer. There was never any personal intimacy between Hitler and Mussolini, quite apart from the formal second person plural to which their sense of their importance kept the dictators. When Hitler wrote to Mussolini in 1942 that he perhaps better than any other human being could share the Duce's feelings at the Acropolis³ he was writing in terms of 'greatness', not in terms of friendship. While Mussolini was perplexed by Hitler, for Hitler Mussolini was simply a symbolic figure in Hitler's world of

¹ Both of them were thought to be syphilitic, but either of them might have imagined the symptoms; nor is it certain that an impotent man is immune from sexual infection.

² Gafencu, op. cit.

³ Hitler to Mussolini, 4 Aug. 1942.

fantasy until September 1943. Mussolini was always devoured with doubt and anxiety with regard to Hitler and he pounced on Gafencu in the spring of 1939 to know what the Führer had said about the Axis. Neither to Lloyd George in 1936 nor to Gafencu in 1939 nor to Sumner Welles in 1940 did Hitler speak of his friendship with Italy, for he was sure of it. (Instead he excited himself about Britain.) It was part of his madman's logic to destroy Ciano who was Mussolini's doubt.

It has been seen that the New Order can most nearly be explained as Hitler's interpretation of the aspirations of Nietzsche, and it has been seen that the Italians had sabotaged this New Order with growing effect, both before Mussolini's dismissal in July 1943 and after his supposed rehabilitation in the north of Italy. Between the collapse of Fascism and the end of the war, the biggest shock to Hitler's New Europe came in August 1944 with the liberation of France and the defection of Rumania. When De Gaulle arrived in Paris to witness the damaged Fifth Column of the Hotel Crillon it was felt that Europe was freed. But this was a dangerous anticipation. Though the Russians joined up with the Partisans and freed Belgrade in October 1944, and the British were in Athens in November, it was May 1945 before the Germans in Croatia surrendered. Between summer 1944 and spring 1945 Hitler worked much evil, an enormous amount of pointless destruction, until suddenly the Germans collapsed and the concentration camps gave up their living and their dead. One of the finest performances of this time was the prevention by the Italian Partisans of the destruction of their factories as Hitler had planned it; by their skilful preparation they saved the major part of Italian industrial plant from the fate of the factories in many other parts of Europe.

With masochistic German method the *Gotterdammerung* was prepared. Since 1941 plans for the case of defeat had been begun, and it appears that Hitler communicated some of this programme to Mussolini at Rastenburg on 14 September 1943.¹ The earth was to be scorched so that the Allies should be blamed for famine and unemployment. One must go on fighting a hopeless struggle partly because the Allies and Russia might fall apart before they had won, but for other reasons too. The

¹ See *Il Momento* (Rome), 3 Nov. 1945, and other (earlier) sources.

fighting must go on in order to gain every possible hour for the preparation of the Nazi Redoubt in the mountains of Styria, Bavaria, and the Tyrol. There it might be possible to resist actively for some time, Hitler thought, and this would not only give scope for the nihilistic joys of self-destruction after the will to power had been temporarily satiated, but would have great importance for the Nazi myth. For two or three years now the Nazi leaders had been willing to admit that Germany might lose the second great war in the Nazi century, only to triumph more tremendously in the third. And she would never have been beaten. In 1918, as the legend ran, she was 'stabbed in the back', but now she would fight till she could fight no more, only to rise again. Sometimes there was talk of an Italian sector in the 'Redoubt' to which the Neo-Fascists should retire, but it has been seen that they and Mussolini were without any steady enthusiasm for the plan.

When on 20 July 1944, at the Hitler-Mussolini tea-party at the Führer's headquarters, someone mentioned the massacre of 30 June 1934, Hitler leapt to his feet with foam on his lips; he ranted for half an hour about the revenge he would take against women and children after Stauffenberg's attempt upon his life. But the intensified S.S. terror which closed in upon Germany after this was not merely a matter of revenge, for it was more deliberate. Mass arrests of all possibly oppositional personalities were intended also to prevent any group from negotiating with the Allies to accept surrender.

Preparations were made to provision and fortify the 'Redoubt' and Hitler was to go to Bavaria on his last birthday, 20 April 1945, to direct the fighting from there. He decided, however, that events had overtaken that part of his plan. The rest of it held good. The Führer himself was to leave no trace behind him so that some kind of Barbarossa legend should arise—he would not have feared refutations by witty Oxford dons. The tenacious Martin Bormann, in whose hands the organization of clandestine Nazi activity for the future was concentrated, was to disappear; of the major War Criminals he was the only one who could not be found. Lastly, the initiated were to become Communists in the Russian area of occupation and whatever facilitated their work in the Allied zones, in order to foment discord between the U.S.S.R. and the English-speaking Powers.

The 'Redoubt' was to be a basis for clandestine Nazi work which would exploit the aftermath of the South Tyrolese dispute; the post-war Italian offer of repatriation to the German-speaking South Tyrolese, who had opted for Germany in December 1940, provided an opportunity for the return of good Nazis to intensify friction.

It is a terrifying reflection that a sick man like Nietzsche, who knew that he would lose his reason and who was written off years ago as a *fin de siècle* failure, should have projected and facilitated the agony of Europe forty years after his death. The fact is not altered by dismissing Nietzsche as an early symptom of decay. Where Nietzsche gloried in the cruelty of nature, half a century later Hitler gloried in the cruelty of machines. It seems strange that Nietzsche has been classified with the philosophers; his place is perhaps with the poets and certainly with the prophets. At the beginning of January 1889, hovering between sanity and madness, Nietzsche wrote: 'I myself, I, who with my own hands have created this tragedy—I who have tied the knot of morality into existence—I myself have killed all the gods in the fourth act—because of morality! What is to become now of the fifth? Where is the tragic solution to be found?' And then, as if he foresaw the funeral pyre of Hitler and the suspended corpse of Mussolini: 'A satyr's game, a farcical epilogue, the continuous proof that the long essential tragedy is over. . . .'¹

Europe revolted against Axis rule, human decency rose up against *Furchtbarkeit*. But both the New Order and the struggle against it were so costly that we do not know yet whether the price paid was not civilization itself. That would be the fulfilment of Hitler's suicidal dream.

¹ Quoted in Podach, op. cit.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

APART from official and semi-official publications the most useful books relating to the history of the Rome-Berlin Axis are the following; this of course is not offered as an exhaustive bibliography, nor as a list of all the books I have used. For a *Note on Sources* see p. xiii.

- E. AMICUCCI, *I 600 giorni di Mussolini* (Faro, Rome, 1948)
 P. BADOGLIO, *Italia nella Seconda Guerra mondiale* (Mondadori, Milan, 1946).
 I. BONOMI, *Diario di un anno* (Garzanti, Milan, 1947).
 J. BRAUNTHAL, *The Tragedy of Austria* (Gollancz, London, 1948).
 G. CASTELLANO, *Come firmai l'armistizio di Cassibile* (Mondadori, Milan, 1945).
 C. CIANFERRA, *The Vatican and the War* (Dutton, New York, 1945).
 G. CIANO, *Diario* (Rizzoli, Milan, 1946).
 ———, *L'Europa verso la catastrofe* (Mondadori, Milan, 1948).
 B. DAHLERUS, *The Last Attempt* (Hutchinson, London, 1948) (see p. xv).
 M. DONOSTI, *Mussolini e l'Europa* (Leonardo, Rome, 1945).
 A. W. DULLES, *Germany's Underground* (Macmillan, New York, 1947).
 C. FAVAGROSSA, *Perché perdemmo la guerra* (Rizzoli, Milan, 1947).
 A. FRANÇOIS-PONCET, *Souvenirs d'une ambassade à Berlin* (Flammarion, Paris, 1946).
 M. FUCHS, *A Pact with Hitler* (Gollancz, London, 1939).
 G. GAFENCU, *Derniers jours de l'Europe* (Egloff, Paris, 1946).
 M. G. GAMELIN, *Servir — Les Armées françaises de 1940* (Plon, Paris, 1946).
 H. B. GISEVIUS, *Bis zum bittern Ende* (Fretz & Wasmuth, Zürich, 1946).
 ———, *The Goebbels Diaries* (Hamish Hamilton, London, 1948).
 R. GRAZIANI, *Ho difeso la patria* (Garzanti, Milan, 1948).
 E. GRAZZI, *Il principio della fine* (Faro, Rome, 1946).
 U. VON HASSELL, *Vom andern Deutschland* (Atlantis Verlag, Zürich, 1946).
 K. HAUSHOFER: a succession of works, including: *Geopolitik des Pazifischen Ozeans* (Berlin, 1925); *Grenzen in ihrer geographischen und politischen Bedeutung* (Berlin, 1927); *Weltpolitik von Heute* (Berlin, 1934); *Weltmeere und Weltmächte* (Berlin, 1937).
 K. HEIDEN, *Adolf Hitler — eine Biographie* (Europa Verlag, Zürich, 1936-7).
 A. HITLER, *Mein Kampf* (Verlag Franz Eher, Munich, edition of 1933).
 ———, *Hitler e Mussolini — Lettere e documenti* (Rizzoli, Milan, 1946).

- E. KOGON, *Der S.S. Staat* (Karl Alber, Munich, 1946).
- E. KORDT, *Wahn und Wirklichkeit* (Union deutsche Verlagsgesellschaft, 1947).
- W. L. LANGER, *Our Vichy Gamble* (Knopf, New York, 1947).
- B. LIDDELL HART, *On the Other Side of the Hill* (Cassell, London, 1948).
- C. MALAPARTE, *Technique du coup d'état* (Paris, 1931).
- F. MAUGERI, *From the Ashes of Disgrace* (Reynal and Hitchcock, New York, 1948).
- B. MUSSOLINI, *Scritti e discorsi* (Hoepli, Milan). (Covering most of the period of Fascist rule)
- *La mia vita* (Faro, Rome, 1947).
- *Il tempo del bastone e della carota: Storia di un Anno* (1944). (See *Note on Sources*, p xv).
- L. B. NAMIER, *Diplomatic Prelude* (Macmillan, London, 1948).
- F. NIETZSCHE, *Der Wille zur Macht, Also sprach Zarathustra*, &c.
- R. PECHEL, *Deutscher Widerstand* (E. Rentsch, Zurich, 1947).
- E. F. PODACH, *The Madness of Nietzsche* (tr. F. A. Voigt) Putnam, London & New York, 1931).
- Procès du Maréchal Pétain* (Paris, 1945)
- H. RAUSCHNING, *Die Revolution des Nihilismus* (Europa Verlag, Zürich, 1936)
- *Hitler Speaks* (Thornton Butterworth, London, 1939).
- PAUL REYNAUD, *La France a sauvé l'Europe* (Flammarion, Paris, 1947).
- F. VON SCHLABRENDORFF, *Offiziere gegen Hitler* (Europa Verlag, Zürich, 1946)
- K. VON SCHUSCHNIGG, *Requiem in Rot-Weiss-Rot* (Amstutz, Zürich, 1946).
- R. SEMMLER, *Goebbels, the Man next to Hitler* (Westhouse, London, 1947).
- C. SENISE, *Quando ero capo della polizia* (Ruffolo, Rome, 1946).
- W. SHIRER, *A Berlin Diary* (Hamish Hamilton, London, 1941).
- L. SIMONI, *Berlino — Ambasciata d'Italia 1939-43* (Migliaresi, Rome, 1946).
- G. SOREL, *Réflexions sur la Violence* (1908).
- C. J. S. SPRIGGE, *The Development of Modern Italy* (Duckworth, London, 1943).
- E. R. VON STARHEMBERG, *Between Hitler and Mussolini* (Hodder & Stoughton, London, 1942).
- R. SERRANO-SUÑER, *Entre Hendaya y Gibraltar* (Madrid, 1947).
- A. J. SYLVESTER, *The Real Lloyd George* (Cassell, London, 1947).
- LORD TEMPLEWOOD, *Ambassador on Special Mission* (Collins, London, 1946).

APPENDIX

The Steel Pact

THE PUBLISHED TEXT¹

German-Italian Pact of Steel, 22 May 1939

THE following are the terms of the military pact between Germany and Italy signed in Berlin yesterday. The preamble runs:

'The German Reich Chancellor and His Majesty the King of Italy and Albania, Emperor of Ethiopia, consider that the moment has come when the close relations of friendship and affinity which exist between National-Socialist Germany and Fascist Italy should be strengthened through a solemn pact.

'Since a safe bridge for mutual help and support has been created by the common frontier between Germany and Italy, which has been fixed for all time, the two Governments acknowledge once again a policy which in its bases and objects has already previously been agreed upon by them and which has proved itself successful, both for the promoting of the interests of the two countries and also for the securing of peace in Europe.

'Closely bound together through internal relationships of ideologies and through comprehensive solidarity of interests, the German and Italian peoples have decided in the future also side by side and with united strength to stand up for the securing of their sphere of living and for the maintenance of peace.

'In this way, which has been prescribed to them by history, Germany and Italy, in the midst of a world unrest and disintegration, desire to devote themselves to the task of securing the foundations of European culture.'

The pact consists of seven articles:

I

'The high contracting parties will remain permanently in contact with one another in order to agree on all questions affecting their own interests or the European situation as a whole.

II

'Should the common interests of the high contracting parties be endangered through international events of any sort they will immediately enter into consultations with one another in order to take measures to protect those interests.

¹ *Volksischer Beobachter*, 23 May 1939; *The Times* and *Manchester Guardian*, 23 May 1939.

III

'Should the security or other vital interests of one of the contracting parties be threatened from outside the other contracting party will afford the threatened party its full political and diplomatic support in order to remove this threat. If it should happen, against the wishes and hopes of the contracting parties, that one of ~~the~~ them becomes involved in warlike complications with another Power or with other Powers the other contracting party will come to its aid as an ally and will support it with all its military forces on land, on sea, and in the air.

IV

'In order to secure in specific cases the rapid execution of the obligations undertaken in Article III, the Governments of the two contracting parties will further intensify their co-operation in the military sphere and in the sphere of war economics.

'Similarly the two Governments will also keep each other permanently informed about the measures necessary for the practical execution of the provisions of this pact.

'For the purposes laid down in paragraphs 1 and 2 of this article the two Governments will set up a Permanent Commission which will be subject to the direction of the two Foreign Ministers.

V

'The high contracting parties bind themselves in the case of a jointly waged war to conclude an armistice and peace only in full concord with one another.

VI

'The two contracting parties are conscious of the importance which must be attached to their joint relation with the Powers with which they are friends [Hungary, Japan, and Manchukuo]. They are determined in the future to maintain and develop such relations in common and in accordance with the unanimous interests by which they are united with those Powers.

VII

'The pact comes into force immediately upon being signed. The two contracting parties agree to fix the first period of its validity at ten years. They will come to an agreement about the prolongation of the validity of the pact in good time before this period has elapsed.'

THE SECRET PROTOCOL¹

'On signing the friendship and alliance pact agreement has been established by both parties on the following points:

¹ *Nazi Conspiracy and Aggression*, vol. v, p. 453 (part of Document 2818-PS. as there translated; the remainder of this Document contains other matter not part of the Steel Pact, i.e. this is the complete text of the Secret Protocol).

'1. The two Foreign Ministers will as quickly as possible come to an agreement on the organization, the seat, and the methods of work on the pact of the commissions on military questions and questions of war economy as stipulated in Article IV of the pact.

'2. For the execution of Article IV, par. 2, the two Foreign Ministers will as quickly as possible arrange the necessary measures, guaranteeing a constant co-operation, conforming to the spirit and aims of the pact, in matters of the press, the news service and the propaganda. For this purpose in particular, each of the two Foreign Ministers will assign to the embassy of his country in the respective capital one or several especially well experienced specialists, for constant discussion in direct close co-operation with the respective Ministry of Foreign Affairs, of the suitable steps to be taken in matters of the press, the news service and the propaganda for the promotion of the policy of the Axis, and as a counter measure against the policy of the enemy powers.

Berlin 22 May 1939 XVII.'

INDEX A. PERSONS

(with biographical notes)

- Alexander (Karageorgević), King of Yugoslavia, 271, murder of, 42.
- Alfieri, Dino, Italian Minister of Propaganda, 1936-9, Ambassador to the Vatican, 1939-40, then Italian Ambassador in Berlin, 1940-3, 63, 71, 77, 183, 207, 208, 224, 230, 243, 248, 249, 251, 255, 290, 291, 296, 302, 303 n.; accompanies Mussolini on visit to Germany, 1937, 79; appointed Ambassador in Berlin, 206; presents Mussolini's decision to intervene to Hitler, 31 May 1940, 213; interview with Ribbentrop, 7 Dec 1940, 242.
- Ambrosio, General (later Marshal) Vittorio, Italian Commander in Yugoslavia, 1941, succeeds Cavallero as Italian Chief of Staff, 1943, 227, 289, 290, 296, 298, Hitler on, 300, at Feltre, 301-2; in touch with Bonomi, 302 and n.; at Tarvisio meeting, 308.
- Anfuso, Filippo, *Chef de Cabinet* to Ciano, then Italian Minister in Budapest, 1942, Neo-Fascist Ambassador in Berlin, 1943-5, 206 and n., 330.
- Antinori, Marquis Francesco, Italian Press Attaché in Berlin, 1923-40, 207.
- , Giuseppina, Baroness Braun von Stumm, 48, 207.
- Antonescu, General Ion, *Conducator* of Rumania, 1940-4, 226, 227, becomes dictator of Rumania, 223, Hitler and, 237; clash with Iron Guard, Jan. 1941, 252.
- , Mihai, Rumanian Foreign Minister, 299.
- Attolico, Bernardo, inspector of emigration to U.S.A. before 1915, in London during First World War to deal with various inter-Allied purchases, League High Commissioner in Danzig, 1920, Deputy Secretary-General of League of Nations, 1922, Italian Ambassador in Moscow, 1932, Ambassador in Berlin, 1935, Ambassador to the Holy See, 1940-2, 57, 78, 86, 131, 133, 135, 136, 139, 148, 152, 154, 160, 161, 166, 170, 176, 181, 182, 185, 188, 190, 193, 204, presents credentials to Hitler, 49; procures supplies for Italy, 1935, 51; meets Mussolini at frontier, Sept. 1937, 79; interviews with Ribbentrop, 1938, 122-4; rushes message from Mussolini to Hitler, 28 Sept. 1938, 127-8; informs Mussolini of German intentions, 29 Sept. 1938, 128; reports German action against Poland as imminent, 141, and Steel Pact, 144-5; two meetings with Ribbentrop, Aug. 1939, 162-3; tells Ribbentrop Italy requires supplies before hostilities open, 167-8, and 'League of Neutrals', 178; reports to Mussolini on German state of mind, Sept. 1939, 180; delivers Mussolini's letter to Hitler, Jan. 1940, 191; anxiety of, Feb. 1940, 192, recalled from Berlin, 206-7.
- Badoglio, Marshal Pietro, conqueror of Ethiopia, Chief of Italian General Staff to Dec. 1940, appointed Italian Premier after dismissal of Mussolini, July 1943, 142 n., 162, 304, 307, 308, 310, 316, 317 and n., 318, 320, 335; occupies Addis Ababa, 5 May 1936, 56, sees Mussolini, 26 May 1940, 212; at staff meeting, 29 May 1940, 212-13; replaced by Cavallero, 242; appointed Prime Minister, July 1943, 303.
- Balbo, Italo, Fascist Quadrumvir 1922, Air-Marshal 1933, Governor of Libya, killed June 1940, 138, 212.
- Barrère, Camille, French Ambassador to the Quirinal, 1897-1924, 2 and n.
- Barthou, Louis, French statesman, murder of, 42, 43.
- Bastianini, Giuseppe, Fascist Party official and member of Fascist Grand Council, Italian Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs in 1936, succeeded Grandi as Ambassador in London, 1939-40, Governor of Dalmatia, 1941, again Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs 1943, 63 n., 299, 309, 318; Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs, Feb. 1943, 290; efforts to achieve a 'political solution', 291, 294; tells Ribbentrop Italy cannot continue war, 296, tells Ribbentrop France should not be exasperated, 297; at Klessheim, late Apr. 1943, 299; at Feltre, 19 July 1943, 302.
- Battisti, Cesare, Italian Socialist leader in Trento under Austrian rule, executed by the Austrian authorities in 1916, 7.

- Beck, Colonel-General Ludwig, Chief of Army General Staff in Germany, 1935-8, committed suicide 20 July 1944, 87, resignation, 119 n
- Beneš, Edvard, Czechoslovak Foreign Minister 1918-35, took prominent part in League of Nations activities, President of Czechoslovak Republic, 1935-8, and again 1945-8, resigned and died 1948, 12, 41, 119 n.; attacked by Mussolini, Sept. 1938, 126
- Bethlen, Count István, Hungarian Premier, 31.
- Bismarck, Prince Otto von, creator of Hohenzollern Empire of Germany proclaimed at Versailles in 1871, 1, 11, 12, 13.
- , Prince Otto von, grandson of above, Counsellor at German Embassy in London, later German Minister in Rome, 231, 232
- Blomberg, Field-Marshal Werner von, German Minister of War, 1933-8: and Four-Power Pact, 34, impressed by Coronation of King George VI, 77, visit to Naples, 78, at meeting, 5 Nov. 1937, 83, 86, loses position as Minister of War, 87
- Blum, Léon, becomes French Premier, 56.
- Bocchini, Arturo, Fascist Police Chief, 1925-40, 70, 171
- Bodenschatz, General Karl H., personal adjutant to Goring and his liaison officer with Hitler's Headquarters, 151; goes to Italy, 2 May 1938, 107.
- Bohle, Ernst Wilhelm, Gauleiter of the *Auslandsorganisation* of the N.S.D.A.P., then head of same in German Foreign Office, 148; Guido Schmidt dines with, 69; goes to Italy, 107.
- Bonnet, Georges, French Foreign Minister, 141, 172.
- Bonomi, Ivanoe, Italian politician, 5; in touch with Ambrosio, 1942, 302 and n., sees Victor Emmanuel, 2 June 1943, 302.
- Borghese, D. Valerio dei Principi Borghese, 337
- Boris III, King of Bulgaria 1918-43, 240, 253, visits Hitler, Nov. 1940, 247.
- Bormann, Martin, S S General, head of the Nazi Party Chancery from 1941, 156, 345; replaces Hess, 259.
- Bottai, Giuseppe, Member of Fascist Grand Council, Fascist Minister of Education, 1936-43, voted for Grandi resolution, 25 July 1943, visits Germany, Oct. 1941, 284.
- Brauchitsch, General Walter von, Commander-in-Chief of German Army 1938-42, 145, 151; conference with Hitler, 3 Sept. 1938, 125.
- Braun, Eva, 338.
- Braun von Stumm, Baron Gustav, Deputy Chief of Press Section of German Foreign Office, 48.
- — —, Baroness, *see* Antinori, Giuseppina.
- Bruck, *see* Moeller van den Bruck.
- Bruckmann, Hugo, publisher in Munich, and Elsa (his wife), 130, 190, 279.
- Buffarini-Guidi, Guido, Under-Secretary of Italian Ministry of the Interior, 1943, 208 and n., Neo-Fascist Minister of the Interior, 317, 337
- Bullitt, William C., American diplomat: conversation with Neurath, 18 May 1936, 56; interview with Goring, 90; on France in 1940, 237.
- Bulow, Prince Bernhard von, Chancellor of Germany under William II, 2, 3, 4.
- Bülow-Schwante, Vicco von, German Foreign Office official, dismissed, 109.
- Burckhardt, Carl, author of various historical works, notably a history of Richelieu, League of Nations High Commissioner for Danzig, 1937-9, *see* Hitler, 11 Aug 1939, 155.
- Canaris, Admiral Wilhelm, head of German Intelligence Service, arrested after 20 July 1944, tortured and executed, 123, 161 n., 164 n
- Carol II, King of Rumania: and Codreanu, 220, and Hitler, 220, 221-2; abdication of, 221.
- Castellano, General Giuseppe, 289, 302.
- Cavagnari, Admiral Domenico, 189, 212.
- Cavallero, Count Ugo, Marshal, succeeded Badoglio as Italian Chief of Staff, Dec. 1940, 149, 152, 277, 293; replaces Badoglio, 242, succeeded by Ambrosio, Jan 1943, 290.
- Caviglia, Marshal Enrico, 323.
- Cavour, Count Camille Benso di, 102.
- Cerruti, Vittorio, Italian Ambassador in Berlin, 1932-5, in Paris, 1935-8, 27, 28, 32, 34, 35, 39, 40, 48, 49, 52 n.
- Chamberlain, Houston Stewart, 20
- , Neville, British Prime Minister, 1937-40: initiates conversations with Italy, Feb. 1938, 91; conversations with Grandi, 19 Feb. 1938, 96; visit to Germany, 15-16 Sept. 1938, 126-7; initiates Munich Conference, 127; at Munich Conference, 129, 132; Hitler and, 134.

ianetti, Tullio, Head of Fascist Labour Federation, as such concerned with sending Italian labour to Germany, Minister of Corporations, 1943, 184.
 iano, Edda, Mussolini's elder daughter, married Count Galeazzo Ciano, visits Berlin, June 1936, 62, during war, 208, 287, 312, 319, 320, 321.

—, Count Galeazzo, married Edda Mussolini 1930, chief of Mussolini's press office, then Minister of Propaganda ('Popular Culture'), &c., 1933–6, Foreign Minister, June 1936 to Feb. 1943, Ambassador to Holy See, Feb. to July 1943, voted for Grandi motion, 24 July 1943, executed 11 Jan. 1944, 43, 44, 65, 70, 72, 75, 82, 98, 110, 133, 134, 136, 147, 152, 166, 168, 171, 172, 183, 187, 189, 192, 193, 196, 197, 198, 199, 203, 206, 207, 208, 210, 219, 220, 221, 232, 250, 252, 259, 262, 269, 271, 272, 273, 278, 329, 340

Becomes Foreign Minister, 62–4; visit to Berlin and Berchtesgaden, Oct. 1936, 66–9, 74; visits Vienna and Budapest, Nov. 1936, 73; and Austria, 76–7, 89; and Blomberg's visit to Italy, 1937, 78; accompanies Mussolini to Germany, 1937, 79; friction with Hassell, 79, 86; welcomes Ribbentrop, Oct. 1937, 86; meets Schuschnigg in Budapest, Jan. 1938, 91; complains to Hesse, Feb. 1938, 95, and negotiations with Great Britain, Feb. 1938, 96, statement on *Anschluss*, 102, urges liberation of Schuschnigg, 103–4, and South Tyrol, 18 Apr. 1938, 105, and preparations for reception of Hitler in Italy, 1938, 106, at Zog's wedding, 121, and Albania, 121, 122, meeting with Stoyadinović, 18 June 1938, 122; asks German intentions, Sept. 1938, 125; signs Vienna Award, 2 Nov. 1938, 132, speech to Chamber, 132; visit to Yugoslavia, Jan. 1939, 135, reaction to German seizure of Bohemia, 1939, 137, warns Mackensen about Croatia, Mar. 1939, 138, and seizure of Albania, 139, visit to Warsaw, Feb. 1939, 141, prepares to meet Ribbentrop, Apr.–Mar. 1939, 141; meeting with Ribbentrop, May 1939, 142–4; telephones to Mussolini, 6 May 1939, 143, and German-Russian *rapprochement*, 1939, 144, 156, 159, 178; signs Steel Pact, 145–6, 151; visits Spain, July 1939, 152–3; realizes Hitler intends war, 4 Aug. 1939, 154; at Salzburg and Berchtesgaden, 11–

13 Aug. 1939, 155–62, 174; receives Schwerin-Krosigk, 23 Aug. 1939, 165; telegram, 26 Aug. 1939, to Attolico about Italy's war requirements, 167, and German offers to Great Britain, Aug. 1939, 170; visit to Berlin, 1 Oct. 1939, 176–8; and 'League of Neutrals', 178, in Berlin, 1 Oct. 1939, 179; refutes German charges, Nov. 1939, 180, and South Tyrol, 181–2, and German behaviour in Poland, 184; sees Ley, 5 Dec. 1939, 185; speech to Chamber, 16 Dec. 1939, 186, 190; and Sumner Welles, 194, 195, 200, 202, accompanies Mussolini to Brenner, 17 Mar. 1940, 200, dines with the Mackensens 10–11 May 1940, 211; accompanies Mussolini to Munich, June 1940, 215; visits Hitler, 7 July 1940 (presents Italian maximum claims), 217–18, visits Berlin, 19 July 1940, 218, sees Hitler 20 July 1940, 222; and Greece, 224–6; sees Hitler, 28 Aug. 1940, 223, 226; visits Berlin to sign Tripartite Pact, 227–9; at military conference on Greece, 15 Oct. 1940, 230; sends message to Grazzi via Malaparte, Oct. 1940, 231; talk with Hitler, 28 Sept. 1940, 236, at Tripartite Pact ceremony in Vienna, 20 Nov. 1940, 241; talks with Ribbentrop and Suifer, 18 Nov. 1940, 241; talks with Hitler, 18 and 20 Nov. 1940, 241–2; letter to Alfieri, 17 Dec. 1940, 243, visits Ribbentrop, 4 Nov. 1940, 246, attempts *rapprochement* with U.S.S.R., Dec. 1940, 248; in Vienna for Yugoslav signature of Tripartite Pact, 25 Mar. 1940, 255; meets Ribbentrop, Apr. 1941, 270; visits Germany, Oct. and Nov. 1941, 286; visits Germany, spring 1942, 287; attitude towards Petacci affair, 288; hatred of Germans, 289; visited by Castellano, Apr. 1942, 289, sees Hitler, 9 Nov. 1942, 289–90; becomes Ambassador to Holy See, 290, Dornberg's warning to, 309; reconciled with Mussolini, 312; blamed by Hitler for collapse of Mussolini, 314; Hitler determined to punish, 319; meets Mussolini at Munich, Sept. 1943, 320; arrested, 320, imprisonment, trial, execution, 321; character, 218.

Cione, Professor Edmondo, 337.

Clodius, Karl, German economic expert for the south-east, 193, 197, 208; makes coal available for Italy, 198.

- Codreanu, Zelea, Leader of Iron Guard in Rumania, 220, 226
- Coulondre, Robert, French Ambassador in Berlin, 1938-9, 173.
- Csáky, Count István, Hungarian Foreign Minister: visit to Germany, Apr. 1939, 140
- Cvetković, Dragiša, Yugoslav Prime Minister, 1939-41, 254, 255.
- Dahlerus, Birger, Swedish engineer and business man, friend of Goring, author of *Sista Forsoket (The Last Attempt)* 1945, 169, 173
- D'Ajeta, Marchese Blasco, Italian diplomat related to Sumner Welles, 202.
- Daladier, Édouard, French politician, 129, 134, 172, 212.
- D'Annunzio, Gabriele, Italian poet who with his followers seized Fiume in 1919, 7, 26, 30, 329 n; allies himself with Fascism, 8.
- De Vecchi, Count Cesare Maria di Val Cismon, Fascist Quadrumvir, 1922, Military Governor of Rhodes, 1940, 225.
- Diamanti, General Filippo, 332.
- Dietrich, Sepp, German freebooter, became Hitler's chauffeur, and later a S.S. General and commander of the *Leibstandarte Adolf Hitler*, 33, 35, goes to Italy, 2 May 1938, 107; brings C. Petacci to Mussolini, Nov 1943, 320.
- Dirksen, Herbert von, German Ambassador in Moscow, 1929-33, Tokyo, 1933-8, London (in succession to Rubbentrop), 1938-9, 162.
- Dollfuss, Engelbert, Chancellor of Austria, 1932-4, 34-5, 72, 101, murder of, 25 July 1934, 38-41, 42, 45, 46, 225.
- Dollmann, S.S. Fuhrer Eugen, attached to German Embassy in Rome, 157 and n., 160, 285, 308, 309, 320, organizes German reign of terror in Italy, 1943-5, 325-6, accompanies Mussolini to Klessheim, Apr. 1944, 330, again in July 1944, 334 and n.
- Donitz, Gross-Admiral Karl, succeeded Raeder 1943, nominated by Hitler to succeed him as German Chancellor, Apr. 1945, 295 n., 308, 310; visits Italy, May 1943, 297, 299, visit to Hamburg, 306
- Dornberg, Freiherr von, *Chef des Protokolls* in German Foreign Office, 309, 320.
- Draxler, Dr., legal adviser to F. Mandl, Austrian Finance Minister 1935, 49.
- Eden, Rt Hon. Anthony, British Foreign Secretary, Dec 1935-Feb. 1938, and again 1940-5, 67, 91; and Austria, 92, conversation with Grandi, 19 Feb. 1938, 96, attacked by Hitler, 96, resignation, 20 Feb. 1938, 96-7
- Edward VIII, King (later Duke of Windsor), 85, 198.
- Eisenlohr, Ernst, German Minister in Prague, 118, 119 n
- Epp, Franz Ritter von, 25, 93
- Etzdorff, Hasso von, liaison officer between German Foreign Office and German General Staff, 260.
- Farinacci, Robert, Secretary of the Fascist Party until 1926, Member of Fascist Grand Council from 1935, 183, 206, 208, 285, 310, 315, 316, 317 and n., 323, 330, anti-Semitism of, 111-13, and invasion of Sicily, 304, plots with Germans, then flies to Germany, 305; returns to Cremona, 318, campaign against the Vatican, 329.
- Fey, Major, 35, 49.
- Flandin, Pierre Etienne, French politician, 244.
- Forster, Albert, *Gaulerier*, then *Reichsstatthalter*, of Danzig and West Prussia, 154.
- Francis Joseph, Emperor of Austria-Hungary, 2, 11, 13, 117.
- Franco y Bahamonde, Francisco, *Caudillo* of Spain, 83, 153, 216, 235, 246, 250, 253, 257, 280, 290, 299; Italian help to, 1936, 68, Germany recognizes Government of, 69, Italian secret agreement with, 70; enters Madrid, May 1939, 141, visited by Hitler at Hendaye, Oct. 1940, 231-2, 237, 238-9, demands made by, 234, 239, letters to Hitler, 22 Sept 1940, 236, 6 Feb. 1941, 244; meets Mussolini at Bordighera, 12 Feb. 1941, 244.
- François-Poncet, André, French Ambassador in Berlin, then in Rome, 1938-9, 28, 42, 129, sees Hitler, 28 Sept 1938, 127-8; farewell visit to Hitler, 132 n
- Frank, Hans, solicitor to Hitler, Reich Commissar for Justice, &c., 1933, later Governor-General of Poland, 71, 79; early visits to Italy, 25; broadcast to Austria, 32, 33; lecture in Rome, Apr. 1936, 62; secret interview with Mussolini, 23 Sept. 1936, 65, 66, 73; dines with Guido Schmidt and Bohle, 19 Nov. 1936, 69.

- Frank, Karl Hermann, extremist Sudeten German leader, from 1939 S.S. Police Chief and German Minister of State for Bohemia and Moravia, in charge of Sudeten German Free Corps, Sept 1938, 125.
- Frick, Dr. Wilhelm, Minister of the Interior in Thuringia, 1930, Reich Minister of the Interior, 1933-43, Reich Protector in Bohemia and Moravia, 1943-5, 21, 28 n., 93.
- Fritsch, Colonel-General Werner von, Commander-in-Chief of German Army, 1935-8, at meeting, 5 Nov. 1937, 83, 86, 87, dismissed, 87.
- Funder, Dr., editor of the *Reichspost* in Vienna, 50, 59, 60, 61.
- Gafencu, Grigore, Rumanian Foreign Minister, later Minister in Moscow, 11; visits Rome, May 1939, 141; on *le phénomène Ciano*, 340.
- Gamehn, General Maurice Gustave, 171.
- Gaulle, General Charles de, 217, 233, 234, 235, 239, 240, 246, 344; Hitler apprehensive about, 236.
- Gaus, Friedrich Wilhelm, legal expert of German Foreign Office, 107, drafts Steel Pact, 144, accompanies Ribbentrop to Rome, Mar. 1940, 197.
- Gayda, Virginio, editor of the important Fascist paper, the *Giornale d'Italia*, 113, 183; article of 26 Feb. 1937 against Habsburg restoration, 75; article on Austria, Apr. 1937, 77.
- George VI, King, coronation of, 77.
- George, Stefan, German poet, 343.
- Ghigi, Pellegrino, Italian diplomat, appointed Italian Minister in Vienna, 91; Italian Minister in Athens, 278.
- Giolitti, Giovanni, pre-Fascist Italian statesman, 5, 8.
- Gisevius, Hans Bernd, German official, on Hitler's statements, 22 Aug. 1939, 164 n., 173 and n.; on attack on Hitler's life, Nov 1939, 179-80.
- Glaise-Horstenau, Edmund, Austrian General and expert on military history, 38, 90; Minister without Portfolio, July 1936, 61; and the *Anschluss*, 101; Commander of German forces in Croatia, 1941, 273; and the Italian Second Army in Croatia, 277.
- Goebbels, Paul Joseph, German Minister of Propaganda, 1933-45, 16, 26, 71, 209, 296, 315, 320, 324, 336, debt to D'Annunzio, 7, goes to Rome, 2 May 1938, 107, 111; speech at Danzig, 17 June 1939, 152; and Farnacci, 300; on effect of Italian Armistice on Hitler, 310; on Hitler and Mussolini, Sept. 1943, 312; designs on Italian territory, 313.
- Gonella, Professor Guido, formerly on the *Osservatore Romano*, Italian Minister of Education from 1946, 209.
- Goring, Hermann Wilhelm, early follower of Hitler, Premier of Prussia, 1933, Commander-in-Chief of *Luftwaffe*, 1935, Reichskommissar for execution of second Four-Year Plan, 1936, President of Defence Council and in charge of war economy, 1939, sentenced to death at Nuremberg, 1946, 28 and n., 81, 93, 104, 111, 127, 146, 151, 160, 169 n., 190, 207, 210, 211, 258, 307, 334; joins in *Putsch* attempt, Nov. 1923, 16; lays foundation of Fascist-Nazi alliance, 25; received by Italian Ambassador in Berlin, 1931, 27, appealed to by Ceruti, 32, visits Yugoslavia, 1934, 41-2, talks with Lipski, 1935, 44-5; and Guido Schmidt, 70, foreign connexions, 71; Hitler's 'Crown Prince', 71; at Gombos's funeral, Oct. 1936, 71; journey to Rome with Magistrati, Jan. 1937, 72; sees Mussolini and Ciano, Jan. 1937, 72-4; sees Magistrati, 12 Feb. 1937, 74; and Habsburg restoration, 75, 90; receives Mussolini at Karinhall, 80; at secret conference, 5 Nov. 1937, 83, receives Austrian industrialists, 89-90; and Austrian Question, 91; pledge to Czechs at time of *Anschluss*, 100; sees Magistrati about South Tyrol, 105-6; left in charge of Germany, 107; visit to Rome, Apr. 1939, 141; and Collar of the *Annunziata*, 145; reproaches Teucci and Magistrati for Italy's defection, 180-1; attitude to Italy during winter 1939-40, 208; nominated *Reichsmarschall*, 218.
- Grandi, Count Dino, early Fascist revolutionary in Bologna, member of Fascist Grand Council, Italian Ambassador in London, 1932-9, 67, 92, 186, 209, 290, 319, 321; conversation with Chamberlain and Eden, 19 Feb. 1938, 96, proposes majority Order of the Day, 24-5 July 1943, 303.
- Graziani, Marshal Rodolfo, Viceroy of Ethiopia, 1936-7, Commander of Italian Army in Libya, 1940-1, Neo-Fascist Minister of Defence, 1943-5, 253, 318 n., 336; at staff meeting with Mussolini, 29 May 1940, 212; advance into Egypt, Sept.-Oct. 1940,

- 234, Neo-Fascist Minister of Defence, 317; speech at *Teatro Adriano*, 26 Sept 1943, 318, organizes Neo-Fascist Army, 324; with Mussolini in Germany, Apr 1944, 330-1; with Mussolini in Germany, July 1944, 334.
- Grazzi, Emanuele, Italian Minister in Athens, 225, delivers Italian ultimatum to Metaxas, 28 Oct 1940, 231.
- , Umberto, brother of above, Italian Chargé d'Affaires in Vienna, 1934, 39 n, 225.
- Guariglia, Raffaele, Italian Ambassador in Paris, 1938-40, to the Vatican, 1942-3, in Ankara, 1943 (Feb.-July), Foreign Minister, 1943 (July-Oct): meets Ribbentrop at Tarvisio, 6 Aug 1943, 308, 309 and n.
- Guderian, Colonel-General Heinz, tank expert, Chief of General Staff of German Army 1944, 233.
- Guzzoni, General Alfredo, 250, 255.
- Habicht, Theo, Nazi leader and German Press Attaché in Vienna, 33, 46, 72.
- Habsburg, Otto von, Legitimist Pretender, son of last Habsburg Emperor, Karl, 95, 199.
- Hacha, Dr Emil, succeeded Beneš as President of Czechoslovakia 1938, forced to submit to Hitler, 137, 260.
- Halder, General Franz, Chief of German General Staff, 1938-42, 151.
- Halifax, Viscount (later Earl of), Viceroy of India, 1926-31, British Foreign Secretary, 1938-40, Ambassador in Washington, 1941-6: visits Germany, Nov. 1937, 86, 91, 93, signs Anglo-Polish Treaty, 25 Aug 1939, 167.
- Hassell, Ulrich von, German Ambassador in Rome, 1932-8, executed Sept. 1944, 26, 64, 137, 146, 148, 154, 254, 260, 263 n, 283, 284, 329, 335; meets Mussolini at frontier, 1937, 79, on bad terms with Ciano, 79, 86, loses Rome Embassy, 87-8.
- Haushofer, Professor Karl, retired German General, formerly active in Far East, inventor of *Geopolitik*, 20, 21, 118.
- Heiden, Konrad, author of biography of Hitler, 17.
- Henderson, Sir Neville, British Ambassador in Berlin, 1937-9, 78, 169, 170, 174.
- Henlein, Konrad, Sudeten German leader, 71, 117-20, 125, 128.
- Hess, Rudolf, pupil of Professor Haushofer, Hitler's 'Deputy', 21, 79, 90, 93, 195; at Landsberg with Hitler, 20, goes to Rome, 2 May 1938, 106; flight to Scotland, May 1941, 258.
- Hesse, Philip Prince of, son-in-law of King Victor Emmanuel III, Nazi Ober-Präsident of province of Hessen-Nassau, 71, 74, 95, 123, 126, 136-7, 192, 211, marries Princess Mafalda of Savoy, 25, hostility to Hassell, 88; takes letter from Hitler to Mussolini on day of the *Anschluss*, 98-101; telephones to Hitler, 11 Mar. 1938, 100; goes to Italy, 2 May 1938, 107; urges Attolico's recall, 206, arrest of, Sept. 1943, 310.
- Hewel, Walter, liaison officer between German Foreign Office and Nazi Party, 190, 307.
- Heydrich, Reinhard, S.S. leader, later *Reichsprotektor* in Bohemia and Moravia where he was assassinated in 1942, 148, 283.
- Himmler, Heinrich, Chief of S.S. and Gestapo, German Minister of Interior, 1943-5, 71, 190, 265, 302, 306, 325, 326, 336, 339, and marriage of Blomberg, 87; goes to Rome, 2 May 1938, 106; takes up question of South Tyrol, June 1939, 158; on dangers to Fascist régime, Jan. 1941, 249; declaration of, 4 Oct. 1943, 266-7; at Klessheim meeting, 299.
- Hindenburg, Paul von Beneckendorf und, President of German Republic, 1925-34, 26, 27, 28, 117.
- Hitler, Adolf, 25, 27, 40, 46, 49, 57, 60, 61, 65, 69, 71, 72, 116, 117, 119, 134, 136, 137, 140, 144, 145, 146, 149, 150, 153, 154, 167, 181, 183, 186, 188, 193, 199, 245, 272, 274, 278, 280, 288, 318, 321, 324, 326, 330, 339, 340.
- Debt to D'Annunzio, 7; tribute to Mussolini in *Mein Kampf*, 9; meets Pechel and Moeller van den Bruck, 1922, 10; and German-Austrian nationalism, 10-14; schooling at Linz, 11; youth in Vienna and Munich, 12-14, and *Mittleuropa*, 14; and Lueger, 15; in hospital, 1918, 15; returns to Munich as Reichswehr agent, 15-16; joins new Nazi party 1920, visits Wagner family, 1923, attempts *Putsch* Nov. 1923, imprisoned at Landsberg, writes *Mein Kampf*, 16; aims and technique, 17-20; and Italy, 19-21, meets H. S. Chamberlain, 1923, 20; and *Geopolitik*, 20-1, 30; and Mussolini, 20-1; and South

Hitler, Adolf (*cont.*)

Tyrol, 23-4, imitation of Mussolini, 26; received by Hindenburg, Aug. 1932, 26

Chancellor of Germany, 28; attitude to pre-1914 Austria, to Central Europe and the Adriatic, 29-32, and terrorism in Austria, 33-4, and Four-Power Pact, 1933, 34, first meeting with Mussolini, June 1934, 35-7; and Little Entente, 41; view of Mussolini's Abyssinian policy, 48, and Hoare-Laval Plan, 51-3; and remilitarization of Rhineland, 54-6; entertains Edda Ciano, June 1936, 62; receives Lloyd George, 64, offers to recognize Italian Empire, 64, receives Ciano at Berchtesgaden, Oct. 1936, 66-8, irresponsible servants of, 73; his library at the Berghof, 74; and Mussolini's visit to Germany, Sept. 1937, 80-2; and *Reichskanzler* meeting, 5 Nov. 1937, views on Italy and Balearic islands, 83, intention to attack Czechoslovakia and Austria, contempt for Great Britain, attitude to Japan, 84, shelves Neurath, Blomberg, Fritsch, becomes chief of all German armed forces, 87; attitude to Papen, 88; receives Schuschnigg at Berchtesgaden, Feb. 1938, 92-5, Reichstag speech, 20 Feb. 1938, 96, visit to Italy announced, 97, 106, and Schuschnigg's plebiscite proposal, 98; letter to Mussolini on day of *Anschluss*, 98-101, 102; telephone conversation with Hesse, 11 Mar. 1938, 100; telegram to Mussolini from Linz, 101, Reichstag speech, 18 Mar. 1938, 105, stays with King of Italy, 107-8; speech at Palazzo Venezia, 7 May 1938, 108; at naval review at Naples, 5 May 1938, 109; visit to San Carlo, 109; proposes alliance to Mussolini, 110, sees Henlein, 118, 120, decision to smash Czechoslovakia, 30 May 1938, 120, 122; receives Hungarian leaders, Aug. 1938, 125, *Sportpalast* speech, 26 Sept. 1938, 126, 127; accepts conference at Munich, 128; at Munich, 29 Sept. 1938, 129, anger over mediation at Munich, 130; and Hungary, 131-3, 221, letter to Mussolini, Mar. 1939, 138-9, first hope of *rapprochement* with Russia, 139; denounces German-Polish Treaty of 1934, 141; issues directive to Armed Forces, 11 Apr. 1939, 143; and secret conference, 23 May 1939, 151-2, sees Burckhardt,

11 Aug. 1939, 155; determined to avoid mediation, Aug. 1939, 156, 171, 173, sees Ciano, 12 and 13 Aug. 1939, 158-61; and Russia, Aug. 1939, 159, 163; and defection of Italy, 160; addresses military commanders, 22 Aug. 1939, 164, postpones war, 25 Aug. 1939, 165, letter to Mussolini, 25 Aug. 1939, 166, refuses Italian request for oil, &c., 26 Aug. 1939, 168, receives Dahlerus, 27 Aug. 1939, 169, again, 1 Sept. 1939, 173; accepts Italian non-eligibility, attacks Poland, 170; letter to Mussolini, 3 Sept. 1939, 172; state of mind early Sept. 1939, 173-4

And outbreak of war, 175, receives Ciano, 1 Oct. 1939, 176-8; Reichstag speech, 6 Oct. 1939, 178-9, attempt on life, Nov. 1939, 179; and Italian intervention, 184, 189-90, 192, 193; anticipates attack on Low Countries, 190, receives Mussolini's letter, Jan. 1940, 191; decides on attack on Norway, 192; receives Sumner Welles, 3 Mar. 1940, 195, reply to Mussolini, 6 Mar. 1940, 196-7, meets Mussolini at Brenner, 18 Mar. 1940, 200-2, 203, 205, 206, 208, fear of Italian indiscretion, 210; letters to Mussolini during spring campaigns 1940, 211-12; his headquarters at Godesberg, spring 1940, 213-14, replies to Mussolini, 31 May 1940, 214, meets Mussolini at Munich, June 1940, 215-17; and invasion of Great Britain, 218, 225; anxiety about U.S.S.R., Aug. 1940, 226, letter to Mussolini, 17 Sept. 1940, 227; and policy with regard to France, 216-17; Reichstag speech, 19 July 1940, 218; turns against U.S.S.R., July 1940, 219; and Codreanu, 220-1; letter to Carol of Rumania, 15 July 1940, 221-2; and Antonescu, 223; and signature of Tripartite Pact, 228, meeting with Mussolini, 4 Oct. 1940, 230; journey to France, Oct. 1940, 231-2, 237; visit to Florence, Oct. 1940, 232-3, 238, 239-40; clashes with Mussolini about France, 233, presumes Spain to be coming into the war, 234, confers with Raeder, Sept. 1940, 235, talk with Ciano, 28 Sept. 1940, 236; meets Mussolini at Brenner, 4 Oct. 1940, 236-7; feelings towards France, Oct. 1940, 237; statements to Pétain and Laval, Oct. 1940, 238; interview with Franco, 23 Oct. 1940, 238-9; talk with Ciano, 18 and 20 Nov. 1940,

Hitler, Adolf (*cont.*)

241-2, letters to Mussolini, 20 Nov. 1940, 241, 5 Dec. 1940, 242, makes conditions for supply of raw materials to Italy, 243, letter to Mussolini, 31 Dec 1940, 243; letter to Franco, 6 Feb 1941, 244.

Plans against U.S.S.R., 246; attitude to Balkan question, 246; decides to fight U.S.S.R., 247, on political conditions in Italy, Jan. 1941, 250, on Stalin, 251-2, denounces U.S.S.R. to Mussolini, Jan. 1941, 251-2, proposes Rommel shall command Italian forces, 253, plans Operation Marita, 253; and attack on Yugoslavia, 255-7; preparations against U.S.S.R., 257; letter to Mussolini, 5 Apr. 1941, 257, meets Mussolini, 2 June 1941, 258-9, decides to attack U.S.S.R. on 22 June 1941, 260; letter to Mussolini, 21 June 1941, 261; receives Mussolini at headquarters, Aug. 1941, 262; letter to Mussolini, 29 Dec. 1941, 263-4, and the New Order, 264-9, dictates frontiers in Balkans, 1941, 270, and Croatia, 273; answers Mussolini about Greece, 4 Aug. 1942, 279, on the S.S., 279, and France, 281; expresses confidence to Ciano, Oct. 1941, 284, 286, asks Mussolini for help against Russia, June 1941, 285, meets Mussolini at Klessheim, Apr. 1942, 286-7, deterioration of health, 287, sees Ciano and Laval, Nov. and Dec 1942, 289.

And Allied invasion of north Africa, 289-90, 292; refuses to make peace with Russia, 291, 296, fears Allied invasion in Balkans, 292, 316; letter to Mussolini about Yugoslavia, 16 Feb. 1942, 293, concedes broadcast on 'Magna Carta of Great European area' to Italians, 294, 295; agrees Italian workmen shall return to Italy, 295; meets Mussolini, Apr. 1943, 296; and defence of Italy, 298; and Yugoslav situation, May 1943, 298-9; confers on Italian crisis, 17 July 1943, 300, Feltre meeting with Mussolini, 300-2; will help Italy only at cost of German occupation, 301, reaction to fall of Mussolini, 306; plan for restoration of Fascism, 307; plan for rescue of Mussolini, 307; receives Marras, 30 July 1943, 307-8, and Italian Armistice, 310; broadcast of 10 Sept. 1943, 311, receives Mussolini at Rastenburg, 14 Sept. 1943, 312-16; and disillusionment with

Mussolini, 312-14; and punishment of rebellious Fascists, especially Ciano, 319, receives Horthy and Kallay, 1943, 328; on Italian troops in Russia, 331; receives Mussolini, 20 July 1944, 334, 345, frightfulness after 20 July 1944, 335; letter to Mussolini, 27 Dec. 1944, 336-7; his will, 338, his death, 338, influence of Nietzsche, 341-3, 344, 346, hysterical power, 342-3.

Hoare, Sir Samuel (later Lord Templewood), British Foreign Secretary, 1935, Ambassador to Spain on special mission, 1940-4, 52 n, 234 and n. *See also* Hoare-Laval Plan (Index B).

Hodža, Milan, Dr, Premier of Czechoslovakia, desires *rapprochement* with Italy, 1937, 76.

Hohenzollern, ex-Crown Prince William of Germany, flees from Germany to Italy, 88.

Horthy de Nagybánya, Miklós, Regent of Hungary, 256, 328; launches *Prinz Eugen*, 105.

Hoszbach, Colonel, Adjutant to Hitler, records meeting of 5 Nov. 1937, 83.

Huber, Dr., Austrian Pan-German, married to Goring's second sister, 71.

Imrédy, Béla, Hungarian Premier, 1938-9 and 1944-5, 122, 123.

Innitzer, Cardinal, Archbishop of Vienna, 33.

Interlandi, Telesio, editor of *Il Tevere*, 111-13, 183

Jacomoni, Franco, Italian Governor (*Luogotenente*) of Albania, 224, 230

Jalla, General Luigi, 332.

Jodl, Colonel-General Alfred, 87, 120, 123, 174, 250, 273, 300, 307; directive to German armed forces, 11 Mar. 1938, 100, plan for incident to provoke war, 1938, 125.

Johst, Hanns, Nazi writer and President of *Reichsschrifttumskammer*, 320.

Jung, Edgar, anti-Nazi secretary to Papen, murdered 30 June 1934, 45.

Kállay, Miklós, Hungarian Premier, 1942-4, 299, 328.

Kaltenbrunner, Ernst, Austrian S.S. Leader, 336.

Kánya, Kálmán, Hungarian Foreign Minister, 97, 122, 123.

Kasche, Siegfried, German Minister in Zagreb from 1941, 276, 277, 329.

Kautsky, Karl, Socialist writer, worked with Engels in London in his youth, later active in Berlin and Vienna, 6.

- Keitel, General Wilhelm, *Chef des Oberkommando der Wehrmacht*, 87, 119, 120, 151, 174, 234, 248, 250, 277, 291, 300, 301; at Berchtesgaden, Feb. 1938, 92, 94; goes to Rome, 2 May 1938, 106, conference with Hitler, 3 Sept. 1938, 125; and Staff talks with Italians, 125; signs order for execution of *Fall Weiss* (Poland), 22 June 1939, 152, signs order demanding brutal fighting against Partisans, 16 Dec 1942, 292-3, at Tarvisio meeting, 308-9, asks Graziani for air support, 20 July 1944, 334.
- Keppeler, Wilhelm, Nazi economic expert and S S leader, 88.
- Kesselring, Albert, Field-Marshal of the *Luftwaffe*, 284, 298, 308, 323, 326, 327, 333 n., his orders against the Italian Partisans, 17 and 20 June 1944, 332-3.
- Kluge, Gunther von, Marshal, 335
- Knirsch, Hans, leader of German Workingmen's Party in pre-1914 Austria and of D.N.S.A.P. in Czechoslovakia, 15, calls at Italian Embassy in Berlin, 24
- Koch, Erich, *Gauleiter* of East Prussia, later Commissar in the Eastern Occupied Territories, 282, 283 n
- Kropotkin, Prince Peter, Communist-Anarchist revolutionary writer, lived in Geneva, Lyons, London till 1917, 6.
- Kvaternik, Marshal Eugen, 27, 42, 272, 276.
- Lanza, Michele, First Secretary at Italian Embassy, Berlin, 1939-43, *see* Simoni.
- Laval, Pierre, French politician, 52 n., 299; signs agreement with Mussolini, 1935, 43, meeting with Hitler at Montoire, Oct. 1940, 231, 237, 238; dismissed by Pétain, 244; and New Order, 280, 289; visits Hitler, Nov. and Dec. 1942, 289; summoned to Klessheim by Ribbentrop, Apr. 1943, 297.
- Lenin, Vladimir Ilyich, 6 and n.
- Leopold, Captain, S.A. leader in Austria, 88, 89.
- Ley, Robert, leader of Nazi Labour Front, 201, visits Rome, Dec. 1939, 184-5; reports on visit to Hitler, 189-90.
- Leyers, General, 322 and n., 327.
- Laebitzky, Colonel, Austrian Military Attaché in Rome, received by Mussolini, 7 Mar. 1938, 97-8, 100.
- Lipski, Josef, Polish Ambassador in Berlin, 1934-9, 51, 81, 140 conversation with Goring, 1935, 44; *see* Hitler, Aug. 1935, 48
- List, Marshal Wilhelm, meets Mussolini at frontier, 1937, 79
- Litvinov, Maxim Maximovich, Russian Foreign Minister, fall of, May 1939, 197
- Lloyd George, David, British Liberal statesman, 64, 179.
- Lorraine, Sir Percy, British Ambassador in Rome, May 1939-June 1940, 168, 170.
- Lorenz, *Obergruppenfuhrer*, 118, 148, 149.
- Loubet, Emile, President of the French Republic, 1899-1906, 4.
- Ludendorff, Field-Marshal Erich von, 16, 265.
- Ludwig II, King of Bavaria, 13.
- Lueger, Karl, Christian-Social Mayor of Vienna, 15
- Lungershausen, General, 332.
- Maček, Vlatko, Croat Peasant Party leader, 254, 272, 329 and n., interned at Kupinec, 276.
- Mackensen, Hans Georg von, German diplomat, 118, 136, 138, 156, 166, 167, 169, 171, 172, 181, 182, 196, 210, 211, 212, 214, 222, 248, 300, 305; appointed to Rome, 106, and Italian conquest of Albania, 139, *see* Mussolini, 28 Mar. 1941, 256; disgrace of, 330 and n.
- Maeltzer, General Kurt, 326.
- Mafalda, Princess, daughter of Victor Emmanuel III, 136, marries Prince Philip of Hesse, 25.
- Magistrati, Countess Maria, sister to Ciano, 48, 207 and n.
- , Count Massimo, Italian diplomat, First Secretary at Italian Embassy in Berlin 1934, later Counsellor till 1940, married Ciano's sister Maria, 70, 91, 111, 122, 135, 146, 168, reports secret Austro-German agreement, Nov. 1936, 69; travels to Rome with Goring, Jan. 1937, 72; *see* Goring, 12 Feb. 1937, 74; *see* Weizsacker about Catholic Church, 98, pleads for Schuschnigg to Goring, 104, and preparation of Hitler's journey to Italy, 1938, 105, *see* Goring about South Tyrol, 105-6; and South Tyrol, 147-8, and Italian attempts to preserve peace, July 1939, 153-4; at Fuschl with Ciano, Aug. 1939, 155; at Berchtesgaden with Ciano, Aug. 1939, 157, 160; meeting with

Ribbentrop at Munich, 1939, 162; scene with Ribbentrop at Salzburg, Aug. 1939, 163, conversation with Goring, 12 Nov. 1939, 180-1; becomes Italian Minister in Sofia, 1940, 207. Ialaparte, Curzio, Italian journalist and writer, 6, 8, 26; visits Athens, Oct. 1940, 231.

Ianacorda, Professor Guido, 48, 107. Iandl, Fritz, Austrian industrialist, 49, 50.

Ianiu, Julius, Rumanian leader, 220.

Ianoilescu, Mihai, Rumanian Foreign Minister, 223.

Iarras, General Efsio-Luigi, Italian Military Attaché in Berlin 1936 to spring 1939, autumn 1939 to 1943, 190, 250, 255, 273, 285, 291, 302 n., visit to Hitler at Rastenburg, 307-8; imprisoned by the Germans, 324, becomes Partisan leader, 328.

Iasaryk, Thomas, first President of Czechoslovakia, views on Hitler, 116.

Iatsuoka, Yosuke, Japanese Foreign Minister, his journey round Europe, Mar.-Apr. 1941, 257-8.

Iaugeri, Admiral Franco, on Mussolini in captivity, 310-11.

Iazzini, Giuseppe, 297, 299.

Iazzolini, Count Serafino, Italian diplomat, viceroy of Montenegro 1941, Neo-Fascist Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs, 1943, 318 and n., 330.

Ietaxas, General, Prime Minister of Greece, 225, 231.

Iezzasoma, Fernando, Neo-Fascist Minister of Propaganda, 315 and n., 317.

Iihailović, General, Yugoslav Monarchist resistance leader, 275, 293.

Iiklas, Wilhelm, President of the Austrian Federal Republic, 45.

Iilch, General Erhard, 151 and n., 284; visit to Italy, Dec. 1940, 242.

Ioeller van den Bruch, author of *Das Dritte Reich*, 10 and n.

Iolotov, Viacheslav Mihailovich, succeeded Litvinov as Russian Foreign Minister, 1939, 159, 233 n., 248 n., 249, 258; visit to Berlin, Nov. 1940, 240, 247; dines with Rosso, 13 Dec. 1940, 248.

Iontagna, General Renzo, 332.

Iorell, 'Professor' Theodor (Hitler's quack physician), 287, 296, 316, 331 and n., 334.

Iorgagni, Manlio, of the Stefani official news agency, 78.

Iorreale, Eugenio, Italian Press Attaché in Vienna, 38-9, 46; recalled, 62.

Mussolini, Benito, 14, 19, 20, 21, 42, 48, 50, 66, 67, 69, 71, 120, 121, 133, 145, 146, 152, 154, 160, 174, 176, 177, 179, 180, 181, 182, 185, 186, 190, 209, 210, 218, 219, 227, 235, 245, 246, 250, 263, 264, 268, 269, 270, 286, 293, 295, 300, 305, 306, 313, 323, 324, 327, 328, 335, 339, 343, 346.

Agitates against Libyan War, 1911, 4, editor of the *Avanti*, education, 5, youth in Switzerland, dispute with C. Treves, goes to Trento, 1909, 6, debt to D'Annunzio, foundation of Fascist Party, 7, and the Monarchy and Church, 7-8.

Coup d'état, Oct. 1922, 8; duodenal ulcer, 8, 81, 139, 287; establishes One-Party State, Chamber of Corporations, Fascist Grand Council, 9, article on Fascism in *Enciclopedia Italiana*, 10, 26, 30; his play performed at Weimar, 21-2, and South Tyrol, 23-4, 147; pays the *Heimwehr*, 25-6, 30, 31 n., discussions with Starheimberg, 26-7, 30-1, 33, 57-8; interest in German politics, 1932-3, 27-8; difference with Hitler over Jews, 28-9, and Trieste, and Hungary, 31; and Austrian Socialists, 33-4, and Dollfuss, 34, first meeting with Hitler, June 1934, 35-7, and murder of Dollfuss, 39-40, decides on conquest of Abyssinia, 40; and France, 41, 56-8, and central Europe, 41, at Stresa, 43-4, and Schuschnigg, 45, 57-60, 91-2, 95, conversations with Schuschnigg at Venice, Apr. 1937, 75-7, and Papen, 46-7, 53, and Roman Empire, 46; attacks Abyssinia, 49, and Hoare-Laval Plan, 52, and remilitarization of the Rhineland, 54, 56, and the Czechs, 54, 84, and intervention in Spain, 57; surrenders over Austria, 57-9, 62; receives Hans Frank, 23 Sept. 1936, 65-6, 73; speech at Milan, 1 Nov. 1936, 68; secret agreement with Franco, Nov. 1936, 70; receives Goring, 23 Jan. 1937, 72-4, boards the *Milwaukee*, 75, receives Neurath, 3 May 1937, 77, indignant with Blomberg, 78.

Accepts invitation to Germany, 1937, 79, entertained by Hitler at Munich, visits Krupp's, lunches at Karinhall, 80; speech at *Mayfeld*, 80-2; effect of visit to Germany on, 82; contempt for Great Britain, 84; receives Ribbentrop, Oct. and Nov. 1937, 86; and status of Austria, 89; plans Hitler's visit to Italy, 91, 98;

Mussolini, Benito (*cont.*)

begins conversations with Great Britain, Feb. 1938, 91; receives Austrian Military Attaché in Rome, 7 Mar. 1938, 97-8, 100; acceptance of *Anschluss*, 100, addresses Chamber, 16 Mar. 1938, 102-3; friction with the King over Hitler's visit, 107-8, and *passo romano*, 109, and Hitler's first alliance proposal, 110; and the Jews, 112, 114; speech at Trieste, 18 Sept. 1938, 113; receives Imrédy and Kánya, July 1938, 122-3, his 'Letter to Runciman', 126, tours Venetia, Sept. 1938, 126, suggests Four-Power Conference at Munich, 127-8; at Munich, 29-30 Sept. 1938, 128-30; and Hungarian and Polish claims, autumn 1938, 130-2, and German proposals for military alliance, Oct.-Dec. 1938, 134; vacillates about Albania, 136; reactions to German occupation of Prague, Mar. 1939, 137-9; report to Fascist Grand Council, Feb. 1939, 141; instructions to Ciano preparatory to meeting Ribbentrop, May 1939, 141-2, susceptibilities towards Milan, 142-3, orders Ciano to pre-announce military alliance with Germany, May 1939, 143-4; Memorandum presented to Cavallero for Hitler, 149-50, 175; projects international conference, July 1939, 153; orders Ciano to avoid war, 10 Aug. 1939, 155, drafts communiqué for Salzburg conversations, 156, hopes to mediate, 158-9, 168-72, 175; vacillation in Aug. 1939, 162-3; Hitler's statements about, 22 Aug. 1939, 164; receives Hitler's letter of 25 Aug. 1939, 166; his answer, 25 Aug. 1939, 166-7; his message to Hitler, 26 Aug. 1939, 168-9, his message to Hitler, 2 Sept. 1939, 171-2; bellicose, 172, chaotic state of mind, Sept. 1939, 178; and British blockade, 184, 189, 198; letter to Hitler, Jan. 1940, 187-8, 201; refuses to sell arms to Great Britain, 193; Sumner Welles's account of, Feb. 1940, 194-5; receives Ribbentrop, 10-11 Mar. 1940, 197-9, receives Sumner Welles, 16 Mar. 1940, 200, meets Hitler at Brenner, 18 Mar. 1940, 200-2, 203, 205, 206, 208; intends to intervene in war on Hitler's side, 204, 211; effect of Ribbentrop's visit, Mar. 1940, 204-5; decides on immediate intervention, 212-13; memorandum of 31 Mar. 1940, 212-13, 214;

created Commander-in-Chief, 213, 214.

Declares war, speech from balcony, 10 June 1940, 214-15; meets Hitler at Munich, June 1940, 215, hopes to inherit French Empire, 216, clashes with Hitler about France, 217, 233, 237, 240; and Magyar revisionism, 220, letter to Hitler, 17 July 1940, 222, anxious lest Hitler make peace, 225; and action against Yugoslavia or Greece, 226; meeting with Hitler, 4 Oct. 1940, 230, decides to attack Greece, 230; meeting with military leaders, 15 Oct. 1940, 230; letter to Hitler, 19 Oct. 1940, 231, 236; invites Hitler to Florence, Oct. 1940, 232; presumes Spain to be coming into the war, 234; meets Hitler at Brenner, 4 Oct. 1940, 236, again at Florence, 28 Oct. 1940, 238, 239, letter to Hitler, 22 Nov. 1940, 242; refuses to meet Hitler, Dec. 1940, 243, visit to Hitler, 19-20 Jan. 1941, 244, 248-52, meets Franco at Bordighera, 12 Feb. 1941, 244; attempts *rapprochement* with U.S.S.R., 247-8; and question of Salonica, 254; orders last abortive offensive against the Greeks, 255; meets Hitler at Brenner, 2 June 1941, 258; questions Ribbentrop about U.S.S.R., 254; visits Hitler's headquarters, Aug. 1941, 262, supports Pavelić, 271; visits Libya and Athens, July 1942, 278; suspects Hitler with regard to France, 279-81; and rumours that Italy wants to make peace, 284; insists on more Italian troops being sent to Russia, 285; and Italian raw-material famine, 285, meets Hitler at Klessheim, Apr. 1942, 286-7; still fascinated by Hitler, 287; relations with Clara Petacci, 288, visits Athens, July 1942, 289, 290, 343; and France, 290; dismisses Cavallero and Ciano, 290, indignation against Germans, Feb. 1943, 291; receives Ribbentrop, 25 Feb. 1943, 292; as peacemaker, 294; meets Hitler, Apr. 1943, 296; ejects Rommel from command of Italian troops, 297; and German help, 297; reproached by Hitler about Yugoslavia, 298-9; balancing between Hitler and Italian feeling, 299, meets Hitler at Feltré, 19 July 1943, 300-2, meets Fascist Grand Council, 24 July 1943, 303.

Dismissed by Victor Emmanuel, 25 July 1943, 303; sixtieth birthday,

Mussolini, Benito (*cont.*)

307, reply to Badoglio, 26 July 1943, 310, rescue, 311; broadcasts from Munich, 18 Sept. 1943, 312, arrives at Rastenburg, 14 Sept. 1943, 315; accepts Hitler's wishes, 316, and Neo-Fascist programme, 318, desires no revenge, 319; meets Ciano at Munich, Sept. 1943, 320, attitude to execution of Ciano, 321, returns to Italy, life at Gargnano, 322, 329-30; visits Hitler, Apr. 1944, 330-1, again, 20 July 1944, 334, goes to Milan, Dec. 1944, 336; attempts at conciliation, 1945, 337, flight and execution, 338, relationship with Ciano, 340, anxiety with regard to Hitler, 344

Mussolini, Vittorio, son to the Duce, 310, 316, 317, 322.

Muti, Ettore, Secretary of Fascist Party, 1939-40, then air-pilot, 182, 208, death, 332 n.

Mutschmann, Martin, *Gauleiter* and *Reichstatthalter* of Saxony, 181.

Nedić, General, Serb quisling, 275.

Neurath, Constantin von, German Ambassador in Rome, 1921-30, in London, 1930-2, Foreign Minister, 1932-8: 21, 34, 35, 36, 48, 51, 71, 72, 73, 79, 86; conversation with Bullitt, 18 May 1936, 56, conversation with Ciano, Oct. 1936, 66-8, and Habsburg restoration, 76; visits Rome, May 1937, 77, at meeting, 5 Nov. 1937, 83, dismissed from Foreign Ministry, 87.

Nietzsche, Elisabeth (Forster), sister to F. W. Nietzsche, 21, 22 n.

—, Friedrich Wilhelm, 17, 21, 22, 173, 264, 268, 269, 281, 292, 340, 343; read by the young Mussolini, 6; quoted by Mussolini, 9, influence on Hitler, 13-14, 16, 341-3, 344, 346; views on Jews, 112, on an Italian-German alliance, 339; *Der Wille zur Macht* and Hitler, 341, on Wagner and German hysteria, 342; and the New Order, 344.

Northcliffe, Alfred Harmsworth, Viscount, British newspaper owner, director of propaganda in enemy countries, 1918, Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs, 1919-22, 15.

Nostitz, Gottfried von, German diplomat, 154.

Orsini-Baroni, Luca, Italian Ambassador in Berlin, 27.

Oshima, General Hiroshi, Japanese

Military Attaché and then Ambassador in Berlin, 133, 257.

Pabst, Major Waldemar, 33.

Papen, Franz von, German Catholic politician, Chancellor 1932, Vice-Chancellor under Hitler, 1933-4, German Minister in Vienna, 1934-8, German Ambassador in Ankara, 1939-44, 49, 58, 71, presses for Hitler to be given power, 26, 28, and the Concordat, 33; arranges first meeting between Hitler and Mussolini, 35; Marburg speech, 1934, 45, appointed special German Envoy to Vienna, 1934, 45; dispatch of 27 July 1935, 44 n., 46, 51, intrigues with Funder, 50, 53, 59, 60, 61, position in danger, Jan.-Feb. 1938, 88, arranges Schuschnigg's visit to Berchtesgaden, Feb. 1938, 88; on treatment of Austria, 89, plan to murder, 90, meets Schuschnigg at Salzburg, 1938, 92, at Berchtesgaden, 94

Parenti, Rino, Fascist Party organizer, *Federale* of Milan from 1936, 143.

Pareto, Vilfredo, sociologist, Professor at University of Lausanne from 1894, 6.

Paul, Prince (Karageorgević), Regent of Yugoslavia, 1934-41, 253, 254, 255.

Pavelić, Ante, Croat Terrorist (Ustaša) leader, *Poglavnik* of Croatia, 1941-5, 41, 42, 256, 271, 272, 273, 275, 276, 329 n., negotiates with Croat Peasant Party, 328-9.

Pavolini, Alessandro, Italian Fascist politician, succeeded Alfieri as Minister of Propaganda ('Popular Culture'), 1939, 231, 315, 316, 318, 336; at Rastenburg, Sept. 1943, 310; Secretary of *Partito Fascista Repubblicano*, 317.

Pechel, Rudolf, German publicist, editor of *Deutsche Rundschau*, 10, 46.

Petacci, Clara (Mussolini's mistress), 288, 321, 329, 338, family of, 208 n., 330; brought to Mussolini, Nov. 1943, 320, execution, 338.

Pétain, Marshal Philippe, 234, 299; visited by Hitler, Oct. 1940, 232, 237, 238, dismisses Laval, Dec. 1940, 244.

Peter (Karageorgević), King of Yugoslavia, 255.

Peterson, Maurice (now Sir), 44.

Pettinato, Concetto, Italian journalist, 337.

Pfitzer, Professor J., 183, 313 n.

Phipps, Sir Eric, British Ambassador in Berlin, 1933-7, 67.

Piedmont, Prince Umberto of, married to Princess Marie José of Belgium, 63, 212, 285, 304, friend of Prince Philip of Hesse, 25.

Pirzio Biroli, General Alessandro, Military Governor of Montenegro after Italian occupation until summer 1943, 271 n, 298.

—, Detalmo, son of above, married younger daughter of Hassell, 146-7

Pius XI, Pope, his *Mit brennender Sorge*, Mar. 1937, 74; and Hitler's visit to Italy, 1938, 107.

— XII, Pope, 186, 209, 212, Ribbentrop visits, Mar. 1940, 198

Polverelli, Gaetano, head of Mussolini's Press Bureau, 1931-3, 27.

Preziosi, Gabriele, Italian Minister in Vienna, 39, recalled, 62.

—, Giovanni, Italian anti-Semitic publicist, 111-12, 316, 317 and n, 323

Puttkamer, Admiral von, 250.

Raczynski, Count Edward, Polish Ambassador in London, 167.

Raeder, Erich, *Grossadmiral*, 145, 151, 178, 179, 190, 192, 234, 235 n., 250, 253, 279, 295 n., at meeting, 5 Nov. 1937, 83, needs Italian Navy, 174.

Rahn, Rudolf, German Ambassador to Neo-Fascist Italy, 1943-5, 330.

Rathenau, Walter (1867-1922), German industrialist and statesman, signed Treaty of Rapallo, 197 and n.

Raumer, member of *Buro-Ribbentrop*, 85, 133.

Rauschnig, Hermann, President of Danzig Senate, 1933-5, 16, 17, 34.

Reichenau, Field-Marshal Walter von, 92.

Renzetti, Giuseppe, President of Italian Chamber of Commerce, later Italian Consul-General, in Berlin, 28 n., 74, 91, 210

Reut-Nikolussi, Eduard, a leader of the German-speaking South Tyrol, 74

Ribbentrop, Joachim (von), traveller in wines who became S.S. leader and Nazi foreign expert, German Ambassador in London, 1936-8, Foreign Minister, 1938-45, executed as major war criminal, 1946, 11, 49 n., 65, 77, 140, 152, 153, 166, 168, 169, 170, 172, 191, 192, 193, 208, 226, 230, 232, 234, 240, 250, 252, 253, 254, 255, 259, 260, 262, 272, 273, 276, 281, 292 n., 300, 307, 319 n., 334.

Rivalry with Neurath, 66; negotiations with Tokyo, 67-8; as Ambassa-

dor in London, 70, 85, visits Rome, Oct. 1937, 86, becomes Foreign Minister, Feb. 1938, 87, at Berchtesgaden, Feb. 1939, 94; goes to Rome, May 1938, 106; and Henlein, 118, interview with Attolico, 19 June 1938, 122-3, later interviews with Attolico, 124; intransigence, Sept. 1938, 128, signs Belvedere Award, 2 Nov. 1938, 132, visit to Paris, Dec. 1938, 132-3, visit to Rome to press for German-Italian-Japanese alliance, 133-4, informed by Attolico of Italian intention to seize Albania, 139, meets Ciano in Milan, May 1939, 142-4, hints at Axis *détente* with Russia, May 1939, 144, conciliatory about South Tyrol, May 1939, 147, receives Attolico and Magistrati, 25 July 1939, 154, receives Ciano at Fuschl, 11 Aug. 1939, 155-6; meetings with Attolico and Magistrati, Aug. 1939, at Munich, 162, at Salzburg, 163, and Pact with Russia, 163-5, second visit to Moscow, Sept. 1939, 176, holds Italy responsible for Anglo-Polish Treaty of 25 Aug. 1939, 180, receives Sumner Welles, Mar. 1940, 194-5; visit to Rome, Mar. 1940, 196-9, 203, 206, 215; effect of his visit on Mussolini, 204-5, 204 n., fear of Italian indiscretion, 210; at Munich, June 1940, 215; and second Belvedere Award, 223; sees Alfieri, 17 Aug. 1940, 224; visit to Rome, 19 Sept. 1940, to propose Tripartite Pact, 227, 229, and signature of same, 228; talk with Ciano, 18 Nov. 1940, 241; interview with Alfieri, 7 Dec. 1940, 242; receives Ciano, 4 Nov. 1940, 246; receives Molotov, 12-13 Nov. 1940, 247; vetoes Italian *rapprochement* with U.S.S.R., Jan. 1941, 248; invites Oshima to Fuschl, Apr. 1941, 257; travels to Rome, 13 May 1941, 258; at Venice, June 1941, 261, and Ciano's visits of Oct. and Nov. 1941, 286, visit to Rome, Feb. 1943, 291-2, 293, 294, 295, receives Ciano and Cavallero, 19 Dec. 1942, 293; sees Bastianini, Apr. 1943, 296-7, 299, meets Guaglianiga and Ambrosio at Tarvisio, 6 Aug. 1943, 308-9, and revenge on Ciano, 319, 321, his bet with Ciano, 321.

Ricci, Renato, Fascist politician, from 1925 in control of Fascist Youth Organizations, Minister of Corporations, 1939, 208 and n., 310, 316, chief of Neo-Fascist Militia, 317.

- Richthofen, Marshal von, 131, 300, 306.
- Rintelen, Anton, *Landeshauptmann* of Styria, then Austrian Minister in Rome, 38-9.
- , General Enno von, German Military Attaché in Rome, 183, 250, 284.
- Roatta, General Mario, Italian Military Attaché in Berlin, 1939, later Chief of Army General Staff, then Italian Commander in Yugoslavia in 1942, 161 n., 167, 277, 293.
- Rocco, Alfredo, Italian Nationalist leader and Minister of Justice under Mussolini, 8.
- Rohm, Ernst, Hitler's S.A. chief and most intimate friend, murdered by Hitler, 30 June 1934, 35, 319.
- Rommel, Field-Marshal Erwin, put in command of Italian motorized divisions early 1941, 253, 306, ejected by Mussolini, 297.
- Roosevelt, F. D., President of U.S.A., 1932-45, 193, 200, 202, 203, 212, 227, 336.
- Rosenberg, Alfred, editor of leading Nazi paper, *Völkische Beobachter*, 20, 21, 27, 42, 185, becomes Regional Commissar for the *Ostland*, 282.
- Rosselli, Carlo and Nello, Italian anti-Fascists murdered by the Fascists in France in 1937, 288.
- Rosso, Augusto, Italian Ambassador to U.S.S.R., 1936-41, 156, 159, 248 and n., 249.
- Ruggiero, General Vittorio, 323.
- Rust, Bernhard, Prussian Minister of Education, 284.
- Salata, Francesco, Director of Italian Institute in Vienna, 45, 46, 61, 97, becomes Italian Minister in Vienna, 62; succeeded by Ghigi, 91.
- Sauckel, Fritz, *Gauleiter* of Thuringia and *Generalbevollmächtigter für den Arbeitseinsatz*, 283, 330.
- Schacht, Dr. Hjalmar, President of the *Reichsbank*, 1933-9, 49, 54, 341; and Sumner Welles, 95, 196 and n.
- Schleicher, General Kurt von, German Chancellor 1932, murdered 30 June 1934, 28.
- Schmidt, Guido, Austrian politician, Head of Austrian Foreign Office, July 1936, 61, 88, 90, 91, 97, visit to Berlin, Nov. 1936, 69-70; visits Goring, Sept. 1937, 79; accompanies Schuschnigg to Berchtesgaden, Feb. 1938, 92-5.
- , Dr. Paul Otto, German Foreign Office interpreter (not to be confused with Paul Schmidt, head of the German Foreign Office Press section), 72, 74 n., 81, 110, 236, 238, 250, 290 n., 308, at Venice, June 1934, 36-7, his minutes of Berchtesgaden conversations, Aug. 1939, 157, 159, 160, British ultimatum delivered to, 3 Sept. 1939, 175.
- Schmundt, Colonel Rudolf, Chief Adjutant to Hitler, 250, 307, records secret conference of 23 May 1939, 151; killed, 20 July 1944, 334.
- Schoerner, Colonel, later Field-Marshal, Ferdinand, at Brenner, Mar. 1938, 103.
- Schonerer, Georg von, Pan-German leader in Habsburg Austria, 12.
- Schulenburg, Count Friedrich Werner, German Ambassador in Moscow, 163 n., 282.
- Schuschnigg, Kurt von, Austrian Christian-Social political leader, Austrian Federal Chancellor, 1934-8, 49, 57, 66, 73, 81, 88, 163, 207, 266, 341; on Mussolini, 36, 53; succeeds Dollfuss, 45; conversations with Mussolini, 58-9, suggests press truce to Mussolini, 59, and appointment of Ciano as Foreign Minister, 63; influenced by Guido Schmidt, 69, meets Goring at funeral of Gombos, Oct. 1936, 71, visit to Venice, 1937, 75-7, attitude to Germany, 89, and the *Siebenner Komitee*, 89, meets Ciano in Budapest, Jan. 1938, 91, goes to Berchtesgaden, Feb. 1938, 11, 92-5, 99; his speech, 24 Feb. 1938, 97, decides on plebiscite, 97, announces plebiscite, 98, Hitler's attacks on, in letter to Mussolini, 11 Mar. 1938, 99, receives Glaes-Horstenau and Seyss-Inquart, 11 Mar. 1938, 101, Italian intervention in favour of, 103-4.
- Schuster, Ildefonso, Cardinal Archbishop of Milan, 338.
- Schwerin-Krosigk, Count Lutz, German Minister of Finance, 1932-45, 165.
- Scorza, Carlo, Fascist Party Secretary, Apr. 1943, 302.
- Seyss-Inquart, Dr. Artur, Austrian S.S. leader, later Nazi Governor of Holland, 38, 88, 97, 101; and autonomy for Austria, 89; and *Siebenner Komitee*, 90, to have all police powers in Austria, 94.
- Shaw, George Bernard, 179.
- Sima, Horia, Rumanian Iron Guard leader after Codreanu's death,

- Deputy Premier, 227; taken to Germany, 252.
- Simon, Sir John (later Viscount), British politician, Foreign Secretary, 1931-5, 44.
- Simoni, L. (*pseudonym of Michele Lanza*), author of *Berlino—Ambasciata d'Italia*, 1939-43, 183, 203, 204, 207-8, 213, 218, 243, 260, 286, 290, 294, 299, 307, 308, 309, 324; quotation from Diary, June-July, 1943, 300.
- Simović, General Dušan, leader of Yugoslav anti-German *coup d'état*, Mar 1941, 255.
- Simpson, Mrs. (later Duchess of Windsor), 85.
- Soletti, General Fernando, Italian police chief, 312 and n.
- Sorel, Georges, French political writer, 5, 6, 16, 339, and the theory of the *élite*, 9.
- Spengler, Otto, German writer, author of *Der Untergang des Abendlandes* (1918-22), 29.
- Sperrle, General (later Field-Marshal) Hugo, 92.
- Spoleto, Amone, Duke of, first cousin once removed to King Victor Emmanuel III, 272, 273.
- Stalin, Joseph Vissarionovich, 219, 259, 260, Hitler's views on, autumn 1939, 175; Mar. 1940, 196, 197, winter 1940-1, 251-2, 257, Italy would like to make peace with (early 1943), 291.
- Starace, Achille, Secretary-General of the Fascist Party, 1928-39, then Chief of Staff of Fascist Militia, till disgraced 1941, 37, 162, and Blomberg, 78, accompanies Mussolini to Germany, 1937, 79; on anti-Semitism, 113.
- Starhemberg, Ernst Rudiger, Prince, Heimwehr leader in Austria, 26, 36, 39, 45, 46, 49, 50, 75, 101, 220, 334, and Hitler, 19, 33; meetings with Mussolini, 30, 31, 33; on Mussolini, 53, 54; conversation with Mussolini, spring 1936, 57; Mussolini decides against, 57, 58, 59.
- Stauffenberg, Count Claus Schenk von, 335, 345.
- Stohrer, Eberhard von, German Ambassador in Madrid, 234 and n.
- Stoyadinović, Milan, Yugoslav Prime Minister, 121, 135; fall of, 136.
- Strasser, Gregor, early Nazi leader, murdered 30 June 1934, 16, 30; Mussolini's interest in, 28; dismissed by Hitler, 28.
- Streicher, Julius, Nazi leader, specialist in anti-Semitism, 16.
- Stresemann, Gustav, German Foreign Minister in the Weimar period until his death in 1929, 24.
- Suñer, Ramón Serrano, Spanish Falangist politician, brother-in-law to General Franco, Spanish Minister of the Interior, 1938-40, Foreign Minister, 1940-2, 234, 235, 239, 288, 320; talk with Ciano and Ribbentrop at Salzburg, 18 Nov. 1940, 241.
- Suvich, Fulvio, Italian Delegate to League of Nations, 1925-32, Under-Secretary of Foreign Affairs, 1932-6, 35, 36, 63.
- Tabouis, Mme Geneviève, French journalist, 52 n., 196.
- Tassinari, Giuseppe, Neo-Fascist politician, 315 n., 329 n.
- Tavs, Dr. Leopold, Austrian Nazi, 90.
- Tegetthoff, Admiral, 105.
- Teleki, Count Pál, Premier of Hungary, visit to Germany, Apr 1939, 140, 210; and National Socialism, 221, suicide of, 256.
- Templewood, Viscount, *see* Hoare, Sir Samuel.
- Teucci, Colonel Giuseppe, Italian Air Attaché in Berlin, 1933-8 and 1939-43, 180, 324.
- Thomas, General Georg, chief of *Wirtschaftsrüstungsamt*, 259 and n.
- Thomsen, Hans, German diplomat, interprets between Hitler and Mussolini, May 1938, 110.
- Tito, Marshal, 276.
- Tower, Reginald, British Consul-General in Munich, 1906, 13, 30.
- Treitschke, Heinrich von, German Professor of Political Philosophy, 265.
- Treves, Claudio, Italian Socialist leader, 6, 112.
- Trotsky, Leon, 8.
- Tyrrell, Lord, British Ambassador in Paris, 1928-34, 44.
- Umberto, Prince, *see* Piedmont, Prince Umberto of.
- Urach, Prince, German journalist and diplomat, 322, 324.
- Victor Emmanuel II, first king of United Italy, 1, 304.
- III, King of Italy, 2, 4, 138, 141, 186, 208, 213, 272, 285, 315; and marriage of Princess Mafalda, 25; reception of Hitler, 1938, 107-8; meets Mussolini after Munich,

- Sept. 1938, 129, and Steel Pact, 147; his alleged hostility to Axis policy, 250, receives Bonomi, 2 June 1943, 302; decides to dismiss Mussolini, 302, dismisses Mussolini, 25 July 1943, 303, policy after this, 304, meeting with Hitler suggested, 30 July 1943, 307.
- Wagner, Richard, 13, 264, 339, 341.
- Warlimont, General, 151.
- Weizsacker, Ernst von Secretary of State in German Foreign Office, 1938-43, German Ambassador to Vatican, 1943-5, 118, 124, 128, 148, 153 and n, 166, 204; sees Magistrati, 98, sees Sumner Welles, 195
- Welczeck, Count Johannes von, German Ambassador in Paris, 1936-9, 133.
- Welles, Sumner, American statesman, *see* Chapter XII.
- Weygand, General Maxime, 244, 251.
- William I, Emperor of Germany, 1871-88, 12.
- II, Emperor of Germany, 1890-1918, 4, 12, 236, his visit to Rome, 1903, 2.
- Woermann, Dr. Ernst, Under-Secretary and head of political division of German Foreign Office, 1938-43, 148.
- Wolff, Karl, S S. General, 148, 330, 333, 336, 338.
- Zacharias, German doctor to Mussolini at Gargnano, 322
- Zernatto, Guido, Secretary-General of Austrian Patriotic Front under Schuschnigg, 57 and n., 69, 77.
- Zog, King of Albania, 1928-39, 254; his wedding, 121
- Zvetkovich, *see* Cvetković.

INDEX B. SUBJECTS AND PLACES

- essumen von Heute*, German film, 47.
- byssinia. Mussolini's intention to attack, 40, 46; discussed at Stresa, 43-4, Italian war against: general, 49, 52, 53-4, 59, 71; Hitler and, 48, 51-2, 57; R.C. Church and, 65; end of, 53, 56; strain on Italian resources caused by, 168; Italian Empire in: recognized by Germany, 64; by Japan, 70; Italian difficulties in (1939), 142. *See also* Addis Ababa, Hoare-Laval Plan.
- hse*, Operation, 307, 310
- idis Ababa, occupied (5 May 1936), 56; German Legation closed (25 July 1936), 64
- len, 217.
- lnatic, the: Hitler and, 21, 29-31; German designs on, 122, 177, 226, 272, 273.
- bania: 142, 224, 270; Italian interest in, 120, 135-6, German interest in, 136; seized by Italy, 139; crown offered to Victor Emmanuel (Apr. 1939), 141.
- geria, Allied landing in (Nov. 1942), 289, 290, 292.
- bine Montan* Company (Austrian iron and steel concern), 38, 72.
- sace-Lorraine, 24; South Tyrolese settled in, 149, 215.
- to Adige, *see* South Tyrol.
- niens, French Trade Union Congress at (1906), 6
- nglo-German Naval Treaty (1935), 44, 165.
- nglo-Italian Agreement of 2 Jan. 1937, 72.
- of 16 Apr. 1938, 106 and n., 111, 112, 122 n.
- nglo-Polish Treaty of 25 Aug. 1939, 165 n., 165-6, 167, 168, 180
- munziata*, Order of the: Ribbentrop invested with collar of, 145, Ciano and, 154; Goring and, 208.
- nsaldo shipyards (Genoa), 288
- schluss*, the (Austro-German), 19, 30, 31, 41, 60, 118, 147, and *see* Chapter VI, effect on Trieste, 148
- nti-Fascist opposition in Italy, 288-9, 302, 331.
- nti-Komintern Pact, the, signed by Germany and Japan, 25 Nov. 1936, 68, 70, 85; adhesion of Italy to, 86, plan for transformation into Triple Alliance, 193-4; renewal of (Nov. 1941), 286.
- Anti-Semitism, in pre-1914 Austria-Hungary, 11; in Bavaria, 13, Hitler's, 19, 266; in relation to his view of Mussolini, 21; to his view of U.S.S.R., 251-2, Mussolini and, 27, 29, 268, in Italy, 111-14, 115, 133. *See also* Jews.
- Arditi, the, 7-8.
- Attila, Operation, 244-5, 289.
- Austria, Federal Republic of: *see* Chapters II, VI, Cultural Agreement with Italy (Feb. 1935), 43, and Abyssinian war, 49-51, situation *vis-à-vis* Italy and Germany, 66, 68, 71, discussed between Goring and Magistrati, 72; on Goring's map, 81; Hitler projects attack on, 84; situation deteriorates in, 89; British attitude towards (Feb. 1938), 96, persecution of Catholics in, 107.
- Austrians, Nazi enthusiasm of, 221. *See also* Legionaries, Austrian.
- Austria-Hungary, the Dual Habsburg Monarchy, 1, 2, 117, Italian declaration of war against, in 1915, 144; Germans of, 10; Jewish Question in, 12; Hitler's desire to revive, 21, 29-30, 83, 158 n., 316; to extend, 316.
- Austrian Socialist Party, the, 32, 33, 35.
- Austro-German Agreement of July 1936, mooted by Schuschnigg to Mussolini (5 June 1936), 59; clauses of, 60; further consequences of, 60-1, 62, 64, 68, 70, 79, 89.
- Avanti*, the, Italian Socialist newspaper, 5, 6, 14.
- Axis Protocols, the (Oct. 1936), *see* October Protocols.
- Balearic Islands, Italy and the, 83.
- Baltic, the, 14, 65, 67, 150, 151, 182; Molotov asks for egress from (Nov. 1940), 247.
- Banca Commerciale Italiana*, the, 111.
- Bavaria, 13; seized by Nazis (1933), 31; as part of proposed 'Redoubt' (1945), 345.
- Bayreuth, Hitler visits Wagner family at, 16, meets H. S. Chamberlain at, 20; would like to entertain Mussolini at, 161
- Belgium, invasion of (1940), 207, 209, 210.
- Belvedere Palace, Vienna, Awards made at: First (2 Nov. 1938), 132, 136 n., 137 and n., 140, 143; Second (29

- Aug. 1940), 223, 226, Yugoslav Ministers adhere to Tripartite Pact at (25 Mar 1941), 255.
- Berchtesgaden (just across Austro-German frontier from Salzburg), 11, 165, 237, scene of visits to Hitler of Lloyd George, 64, Ciano (Oct. 1936), 66-8, signature of October Protocols, 68; visits of Halifax, 86, Schuschnigg, 92-5, 99, 'Agreement' with Schuschnigg, 94, 97, Conference (3 Sept. 1938), 125; visit of Ciano (Aug 1939), 157-61; Hitler's address to German military leaders (22 Aug 1939), 164, visit of King Carol, 220, various meetings (Jan 1941), 248-52, 253, visit of Yugoslav ministers, 254.
- Berghof, the (Hitler's house on the Obersalzberg above Berchtesgaden), *see* Berchtesgaden.
- Berlin, atmosphere in, *see* German morale.
- Bessarabia, the U.S.S.R. and, 176, 210, 219.
- Bismarck*, the (German battleship), sinking of, 259.
- Bohemia, 11, 12, 15, seizure by Germany (Mar. 1939), 136-7, 140, 182, Heydrich's reign of terror in, 283.
- Bolshevism, *see* Communism.
- Bordighera, Mussolini and Franco meet at (12 Feb 1941), 244, 253.
- Bosnia, 12, incorporated in Croatia under Pavelić, 272, 275, 276.
- Boves, destruction of, 325.
- Brenner, the, as Italo-Austrian frontier (pre-1938), 23, 56, 59, 72; German troops on, at *Anschluss*, 103, Hitler's declarations about, 99, 106, 108-9; as Italo-German frontier (from 1938), 144, 162, 204, German troops cross (July-Aug 1943), 308; as meeting-place of Hitler and Mussolini, 152, 178, (18 Mar 1940), 200-3, (4 Oct. 1940), 230, 236; (2 June 1941), 258-9.
- British-Italian Agreements, *see* Anglo-Italian Agreements.
- Bukovina, the, 219.
- Bulgaria and U.S.S.R. (German view, 1939), 185; Dobruja frontier settled with Rumania, 220, Hitler supports, 222, Russian influence increased (autumn 1940), 240; Russian concern about, 249; German interest in, 251, adheres to Tripartite Pact (1 Mar. 1941), 255; Macedonian gains (1941), 270.
- Campo di Maggio* (play by Mussolini and Forzano), 21.
- Canary Islands, Axis designs on, 235; fear of Britain occupying, 236.
- Carta del Lavoro* (1927), 8.
- 'Cavallero Memorandum', the, 149, 152, 175, 180.
- Četnici, the, Serbian Fascist militia, 275, 276, 293, 294, 298, 299.
- Chamber of Corporations in Fascist Italy, the, 9, 186.
- Christian-Social (Clerical) Party in Austria, 32, 33, 42, 45.
- Church of Rome, *see* Roman Catholic Church.
- Civitella, massacre at (18 June 1944), 333.
- Clericals (in Austria), *see* Christian-Social Party.
- C.L.N. (Comitato di Liberazione Nazionale), 325 n., 328, 338.
- Coal, Italian import of, 4, 51, 54, 55, 137, 162, 189, 198, 243, 258.
- Communism: Communist revolution (1917), 7, 8; Hitler and, 66, 89; Ribbentrop's enthusiasm for (Mar. 1940), 197, in Italy, 175, 288, 308, 309, at Fiat works (1942), 288; in Balkans, &c., 275, 292-3, Axis fight against, 292, 295.
- Compromise of 1867, the basis of Austro-Hungarian Dualism, 2, 131.
- Concordat, Papal, with Germany (1933), 33, 46.
- Corsica, as French possession, 167, claimed by Italy (June 1940), 215, occupied by Italy (1942), 289; Mussolini and, 302.
- Crete, 239, 240, 258.
- Croatia, 31, 41, 42, 115, 138, 139, 158 n., anti-Italian feeling of, 253; hostility to Serbs, 254, 275; adheres to Tripartite Pact (June 1941), 261, 273, the Croatian Question, 271; Settlement (1941), 270-3, the Germans in, 272-3, 276-7; Italian Second Army in, 277, 324, German surrender in (May 1945), 344.
- Croats, the, *see* Croatia.
- Czechoslovakia, 41, 54, 67, 81, Hitler on, in letter to Mussolini (Mar. 1938), 99, encircled, 115; composition of, 115, policy of, 116, Hitler decides to 'smash', 120, fate of, 130, 132, 137, 140, 194, 209, 282.
- Czech-Russian Treaty (May 1935), 44.
- Czechs, the (*see also* Czechoslovakia), 24, 29, 54, 84, 119, 126, 129, 177.
- Dakar, 235 and n.
- Dalmatia, 3, 158 n.; Croatian feeling about, 271; Italian claims to, 272, 316.

Danzig, 47, 48, 72, 131, 143, 151-5, 156, 159, 163, 168, 171.
 Denmark, invasion of (1940), 207, 209, 210, 213.
Deutsche Bank, 112.
Deutsche National-Sozialistische Arbeiter Partei (D.N.S.A.P.), in pre-war Austria, 15, 16, dissolves itself in Czechoslovakia in 1933, 117.
Deutsches Nachrichten Büro, 51, 86, 161, 307.
Difesa della Razza, *La*, anti-Semitic review, 113.
 Doboi, 276.
 Dodecanese, the, 225.
 Eger (Cheb), 12, 120.
 Egypt, Italian advance into (Sept. 1940), 234.
Esche, Operation, 307.
Enciclopedia Italiana, Mussolini's article on Fascism in, 26, 30, 112.
 Encyclical of 1891, the, 8, 35.
 Ethiopia, see Abyssinia.
 Fasano, 222.
 Fascism (Fascist State), foundation of, 7, 8-9, 138, 142, character of, 23, 341, Mussolini on, 26, 30, 65, Dollfuss and, 35, Hitler on (25 Mar. 1939), 138; (3 Sept. 1939), 172, decline of, 160, 209, 299.
 Fascist Grand Council, 9, 138, 141, 304; meetings of: 12 Mar. 1938, 101-2, 7 Dec. 1939, 185-6, 213, 24 July 1943, 303 and n., 321, 339.
 — Militia, 108, 328; R. Ricci appointed Neo-Fascist chief of, 317.
 — Party, 7, 142, 208, 210, 302.
 — Revolution, the, 8, 21, 82, 197.
 Felix, Operation, 245.
 Feltre, Hitler and Mussolini meet at (19 July 1943), 301, 302, 303.
 Fiat workers, 288; strikes by, Mar. 1943, 295, June 1944, 327.
 Finland, 184, 185, 247, 257.
 Fiume, 3, D'Annunzio's Regency in, 7; Statute of, 7, and Yugoslavia, 271; and Hungary, 273.
 Florence, 129, 332; Hitler visits (9 May 1938), 109-10, Mussolini invites Hitler to (Oct. 1940), 232, their meeting (28 Oct. 1940), 232-3, 238-40, 249; anti-Fascist activity in (1942), 288.
 Four-Power Pact (1933), the, 34, 45.
 France, Hitler's original attitude to, 19-20; elections in (spring 1936), 56, *Front Populaire*, 56, 65, 67; Axis attitude to (1936), 67, anxiety to avoid war, 171, Hitler intends to divide from Britain, 179, German invasion

and collapse (1940), 203, 207, 209, 219, Italian feeling about, 209, Italian declaration of war on, 214, 215, situation in latter part of 1940, 231, 233, 235, 236, Hitler's feelings for, 237, 281, 289, Hitler denounces (Jan. 1941), 251, 290, Axis occupation of, 278, 280-3, 289, 296; resistance in, 280-1, 289, 297, 324, relations between Hitler and Mussolini in regard to, 279-80, 290; Jews in (1942-3), 292; championed by Bastiani (Apr. 1943), 297; Allied invasion and liberation (1944), 331, 344.
 Franco-Czech Treaty (May 1935), 56.
 Franco-German Armistice (June 1940), 216.
 Franco-Italian Agreement (Jan. 1935), 43, 141.
 Franco-Italian Armistice (June 1940), 216.
 — — *rapprochement* (1900-2), 2, 3.
 Franco-Russian Treaty (May 1935), 44, 56.
Front Populaire in France, see France.
 Fuschl, Ribbentrop's country house at, 154, 155, 257.
 Gargnano, on Lake Garda, 322.
Gazeta Polska, the, 141.
 Geneva, see League of Nations.
 Genoa, anti-Fascist activity in, 288, raids on, 288.
Geopolitik (or geopolitics), 20, 21, 27, 29, 85, 148.
 German Embassy in Rome, 25, 139, 157, 231; in Neo-Fascist Italy (Fasano), 322, 330.
 — Knights, the, 14.
 — morale, or state of mind, reaction to Steel Pact, 146, autumn 1939, 179-81; March 1940, 203, with regard to Italian intervention (May 1940), 207-8, attitude towards Britain, 209; summer 1940, 218, atmosphere in Berlin 1940, 229; May 1941, 258, 260; attitude towards Italy, 21, 47, 284; defeat at Stalingrad (Feb. 1943), 291; fall of Mussolini (July 1943), 305-6, 335; rescue of Mussolini (Sept. 1943), 311, attitude to Neo-Fascists, 327-8; in 1944, 335-6, 'Redoubt' or last resistance plans, 345-6.
 — Navy League, the, 30.
 German-Polish Agreement (1934), 44; denounced by Hitler (28 Apr. 1939), 141.
 German-Soviet *détente*, summer 1939, Ribbentrop's hints at, 144, 156, Soviet hints at, 159.

German-Soviet Pact, the (23 Aug. 1939), 163; Hitler explains to Mussolini (25 Aug. 1939), 166; Ciano on (16 Dec 1939), 186; referred to, 197, 201, 210, 219, 223, 247.
 — — —, the second (28 Sept 1939), 176, 219 n.
 — — — Commercial Treaty (10 Jan. 1941), 248.
 — — — Working-men's Party in pre-1914 Austria, *see Deutsche National-Sozialistische Arbeiter Partei*.
 Gestapo (*see also* S.S.), 180, 198, agents in Italy, 249, activity in occupied Europe, 268
 Gibraltar, Italy's claim for Spain (June 1940), 215; Hitler intends to capture (Oct 1940), 233, 235, 239, claimed by Franco, 234, 236, Mussolini and, 244, Axis intentions against abandoned, 245, 257.
Giornale d'Italia, the, article against Habsburg restoration (26 Feb. 1937), 75.
Gustavia e libertà movement, 288.
 Gran Sasso, the, 311, 315
 Great Britain, projected German invasion of (Operation Sea-Lion), 218, 225; project abandoned, 227, feint of renewal, 258 and n.
 Greece, Italian intentions about, 224; attitudes of people and Government (1940), 225, expects Italian attack (Aug 1940), 230; Italian war against, 231-2, 237, 239, 240, 247, 287, surrender to Germany, 256-7; Axis occupation of, 258, 278-9, 290, 296; resistance in, 274, 299.
 Guadalajara (battle), 74.
 Habsburg, House of, 1, 2, 14, 23, 221, 271; Hitler's hatred of, 29-30, 272; Nazi leaflet against, 75; possible restoration of, 41, 45, 64, 73, 75, 116; Gayda article against restoration, 26 Feb. 1937, 75.
 Harzburg Front (Nazi-Nationalist Alliance in Germany), 27
Hermwehr, the, 26, 30, 31 n., 33, 49.
 Hendaye, Hitler meets Franco at, 238-9; secret protocol of, 239-40, 244.
Hermann-Göring Werke, the, 72
 Hurtenberg affair, the, 33
 — — — Arms Factory, the, 46, 50
 Hoare-Laval Plan, the, 51, 52, 53, 97.
 Hohenzollern, House of, 10 n., 11, 14
 Holland, invasion of (1940), 207, 210; resistance in, 297.
 Holy Roman Empire, the, 1, 11, 14, 46, 264

Hungarians, *see* Hungary
 Hungary (*see also* Austria-Hungary), 2, 3; *rapprochement* with Italy (from 1927), 31, 41, Yugoslavia and, 42, revisionism of, 67, Mussolini and, 122, 200, Hitler and, 131, 221; gains from Slovakia (First Belvedere Award, Nov. 1938), 132; mentioned by Ribbentrop (Oct. 1937), 133, acquires Ruthenia (Mar. 1939), 137, Ribbentrop and (Apr. 1939), 140, German minority in, 140, Russians approach, 175; anxiety as to German intentions with regard to Rumania, 210, and Second Belvedere Award, 226, and Transylvanian Question, 220, 221, and German transit demand, 221, Axis relations with (1940), 222, given two-thirds of Transylvania, 223; adheres to Tripartite Pact (Nov 1940), 240; attacks Yugoslavia, 256, and Fiume, 273, Hungarian massacres in Bačka, 275, attempts to make peace, 296, and Jews, 328.
 I.M.R.O., the (Macedonian terrorist organization), 41, 42.
 Iron Guard, the, 220, 252
 Italian Armistice with Allies (8 Sept. 1943), 310, 323, 324.
 — — — attitude towards Germany, in 1934, 38; in 1938, 103; with regard to Steel Pact, 146-7, to intervention (1940), 183-4, 202-4, 208, 209, 214; to war (autumn 1940), 229, to the New Order (1941), 269-70; to the war in 1943, 291, 299, 302.
 — — — Embassy in Berlin, 24, 25, 27, 152, 163, 183, 199, 204, 210, 211, 213, 249, 259, 284
 — — — Empire, 66, 68; recognized by Great Britain, 129; Hitler and, 201.
 — — — labour in Germany, 183, 249, 285-7, 326-7; Hitler agrees to return of, to Italy, Mar. 1943, 295; Sauckel and, 330.
 — — — Resistance, the, *see Resistenza*
 — — — Socialist Party, the, 4, 5, 6, 7, 112, 288, 338.
 Italo-Austrian Cultural Agreement (Feb 1935), 43.
 Italo-German Agreement (1936), *see* October Protocols.
 — — — Commercial Agreement (24 Feb 1940), 193.
 — — — Military Alliance, *see* Steel Pact.
 — — — Protocols (Oct. 1936), *see* October Protocols.

- Japan, 20, 67, 68, 70, 84, 134, 139, 142, 151, 152, 157, 163, 174, 235, signs Tripartite Pact (27 Sept. 1940), 227; signs neutrality pact with U S S R, 258, attacks United States, 262, 263. Japanese, the, *see* Japan.
- Jews, the, in Austria and Germany, 12-14, 117; Mussolini on, 65; Nazi persecution of, 34, 111-12, 338, Nazi pogroms of Nov. 1938, 133; in Italy, 106, 111, 115; Fascist persecution of, 112-14, 323; Italian help to, 183, 270, 277, 282, 292, in Yugoslavia, 275; Neo-Fascism and, 318; in Hungary, 328.
- June 30, 1934, Massacre of, 38, 45.
- Jum-Klub*, the, 10
- Karinahall, Goring's residence at the Schorfheide, 44, 80, 195
- Karlsbad, demands made by Henlein at, 119.
- Klessheim, Schloss, near Salzburg, 286, 296, 297, 299, 302, 328, 331.
- Kossovo, 270.
- Krupp, firm of (Essen), 80.
- Kustenland*, the, 30; 'Gau Kustenland', 313.
- Landsberg (on the Lech), 16, 20, 24, 260
- Lateran Pacts (1929), the, 65, 329.
- Laval-Hoare Agreement, *see* Hoare-Laval Plan
- League of Nations, the, 18, 48, 55, Germany leaves, 34, Germany and, 47, 51, 53-4, 86, sanctions against Italy, 51, 68; Italy and, 62, 65, 66 and n., 131, Italy leaves, 86.
- Legionaries, the Austrian, 50, 61.
- Libya, 4, 142, 253, 284, 287.
- Linz, Hitler at school at, 11; Nazism in, 97, visited by Hitler at time of *Anschluss*, 101.
- Lithuania, 140, 219 and n., 248 n.
- Little Entente, the, 41, 117.
- Locarno, Treaty of, proposed revision of, 54, 66 and n.
- Lwow (Lemberg), capital of Galicia, 175.
- Macedonia (*see also* I.M.R.O.), ex-Yugoslav Macedonia given by Hitler to Bulgaria (1941), 270.
- Madam Butterfly*, performed at Athens, 25 Oct. 1940, 230.
- Maderno, 323.
- Maginot Line, the, 58, 152, 162, 210 n., 212.
- Magyars, *see* Hungarians.
- Maifeld* (Berlin), Mussolini and Hitler at the, 80-2.
- Malta, claimed by Italy (June 1940), 215; Axis plan against, 287.
- Manchukuo, recognition of, by Italy, 68, 70; by Germany, 96.
- Marxian Socialism, Marxism, 5, 6, 13
- Mediterranean, the, Italy to expand in, 20, 21, 29, 134, 138, 150, 177, 217, Britain and Italy in, 57, 85, 174; Italy's position in, threatened, 176, 295; British bases in, 215, Hitler's plans with regard to war in, 233, 234; British position in, strengthened (autumn 1940), 240
- Mein Kampf*, 17, 21, 23, 29, 201, 260.
- Memel (Klaipeda), 72, 140.
- Milan, and Fascist Party origins, 7, 8; Mussolini's Axis speech at, 68, Ciano and Ribbentrop meet at (May 1939), 142-4; Mussolini's susceptibilities about, 7, 14, 142; anti-Fascist activity in (1942), 288; strikes (Mar. 1943), 295, 296; (Dec. 1943 and Mar. 1944), 327; S S. and Neo-Fascists in, 323, 332, Mussolini visits (Dec. 1944), 336.
- Milwaukee (Kraft-durch-Freude ship)*, 75.
- Mit brennender Sorge* (Papal Encyclical, Mar. 1937), 74
- Mitrovica, 270.
- Mohammedan world, Italy and, 85, 112.
- Montenegro, under Italy (1941), 270-1, 298; Yugoslav Partisans in, 271, 274.
- Montoire, Hitler meets Laval and Pétain at, 232, 237, 238.
- Morocco, Italian claims in, 215, German intentions, 215, 236, Spanish claims in, 234-6, 239.
- Munchner Neueste Nachrichten*, 47.
- Munich, Pan-Germanism in, 13; Hitler moves to, 14; Hitler's *Putsch* attempt (Nov. 1923), 16; Nazi broadcast to Austria from (18 Mar. 1933), 32, Nazi Party entertains Mussolini at, 80; Conference and Agreement at (1938), 127-30, 200, attempt on Hitler's life at (Nov. 1939), 179-80, meeting of Hitler and Mussolini at (June 1940), 215, 216, German-Hungarian-Italian meeting at (10 July 1940), 221; meeting of Hitler, Ciano, and Laval at (9 Nov. 1942), 289, 290; Mussolini and Ciano at (1944-5), 319-20; referred to, 232.
- Murzzuschlag, incident at, 59.
- Naples, anti-war feeling in (1942), 288.
- National Socialism, 17, 82, 138, 172, 183, 341, 343.

- National-Sozialistische Deutsche Arbeiter-Partei*, the, foundation of, 16, programme, 24, Hitler's speech to, 24 May 1930, 25; and Abyssinian question, 47, entertains Mussolini, 80, and Pact with U.S.S.R., 197, Party Congress 1935, 49, 1938, 125.
- Nazism, &c, see National Socialism.
- Neo-Fascism, Neo-Fascist régime, proclamation of, 317, 323; programme (Verona), 318, 325; and the Germans, 323, 324, 326, 327, 328, 332; its *Brigate nere*, 324; Republican Guard, 328, 332 and n., San Marco division, 328, Monte Rosa division, 328, Muti battalion, 332 n., 10th M.A.S., 332 n., 337, disintegration and end, 332, 337-8.
- Neue Reichskanzlei*, the (Berlin), secret meeting at (5 Nov. 1937), 57, 83-4, 86, 89, 116, (23 May 1939), 151-2, other occasions, 127, 176.
- Neues Wiener Tagblatt*, the, 12.
- Norway, German conquest of (Apr 1940), 207, 209, 210, 211, 212, 230, German oppression in, 283, 296-7; plans to defend to the last, 301.
- Obersalzberg, the, see Berchtesgaden.
- October Protocols, the (1936), 68 and n., 146.
- Olympic Games (Berlin 1936), 62-3.
- Oranienburg (German concentration camp), 58, 324.
- Osservatore Romano*, the, 107, 209.
- Pan-Germanism, 12, 13, 14, 16.
- Pantelleria, 300, 301.
- Papacy, the, see Roman Catholic Church.
- Patriotic Front in Austria, the, 89.
- Pensiero Romagnolo*, II, 6.
- Po valley, the, 142; Pfizner and, 182.
- Poland, 12, 24, 25, claims against Czechoslovakia, 122, 131, German intentions against, 52, 122, 186, see also Chapter X, Russian invasion of, 175; German war against, 178, 179, 180, 182, 196, 209; Italian concern for, 177, 183, 185, 291; Italy suspends visas to Poles (May 1940), 212, referred to, 219, 220, 224, 274, 283.
- Poles, the, see Poland.
- Popolo d'Italia*, the, Mussolini's official organ, 38, 43, 112, 126, 176.
- Prinz Eugen*, battleship, 105.
- Prussia, Prussians, Prussianism, 12, 13, 21, 30.
- Putsch* of Nov. 1923, the, 17, 25, 80.
- Rastenburg (the *Wolfsschanze*, Hitler's headquarters in East Prussia), 279, 300, 307, 310, 315, 319, 344.
- Red Sea, the, 217.
- Reichskanzlei*, see *Neue Reichskanzlei*.
- Reichspost*, the, 50.
- Resistenza*, the, 304, 324-8, 332, 337-8, 344.
- Rhineland, remilitarization of the, 52, 53, 54, 56.
- Riccione, 35, 39.
- Risorgimento*, the Second, see *Resistenza*.
- Rocca delle Caminate*, Mussolini's country house near Forlì, 101, 134, 231, 236, 312, 322, 329.
- Roma*, the, battleship, 310.
- Roman Catholic Church, the (*incl.* Papacy, Vatican), 1, 2, 35, Mussolini's compromise with, 9, 65, concordat with Nazi Germany, 33, 46; friction with Nazi Germany, 65, 74, 98, 107, 134, 142, 150; hostility to Axis policy, 209-10, 249-50; referred to, 292, 329, 339.
- Empire, the, 1, 20, 209, Hitler speaks of (7 May 1938), 108; Hitler's letter to Mussolini on (Mar. 1939), 138.
- Rome, anti-Fascist activity in, 288, 302, bombed by Allies (19 July 1943), 301, 302; captured (June 1944), 331-2, 334.
- Protocols of 1934, 31, 46, 70, 77, 79; Budapest meeting of Ministers concerned (Jan. 1938), 91, 122.
- Rumania, Treaty with Germany (Mar. 1939), 140, Hitler on danger from, 166; German intentions towards (Apr 1940), 210, Italian anxiety about (Apr. 1940), 210; Soviet ultimatum to (27 June 1940), 219, 221, and Transylvanian question, 220, 221; Iron Guard in, 220, in disgrace with the Axis, 219-22, disintegration of, 223, Axis guarantee to, 226, German occupation of, 227, 230; adhesion to Tripartite Pact, 240; Hitler and protection of (1941), 251-2; signs Pact with Germany against Greece (8 Feb. 1941), 255; Ribbentrop's distrust of, 291; efforts to make separate peace, 296; anti-Axis feeling stimulated (July 1943), 306; defection from the Axis (Aug. 1944), 344.
- Russia (Czarist), 12; (U.S.S.R.), as German expansion-space, 21, 246, 260; and Czechoslovakia (1938), 116, 120; possible German *rapprochement* with, 139, 144, Mussolini's views on (1939), 142, 150; Hitler's uncertainty about, 157, 159; steps leading to

- German pact with (May-Aug. 1939), 156, 159, 163, 168, 175, 177, occupies eastern Poland (1939), 175, Ribbentrop's enthusiasm for, 178, 197, attacks Finland, 184, occupies Baltic countries, 219, occupies Bessarabia, &c., 219, 221, German attitude to (later 1940), 223-4, 226, and Second Belvedere Award, 226, and Tripartite Pact, 227-8, 233, 240, Russian attitude (later 1940), 240-1, 247, 248-9; events leading to German attack on (June 1941), 246-9, 251-2, 257-8, 259, 260-1, 267, 273, Italian relations with, 247-8, Yugoslav pact with, 257, Matsuoka and, 257-8; German armies in, 263, 282-3, 301, Balkan peoples and, 274 and n., Italian troops in, 285, 291; German failure in, 291, 301, Hitler's last views on, 336
- Ruthenia, 115, 131-2, 137
- S A., the (*Sturm Abteilungen* or Hitler's Storm Troopers), 17, 180, in Austria, 38, 88, 89
- Salò, seat of the Neo-Fascist 'government', 323 and n., 327.
- San Carlo, Opera House at Naples, 109.
- San Sepolcro, Piazza (Milan), *see* Fascism, foundation of
- Sarajevo, 12, 256, 275
- Savoy, House of, 147, Hungarians consider for throne of St Stephen, 221, and Fascist régime, 250, 303-4, Hitler intrigues against, 273; Rommel, &c., say Germany must work with, 306-7, Neo-Fascist campaign against, 317.
- Schorfheide, Goring's home at, *see* Karnhall.
- Schwarz, Operation, 307, 308, 310.
- 'Sea-Lion', Operation, for German invasion of Britain, *see* Great Britain
- Secret weapons (V1, V2, &c.), 322, 328, 329, 331; Ribbentrop hints at, Feb. 1943, 294
- Serbs, 41, 271, Hitler and, 274, massacres of (1941), 275
- Sicily, Mussolini on (Nov 1937), 86, the Luftwaffe in, 251; effects of war in, 288, Allies invade, 300, 304; to be Allies' Stalingrad, 301.
- Siebenner Komité, the, 89, 90
- Siegfried Line, the, 123.
- S.I.M. (Italian Secret Intelligence), 284.
- Škoda factory (Pilsen or Plzeň), 117.
- Slovaks, Slovakia, receive German instructions to rise against Czechs (19 Sept. 1938), 126, Hungarian claims on, 131; subject to Germany, 136, 140; adhesion to Tripartite Pact (Nov. 1940), 240.
- Slovenes, Slovenia, 115, 158 n., 230, 254, partition of, 270; anti-Italian feeling of, 271, claim to Trieste, 273; under Axis occupation, 274, 314, 324, Italians and, 285.
- South Tyrol, the, 3, 23-4, 25, 30, 47, 54 n., 59; Hitler's books about, 74; after the *Anschluss*, 105, 147, German proposals about, 135, 138; Mussolini on, 142; July project with regard to (1939), 148-9; October Agreement on (1939), 148 n., voting in (Dec 1939), 149; Hitler refers to his 'evacuation' of, 158 and n., 178; situation in (1939), 181-2; Pfitzner and, 182, optung in (Dec. 1939), 190, German reference to, 215; Italy to give up, 313, 316; Mussolini protests about, 331, S.S. men from, 333; German plans for (1945), 346
- Spain, 53, civil war in, begins, 62, Axis intervention in, 57, 66, 68, 96, 168, 174; Italo-Spanish agreement (28 Nov 1936), 83 n.; Ciano's visit to (July 1939), 152, German troops reach Spanish frontier (27 June 1940), 216; relations with Axis 1940-5, *see* Chapter XV, economic dependence of Great Britain, 235; claims in north Africa, 234-6, 239, Ciano hopes for refuge in, 320.
- Sportpalast* (Berlin), early Goebbels speech at, 26, Hitler's speech at (26 Sept 1938), 126-7.
- S.S. (*Schutz Staffeln*), Hitler's Blackshirt elite, 17, 265, in Austria, 38, 88, 89; political alignment of, 85; mobilization on Czech frontier (May 1938), 119; *Totenkopf* battalions, 126; behaviour in Poland, 180, in occupied countries generally, 266, 267-8, 279, in Yugoslavia, 274, 276; France, 280, 282; eastern Europe, 283; German home front, 184, 306; as bodyguards, 308; in Italy, 322, 323, 326, 327, 333, 335, the Bozen S.S., 333.
- Stalingrad, German defeat at, 290, 291; Germans blame Italians for, 291, Sicily to be Allies' Stalingrad, 301
- Steel Pact, the (22 May 1939), *see* Chapter IX and Appendix (*for text, including Secret Protocol*), 52, 53, 85, 110, 161; drafting of, 144; Article II, 145, 160, 210, Article III, 145, 160, signing of, 145, 151; Secret Protocol to, 146, Italian reaction to, 146-7;

- German reaction to, 146, referred to, 152, 154, 156, 181, 186, 200, 204, 208, 334.
- Stefani (official Fascist) Agency, the, 78, 161, 290, 294, 297.
- Stra, palace of, 36.
- Straits, the (Dardanelles-Bosporus), 224, 226; U.S.S.R. and, 240, 246, 247, 248, 249.
- Stresa, the Powers meet at, 43-4, 'Front' destroyed, 52, 53.
- Student, Operation, 307.
- Sudeten Germans, the, 24, 106, 110, 115, 117-26; *Sudetendeutsche* 'Free Corps', 125.
- Suez Canal, Axis designs on, 233, 234, 235, 241.
- Switzerland, Mussolini in, 5, 6; referred to, 32, 224, 322, 337.
- Tarvisio, German-Italian meeting at (6 Aug. 1943), 308, 309, 320, 324.
- Tenfaltstrasse*, Vienna (Office of *Ste-bener Komitee*), 90, 92.
- Tevere*, II, pro-German newspaper in Italy, 111, 183.
- Tobruk, 287.
- Transylvania, 220, 221; partitioned (1940), 223.
- Trieste, 3, German designs on, 30, 31, Mussolini's speech at (18 Sept. 1938), 113, 126, impoverished by *Anschluss*, 149, Italo-German Agreement (18 July 1939), 149, Pfizner and, 182, German school to be opened in (Mar. 1940), 199; German designs on, 273; annexed by Germany to *Gau Kustentland* (1943), 313, 316, Neo-Fascists and, 336; Mussolini protests about, 337.
- Tripartite Pact, the (Germany, Italy, and Japan, 27 Sept. 1940), 85; proposed by Ribbentrop in Rome, 227, signature in Berlin, 228, 235; Spain and, 240, adhesion to, by satellite powers (Nov. 1940), 240-1, U.S.S.R. and, 247, adhesion of Yugoslavia planned, 253, adhesion of Croatia, 261, 273.
- Triple Alliance ('the *Triphce*') between Germany, Austria-Hungary, and Italy, first signed 1882, 1, 2, 4.
- Tripolitania, *see* Libya.
- Tunis, fall of (7 May 1943), 297.
- Tunisia, claimed by Italy (June 1940), 215, 217; Anglo-American offensive in (Mar. 1943), 295.
- Turn, anti-Fascist activity in, 288; strike in (Mar. 1943), 295, 296; German troops in, 325; strikes at
- Fiat works (June 1944), 327; Nietzsche in, 339.
- Turkey, Mussolini anxious about (May 1940), 143; Hitler and, 166; Pact with Germany (18 June 1941), 261; Germans and (1943), 299.
- Ukraine, Ukrainians, 131-2, 294, 301.
- United States, the, 193, 197; Tripartite Pact aimed against, 227-8; Hitler's view on (1940), 233, 251.
- U S S R., *see* Russia.
- Ustaši, the, Croat terrorists, 25, 42, 271, 275, 276.
- Vatican, the, *see* Roman Catholic Church.
- Veneta, the Veneto, 1; Mussolini's speeches in (Sept. 1938), 115; Goebbels would like to annex, 313; State of (June 1944), 332.
- Venice, first meeting of Hitler and Mussolini at, 36, Schuschnigg's visit to (Apr. 1937), 75-7; meeting of Ribbentrop and Ciano (June 1941), 261.
- Verein des Deutschtums im Ausland*, the, 59.
- Verona, Mussolini's speech at (26 Sept. 1938), 126, 127, Neo-Fascist National Assembly meets at (14 Nov. 1943), 318; Ciano imprisoned and executed at, 321.
- Vichy régime, in France, 231, 233, 237, 240, 245, 278, 281, 282, 289.
- Vienna (Belvedere) Awards, *see* Belvedere Awards.
- Villa Torlonia, the, 231.
- Vita Italiana*, Italian anti-Semitic review, 112.
- Völkische Beobachter*, the, 20, 294, 329.
- Volkstumsmittelstelle*, the, 118, 148.
- Weimar, 21-2, 26.
- régime, the, 13, 24, 32.
- Wittelsbach, House of (Dynasty of Bavaria), 13.
- Wolfischanze*, the, *see* Rastenburg.
- Yugoslavia, 30, 41-2, 67, German minorities in, 121; Hitler urges Italy to liquidate, 158 and n., 210 and n.; Mussolini's intentions about (1940), 213, 219; Axis Powers and, 223-4, 298; Operation Marita planned against, 253; German pressure against (Feb 1941), 254; adherence to Tripartite Pact, 255; *coup d'état* (26-7 Mar. 1941), 255; attacked by Germany (5 Apr. 1941), 256; Axis occupation of, 258, 270-7; resistance in, 271, 274-6, 299, 324.